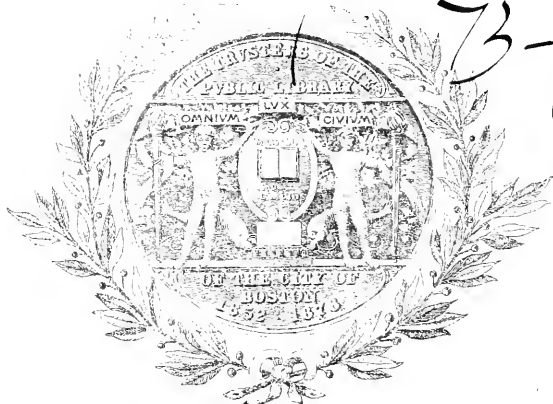




NO

5573.14A

73-76



GIVEN BY

W. D. Smith of Boston

U. S. DEPARTMENT OF LABOR

W. B. WILSON, Secretary

CHILDREN'S BUREAU

JULIA C. LATHROP, Chief

ILLEGITIMACY AS A CHILD-WELFARE PROBLEM

PART 2

A STUDY OF ORIGINAL RECORDS IN THE
CITY OF BOSTON AND IN THE STATE OF
MASSACHUSETTS

By

EMMA O. LUNDBERG

and

KATHARINE F. LENROOT

R

DEPENDENT, DEFECTIVE, AND DELINQUENT CLASSES SERIES No. 10

Bureau Publication No. 75

C



WASHINGTON
GOVERNMENT PRINTING OFFICE
1921

ADDITIONAL COPIES
OF THIS PUBLICATION MAY BE PROCURED FROM
THE SUPERINTENDENT OF DOCUMENTS
GOVERNMENT PRINTING OFFICE
WASHINGTON, D. C.
AT
50 CENTS PER COPY

CONTENTS.

	Page.
Letter of transmittal.....	17
Statement of problem and general conclusions.....	19-72
Purpose of study.....	19
Field and method of inquiry.....	21-35
Scope of investigation.....	21
General characteristics of the State.....	22
Historical development of the care of dependent, delinquent, and defective children in Massachusetts.....	25
Sources of information and method of analysis.....	32
Summary of findings.....	36-61
Prevalence of birth out of wedlock.....	36
Number of children born out of wedlock included in the study..	36
The background of illegitimacy.....	38
Infant welfare.....	41
The possibilities of parental care.....	44
Child dependency.....	50
Juvenile delinquency.....	55
Mental defect.....	57
The child's point of view.....	60
Conclusions.....	62-72
The handicap of illegitimate birth.....	62
The burden upon the public.....	64
Measures for the protection of children born out of wedlock....	66
General constructive measures.....	71
Section I. The problem in Boston.....	74-264
Introduction.....	74
Chapter 1. The infant born out of wedlock.....	80-146
Method and scope of study.....	80
Number of illegitimate births and proportion to total births....	83-88
During a five-year period.....	83
During the year of the study.....	85
Accuracy of registration of illegitimate births.....	87
Infant mortality.....	88-100
During a five-year period.....	88
During the year of the study.....	89-97
Rate.....	89
Age at death.....	91
Cause of death.....	94
During first year of life of infants born in 1914.....	97-101
Rate.....	97
Age at death.....	99
Cause of death.....	100

Section I. The problem in Boston—Continued.

Chapter 1. The infant born out of wedlock—Continued.	Page.
Conditions surrounding birth.....	102-105
Place of birth.....	102
Maternity care.....	103
The child's parentage.....	105-132
The mother.....	105-126
Race, nativity, and years in the United States.....	106
Residence.....	109
Age.....	109
Civil condition.....	111
Physical condition.....	111
Mental condition.....	112
Character.....	114
Other children.....	115
Mode of living.....	119
Character of parental home.....	119
Relation to social agencies.....	120
Occupation previous to birth of child.....	121
The father.....	126-132
Race and nativity.....	126
Age.....	127
Civil condition of father and social relationship of father and mother.....	128
Occupation.....	129
Contributions to the support of the child.....	131
The care of the child.....	132-146
Extent of information secured.....	132
Age at death or at last date known.....	133
Per cent of deaths according to place of birth.....	133
Physical condition.....	135
Agency care.....	135-139
Number receiving prolonged care from agencies of various types.....	135
Number of agencies giving care.....	136
Age at application.....	136
Time under prolonged care.....	137
Care at various ages.....	138
Time with mother.....	139
Home or place of residence at various ages.....	143-146
Children with their mothers.....	143
Children separated from their mothers.....	145
Chapter 2. Children of illegitimate birth under care of social agencies.....	147-227
General.....	147-150
Statement of problem.....	147
Scope of study and sources of information.....	148
Extent and distribution of the problem of illegitimacy in the work of the agencies studied.....	150-155
Number of cases dealt with.....	150
Proportion of all children's cases under care.....	151
Racial distribution.....	153
Proportion of problem chargeable to Boston.....	154

Section I. The problem in Boston—Continued.

Chapter 2. Children of illegitimate birth under care of social agencies—Continued.

	Page.
The dependent child of illegitimate birth.....	155-187
Status at time of application for agency care.....	155-170
Age.....	155
Presence with or separation from mother.....	156
Home or place of residence.....	158
Previous agency care.....	162
Source of application.....	164
Reason for application.....	165
Care given by the agencies studied.....	170-180
Length of time children were cared for.....	170
Home or place of residence of children at end of period..	172
Occupations of children 14 years of age and over.....	177
Disposition of children whose cases were closed during year.....	178
Characteristics of the children.....	180-187
Physical condition.....	180
Mental condition.....	182
Conduct.....	184
The child's heritage and the possibilities of the parents' pro- viding care	187-227
The child's heritage.....	189-204
Race and nativity.....	189
Physical condition of mother.....	192
Mental condition of mother, father, and maternal grand- parents	193
Character of mother, father, and maternal grand- parents	196
Illustrations of defective mentality or bad character in the child's heritage.....	201
The possibilities of care by the parents.....	204-227
Physical and mental condition and character of the parents	204
Age of mother and of father.....	205
Civil condition of mother and of father and their rela- tion to each other.....	207
Occupation of mother.....	210
Economic status of father.....	213
Contributions of father to support of child.....	215
Mother's parental home and present mode of living....	217
Mother's other children.....	220
Mother's agency record.....	224
Illustrative cases.....	226
Chapter 3. Legal action for the support of children born out of wedlock.....	228-264
Introduction.....	228
Analysis of the Massachusetts law for the support of children of illegitimate birth.....	228-232
General provisions.....	228
Offense, jurisdiction, process.....	229
Age of child at initiation and at close of case.....	229

Section I. The problem in Boston—Continued.

Chapter 3. Legal action for the support of children born out of wedlock—Continued.

Analysis of the Massachusetts law for the support of children of illegitimate birth—Continued.	Page.
Adjudication of paternity-----	230
Dispositions of cases and support orders-----	230
Period of support-----	232
Administration of the law in the Boston courts, 1914-15-----	232-252
Method of study and distribution of cases-----	232
Court procedure-----	234
Comparison of number of cases initiated and number of illegitimate births in Boston-----	235
Ages of children-----	236
Classification of cases-----	237-239
Types of dispositions made by court-----	238
Types of provisions secured for child's support-----	239
Analysis of dispositions and provisions made-----	239-243
Proportion of cases resulting favorably for the child---	239
Distribution of cases according to types of dispositions and provisions made-----	241
Periodic payments and cash payments-----	242
Marriages and adoptions-----	242
Duration of cases in court-----	243
Amount of money secured-----	244-252
Total amount secured-----	244
Amounts ordered and percentages paid-----	246
Periodic payments-----	247
Payments through house of correction wages and fines---	249
Certificates of adequate provision-----	250
Other cash payments-----	251
Confinement expenses-----	251
Summary of the law and its administration in 1914-15-----	252
Changes in administration since the period covered by the study-----	254-264
Number of cases brought into court-----	255
Methods of handling cases-----	258
Dispositions of cases-----	258
Certificates of adequate provision and other lump-sum payments-----	261
Summary of the present situation-----	263
Section II. The problem in the State-----	266-269
Introduction-----	266
Chapter 1. Illegitimate births in Massachusetts-----	270-272
Incidence in the State-----	270
Geographical distribution-----	270
Distribution according to size of community-----	272
Chapter 2. Children of illegitimate birth under the supervision of the State board of charity-----	273-332
Children under care of the division of State minor wards-----	273
Description of the work of the division-----	273
Method of securing data-----	275
Proportion of work of the division concerned with children of various types-----	275

Section II. The problem in the State—Continued.

Chapter 2. Children of illegitimate birth under the supervision of the State board of charity—Continued.

Page.

Children under care of the division of State minor wards—Con.

Status of children of illegitimate birth at time of application

for care or at commitment..... 278-290

Residence, nativity, and race..... 278

Age and sex..... 279

Presence with or separation from mother..... 280

Home or place of residence..... 282

Previous agency care..... 283

Source of application or commitment..... 287

Reason for application or commitment..... 287

Care given by the division of State minor wards..... 290-295

Length of time children were cared for..... 290

Home or place of residence of children at end of period... 292

Occupations of the children 14 years of age and over.... 293

Disposition of children whose cases were closed during
year..... 294

Characteristics of the children..... 295-301

Physical and mental condition..... 295

Conduct..... 298

Status of the mother..... 301

Comparison of children of illegitimate birth with those of
legitimate birth under care..... 310-319

Sex, race, and nativity..... 310

Residence at time of application or commitment..... 311

Age at time of application or commitment..... 312

Source of application or commitment..... 313

Home conditions and reason for application or commit-
ment..... 314

Length of time cared for..... 316

Personal characteristics..... 317

Infants under 2 years of age reported to the division of State
minor wards as cared for apart from their relatives..... 319-324

Proportion of infants born out of wedlock..... 319

Type of supervision..... 320

Age at end of period and length of time cared for apart
from their relatives..... 321

Social service work with mothers and children at the State

Infirmary..... 324-332

Description of the work..... 324

Proportion of work dealing with children born out of wed-
lock..... 325

Children under care, born out of wedlock..... 326

Status of the mother..... 330

Status of the father and his contribution to the support of
the child..... 332

Chapter 3. The adoption of children born out of wedlock..... 333-339

Adoption laws in Massachusetts..... 334

Proportion of adoption cases involving children born out of
wedlock..... 336

Age of child and relationship of person adopting..... 337

Section II. The problem in the State—Continued.

	Page.
Chapter 4. The relation between delinquency and illegitimacy.....	340-367
Children committed as delinquents to State institutions.....	340-361
Introduction	340
Purpose and sources of study.....	341
Proportion of wards of correctional institutions, who were born out of wedlock.....	342
Distribution	343
Age at commitment and time under care.....	343
Residence and nativity.....	344
Mentality and physical condition.....	346
Offenses	346
Characteristics	349
Psychological factors.....	351
Analysis of home and hereditary influences.....	352-360
Types of homes.....	352
Character of homes.....	354
Previous agency care.....	356
Parental characteristics.....	357
Summary	360
Infants cared for with their mothers.....	361-363
Number under care.....	361
Care given the children by the institutions and the parole department studied.....	362
The heritage of children of illegitimate birth whose mothers were under care of correctional institutions.....	363
Chapter 5. Mental defect and illegitimacy.....	368-383
Children born out of wedlock who were under the care of State institutions for the feeble-minded or awaiting admission thereto.....	368-377
Proportion to total number under care or awaiting ad- mission	368
The child at time of admission or at application.....	369
Length of time under care or awaiting admission.....	372
The child's heritage.....	374
Feeble-minded mothers of children born out of wedlock.....	377
The Massachusetts program for the care of the feeble-minded...	383
Chapter 6. Comparison of the problem in certain sections of the State.....	384-398
Illegitimacy in two manufacturing cities having populations of less than 110,000.....	384-388
Number and per cent of illegitimate births.....	385
Infant mortality.....	385
The care of the child.....	386
Nationality, age, and occupation of mother.....	387
Illegitimacy in a rural seacoast section.....	388-398
Scope and method of study.....	388
Number of illegitimate births and per cent of total births...	389
Mortality of children born out of wedlock.....	389
Place of birth.....	390
The care of the child.....	390-393
Time with mother.....	390
Last disposition of child, and by whom supported.....	391
Court action.....	392
Agency care	392

Section II. The problem in the State—Continued.

Chapter 6. Comparison of the problem in certain sections of the State—Continued.

Illegitimacy in a rural seacoast section—Continued.

	Page.
Mothers of children born out of wedlock.....	393-397
Race and nativity.....	393
Age.....	394
Civil condition.....	394
Occupation.....	395
Mental condition.....	395
Character and agency record.....	396
Home conditions.....	396
Summary.....	397
Index.....	399

TABLES.

SUMMARY OF FINDINGS.

	Page.
Table I. Mental condition of mothers of children born out of wedlock, as shown by various parts of the inquiry.....	39
Table II. Character of mothers of children born out of wedlock, as shown by various parts of the inquiry.....	40
Table III. Mental condition of dependent and delinquent children born out of wedlock, as shown by various parts of the inquiry.....	59

SECTION I. THE PROBLEM IN BOSTON.

CHAPTER 1. *The Infant Born Out of Wedlock.*

Table 1. Per cent of live births in Boston registered as illegitimate, 1910 to 1914.....	83
Table 2. Number of live births in Boston registered as illegitimate per 1,000 single, widowed, and divorced women 15 to 44 years of age, 1910 to 1914.....	84
Table 3. Per cent of stillbirths registered in Boston among total births and among births registered as illegitimate, 1910 to 1914.....	85
Table 4. Relative monthly frequency of live births in Suffolk County and of illegitimate live births in Boston, 1914.....	86
Table 5. Infant mortality rates for all infants and for infants born out of wedlock, 1910 to 1914.....	89
Table 6. Infant mortality rates for infants of legitimate and of illegitimate birth, 1914.....	90
Table 7. Deaths per 1,000 births, 1914, among infants of legitimate and of illegitimate birth, by age at death.....	91
Table 8. Cause of death for infants of legitimate and of illegitimate birth, 1914.....	94
Table 9. Specific infant mortality rates for infants of legitimate and of illegitimate birth, 1914, by cause of death.....	96
Table 10. Cause of death for infants of illegitimate birth who died at a large maternity hospital and children's institution and for those who died elsewhere, 1914.....	97

	Page.
Table 11. Deaths during first year of life of infants born out of wedlock in 1914, and number per 1,000 live births, by age at death-----	99
Table 12. Deaths during first year of life of infants born out of wedlock in 1914, and specific mortality rates, by cause of death-----	100
Table 13. Deaths during first year of life of infants born out of wedlock in a large maternity hospital and children's institution, and of infants born out of wedlock elsewhere, in 1914, and specific mortality rates, by cause of death-----	101
Table 14. Place of confinement and residence of mothers of infants born out of wedlock in 1914-----	103
Table 15. Race and country of birth of mothers of infants born in wedlock and born out of wedlock in 1914, per cent distribution, and per cent of births illegitimate-----	107
Table 16. Mental condition and age of mothers of infants born out of wedlock in 1914-----	113
Table 17. Age and previous record as to illegitimate births to mothers of infants born out of wedlock in 1914-----	115
Table 18. Civil condition and previous record as to illegitimate births to mothers of infants born out of wedlock in 1914-----	116
Table 19. Mentality and previous record as to illegitimate births to mothers of infants born out of wedlock in 1914-----	117
Table 20. Character and previous record as to illegitimate births to mothers of infants born out of wedlock in 1914-----	118
Table 21. Occupation and age of mothers of infants born out of wedlock in 1914-----	122
Table 22. Per cent gainfully employed of mothers of infants born out of wedlock in 1914, and of all women of childbearing age, by age periods--	124
Table 23. Occupational distribution of mothers of infants born out of wedlock in 1914, and of gainfully employed women in 1910-----	124
Table 24. Race of fathers and mothers of infants born out of wedlock in 1914-----	126
Table 25. Nativity of fathers and mothers of infants born out of wedlock in 1914-----	127
Table 26. Ages of fathers and mothers of infants born out of wedlock in 1914-----	128
Table 27. Occupation of fathers of infants born out of wedlock in 1914--	130
Table 28. Age at death, or at last record obtained, of infants born out of wedlock in 1914-----	133
Table 29. Per cent of infants born out of wedlock in 1914, who died during their first year of life, by place of birth-----	134
Table 30. Proportion of lifetime spent under prolonged care of agencies, infants born out of wedlock in 1914-----	137
Table 31. Kind of care received at specified ages, infants born out of wedlock in 1914-----	139
Table 32. Presence with or separation from mother at specified ages, infants born out of wedlock in 1914-----	140
Table 33. Comparative percentages living with mother at age specified or prior to death, among survivors and deaths for first 3 months and for first year of life, infants born out of wedlock in 1914-----	141
Table 34. Proportion of lifetime spent with mother, infants born out of wedlock in 1914 and surviving to specified ages-----	143

	Page.
Table 35. Home or place of residence of infants born out of wedlock in 1914, who were known to be with their mothers at specified ages-----	144
Table 36. Home or place of residence of infants born out of wedlock in 1914, who were known to be separated from their mothers at specified ages-----	145
<i>CHAPTER 2. Children of Illegitimate Birth under Care of Social Agencies.</i>	
Table 37. Kind of care received, by number of agencies giving care during the year-----	151
Table 38. Per cent of cases involving children born out of wedlock, by type of agency-----	152
Table 39. Estimated expenditures of specified agencies, for children born out of wedlock-----	153
Table 40. Residence at application, and place of birth of children under care-----	154
Table 41. Age at application, and sex-----	155
Table 42. Per cent of children separated from mother previous to application, by age—children who had not received prolonged care previously--	157
Table 43. Per cent of children separated from mother previous to application, by age—children who had received prolonged care previously-----	158
Table 44. Home or place of residence of children of specified ages at application-----	159
Table 45. Home or place of residence of children of specified ages, who were with their mothers at application-----	161
Table 46. Prolonged care received previous to application, by age-----	163
Table 47. Type of prolonged care received previous to application, by age-----	163
Table 48. Duration of care received by children of specified ages who were under prolonged care-----	170
Table 49. Aggregate and average duration of care received by children of specified ages-----	171
Table 50. Home or place of residence, at end of period, of children of specified ages receiving prolonged care-----	172
Table 51. Presence with or separation from mother, at end of period—children of specified ages receiving prolonged care—by type of agency--	175
Table 52. Occupations of boys and girls 14 years of age and over-----	177
Table 53. Persons or agencies assuming responsibility for children discharged from temporary and from prolonged care during the year-----	178
Table 54. Mental condition of children 7 years of age and over-----	183
Table 55. Mental condition of children 7 years of age and over, under care of five private child-caring agencies and a child-protective agency-----	184
Table 56. Conduct of children 7 years of age and over-----	185
Table 57. Mothers having specified numbers of children under care-----	188
Table 58. Race of children, by race of parents-----	189
Table 59. Nativity of parents-----	190
Table 60. Mental condition of mothers of children under care of six private child-caring agencies and of a child-protective agency-----	195
Table 61. Character of mother and of father-----	199
Table 62. Age of mother and of father-----	206
Table 63. Age and civil status of mother-----	207
Table 64. Civil status of mother and character of relations with father--	208
Table 65. Subsequent marriage of mother, by character of relations with father-----	209

	Page.
Table 66. Occupation of mother at time of application, and child's presence with or separation from mother.....	212
Table 67. Occupation of father.....	213
Table 68. Mother's age and mode of living at time of application.....	219
Table 69. Age of mother at birth of child, and previous record as to illegitimate births.....	221
Table 70. Record of mother as to subsequent illegitimate births, and age of child at end of period.....	222
Table 71. Paternity of mother's other children born out of wedlock.....	223

CHAPTER 3. Legal Action for the Support of Children Born Out of Wedlock.

Table 72. Status in 1914 of cases brought under the act relative to the support of children of illegitimate birth, by year of initiation.....	233
Table 73. Total criminal cases initiated and cases initiated under the act relative to the support of children of illegitimate birth, in each court in Boston, 1914.....	234
Table 74. Number of court cases initiated in Boston under the act relative to the support of children of illegitimate birth, and number of court cases of fornication and bastardy in Philadelphia, per 100 illegitimate births in Boston and in Philadelphia, respectively.....	236
Table 75. Cases initiated in 1914 under the act relative to the support of children of illegitimate birth, resulting in specified provision for child in 1914 and 1915, and cases pending December 31, 1915, according to disposition of case by court.....	240
Table 76. Dispositions in the inferior courts and in the superior court of cases initiated in 1914 under the act relative to the support of children of illegitimate birth.....	241
Table 77. Dispositions of cases initiated in 1914 under the act relative to the support of children of illegitimate birth, by length of time between warrant and disposition.....	243
Table 78. Type of payment and total amount secured in 1914 and 1915, cases initiated in 1914 under the act relative to the support of children of illegitimate birth.....	244
Table 79. Amounts secured, by type of payment, cases initiated in 1914 under the act relative to the support of children of illegitimate birth...	245
Table 80. Amount secured, by status of payment at end of period and whether child was living or dead, cases initiated in 1914 under the act relative to the support of children of illegitimate birth.....	245
Table 81. Total amount ordered, by type of order, cases initiated in 1914 under the act relative to the support of children of illegitimate birth...	246
Table 82. Per cent paid of amount ordered, by method of payment specified in court order, cases initiated in 1914 under the act relative to the support of children of illegitimate birth.....	247
Table 83. Amount secured, by length of time from order to close of payment, cases initiated in 1914 under the act relative to the support of children of illegitimate birth.....	249
Table 84. Cases initiated in each court in Boston, 1914 and 1919, under the act relative to the support of children of illegitimate birth.....	257
Table 85. Dispositions of cases initiated in the central municipal court, 1913 to 1919, under the act relative to the support of children of illegitimate birth.....	259

SECTION II. THE PROBLEM IN THE STATE.

CHAPTER 1. *Illegitimate Births in Massachusetts.*

	Page.
Table 1. Per cent of illegitimate births in each county in Massachusetts, 1914	271
Table 2. Per cent of illegitimate births in Massachusetts, 1914, by size of community	272

CHAPTER 2. *Children of Illegitimate Birth under the Supervision of the State Board of Charity.*

Table 3. Kind of care received by all children under care, according to status of child	276
Table 4. Family groups represented by all children under care	277
Table 5. Per cent distribution, by county of residence at time of application or commitment, of children born out of wedlock, compared with per cent distribution, by county, of population under 18 years of age	278
Table 6. Sex, and age at time of application or commitment, of children born out of wedlock	280
Table 7. Per cent of children born out of wedlock not having previously received prolonged care from agencies, who had been separated from their mothers previous to application or commitment, by age	281
Table 8. Per cent of children born out of wedlock having previously received prolonged care from agencies, who had been separated from their mothers previous to application or commitment, by age	281
Table 9. Supervision and presence with or absence from mother, at application or commitment, of children born out of wedlock	282
Table 10. Home or place of residence, at time of application or commitment, of children born out of wedlock, of specified ages	283
Table 11. Prolonged care received previous to application or commitment by children born out of wedlock, according to age	284
Table 12. Type of prolonged care received previous to application or commitment by children born out of wedlock, according to age	284
Table 13. Duration of care received by children of specified ages, born out of wedlock	291
Table 14. Aggregate and average duration of care received by children of specified ages, born out of wedlock	291
Table 15. Home or place of residence at end of period of children of specified ages, born out of wedlock	292
Table 16. Occupations of boys and girls 14 years of age and over, born out of wedlock	293
Table 17. Mental condition of children 7 years of age and over, born out of wedlock	296
Table 18. Conduct of children 7 years of age and over, born out of wedlock	299
Table 19. Comparison, by place of birth, of children born in wedlock and children born out of wedlock	310
Table 20. Comparison, by county of residence, of children born in wedlock and children born out of wedlock	311
Table 21. Comparison, by age at application or commitment, of children born in wedlock and children born out of wedlock	313
Table 22. Comparison, by source of application or commitment, of children born in wedlock and children born out of wedlock	314

	Page.
Table 23. Comparison, by reason for application or commitment, of children born in wedlock and children born out of wedlock-----	314
Table 24. Comparison of duration of care received by children of specified ages, born in wedlock and born out of wedlock-----	316
Table 25. Comparison of conduct of children 7 years of age and over, born in wedlock and born out of wedlock-----	318
Table 26. Number of infants reported to the State board of charity as cared for apart from their relatives, and per cent born out of wedlock, 1905 to 1914-----	319
Table 27. Comparison of type of supervision received by infants born in wedlock and born out of wedlock, cared for apart from their relatives in private homes-----	320
Table 28. Comparison of age, at end of year or at last date reported, of infants born in wedlock and born out of wedlock, cared for apart from their relatives in private homes-----	321
Table 29. Length of time infants born in wedlock and born out of wedlock were cared for apart from their relatives in private homes-----	322
Table 30. Length of time infants of specified ages, born out of wedlock, were cared for apart from their relatives in private homes-----	322
Table 31. Comparison of characteristics of mothers of children of illegitimate birth under care of the social-service committee of the State board of charity and of mothers of infants born out of wedlock in Boston----	331
 <i>CHAPTER 3. The Adoption of Children Born Out of Wedlock.</i> 	
Table 32. Adoption cases before the courts of Essex, Middlesex, Suffolk, and Norfolk Counties, 1914-----	337
 <i>CHAPTER 4. The Relation between Delinquency and Illegitimacy.</i> 	
Table 33. Age at commitment of all delinquent children committed to certain State institutions in 1914, and of delinquent children under care who were born out of wedlock-----	344
Table 34. Residence, previous to commitment, of delinquent children born out of wedlock-----	345
Table 35. Nativity of all delinquent children committed to the three State training schools in 1914, and of delinquent children born out of wedlock, under care of the training schools or their parole departments----	345
Table 36. Nature of offenses for which delinquent girls and boys were committed to certain State institutions in 1914, and for which delinquent girls and boys born out of wedlock were committed-----	348
Table 37. Nature of delinquencies of boys and girls born out of wedlock--	350
Table 38. Types and character of homes in which delinquent children born out of wedlock lived before commitment-----	355
Table 39. Character of mothers of delinquent children born out of wedlock -----	358
Table 40. Comparison of the mental condition of an unselected group of 500 reformatory inmates and of inmates of the same institution who had been illegitimately pregnant and who were under care in 1914----	366
 <i>CHAPTER 5. Mental Defect and Illegitimacy.</i> 	
Table 41. Age on admission or at application of feeble-minded boys and girls born out of wedlock, who were under care or awaiting admission--	370
Table 42. Prolonged agency care received prior to admission or application by feeble-minded children born out of wedlock, who were under care of State institutions or awaiting admission-----	371

	Page.
Table 43. Duration of care received by feeble-minded children of specified ages, born out of wedlock, who were under care of State institutions-----	373
Table 44. Length of time on waiting list, feeble-minded children born out of wedlock, who were awaiting admission to State institutions-----	374
CHAPTER 6. <i>Comparison of the Problem in Certain Sections of the State.</i>	
Table 45. Age of child at end of period and length of time kept with mother-----	391

CHARTS.

SECTION I. THE PROBLEM IN BOSTON.

I. Comparative infant mortality rates for infants born in wedlock and born out of wedlock, 1914-----	90
II. Deaths per 1,000 live births, 1914, among infants born in wedlock and born out of wedlock, by age at death-----	92
III. Deaths per 1,000 live births, 1914, among infants born in wedlock and born out of wedlock, by cause of death-----	95
IV. Per cent of infants born out of wedlock, 1914, who died during first year of life, by place of birth-----	138

SECTION II. THE PROBLEM IN THE STATE.

V. Comparison, by age at application or commitment, of 1,717 children born in wedlock and 606 children born out of wedlock, under care of the division of State minor wards in 1914-----	312
VI. Per cent of children 7 years of age and over, under care of the division of State minor wards in 1914, whose case records were numbered from 1 to 2000, whose conduct was poor-----	317

MAPS.

Massachusetts, by counties, showing 12 cities having, in 1910, a population of 50,000 or over-----	23
Metropolitan district-----	Facing 24

LETTER OF TRANSMITTAL.

U. S. DEPARTMENT OF LABOR,
CHILDREN'S BUREAU,
Washington, March 18, 1920.

SIR: I transmit herewith the second of two studies on illegitimacy as a child-welfare problem. The previous report presented general information in regard to the extent and significance of the problem in this and other countries. The present report is the result of an intensive study of the histories of children born out of wedlock in a large eastern city and of children under care of social agencies and institutions in that city and in the State whose metropolis it is. The information was gained entirely from public records and from the records of social agencies, and the study is of significance mainly as it throws light upon the relationship between birth out of wedlock and the problems of infant mortality, dependency, neglected childhood, and juvenile delinquency.

It is hoped that this report will help to call attention to the needs of children born out of wedlock and will be of assistance to those endeavoring through legislative action or through work with individual children to mitigate in some measure the hardship of their lot.

The study was made under the direction of Emma O. Lundberg, director of the social service division of the bureau. Katharine F. Lenroot was in charge of assembling and analyzing the data and collaborated with Miss Lundberg in writing the report. Evelina Belden had charge of the field work, assisted in the preparation of the material, and wrote parts of two chapters.

Respectfully submitted.

JULIA C. LATHROP, *Chief.*

HON. W. B. WILSON,
Secretary of Labor.

182299°—21—2

ILLEGITIMACY AS A CHILD-WELFARE PROBLEM.

PART 2.

STATEMENT OF PROBLEM AND GENERAL CONCLUSIONS.

PURPOSE OF STUDY.

The importance of illegitimacy as a child-welfare problem has been pointed out in a previous report which dealt with the prevalence and significance of birth out of wedlock, the child's legal status, and the State's responsibility for care and protection.¹ It was shown that at least 32,000 white children are born out of wedlock in the United States each year.² Except for four cities it was impossible to secure information in regard to infant mortality among children born out of wedlock in the United States. In three of these cities statistics indicated that the infant mortality rate was at least three times as high among children of illegitimate birth as among other children. European figures showed infant mortality rates among children born out of wedlock almost twice as high as those found among children of legitimate birth.

The previous report also called attention to the fact that in this country the care of children born out of wedlock has been assumed as a part of the general provision for children in need of special care. "Social agencies," the report states, "have become more and more conscious of the large proportion of their work that may be attributed to illegitimacy. They have begun to question whether society has not a peculiar responsibility toward these children who from birth are deprived of normal home life."³ A multitude of problems are involved in the protection of these children, and knowledge of

¹ U. S. Children's Bureau : *Illegitimacy as a Child-Welfare Problem*, Part 1, by Emma O. Lundberg and Katharine F. Lenroot. *Dependent, Defective, and Delinquent Classes Series No. 9*, Bureau Publication No. 66. Washington, 1920.

² Insufficient data made it impossible to estimate the number of Negro births.

³ *Illegitimacy as a Child-Welfare Problem*, Pt. 1, p. 56. See note 1.

their histories and the conditions under which they live is essential to constructive work for their welfare.

This study is an attempt to measure the prevalence of illegitimacy in the territory covered, the hazard to life and health, the handicap to the child's welfare which birth out of wedlock constitutes, and the extent to which illegitimacy contributes to the problems of dependency, neglected childhood, and juvenile delinquency.

FIELD AND METHOD OF INQUIRY.

Scope of investigation.

For the purposes of this study the term "child born out of wedlock" includes any child born to parents who had not been legally married previous to his birth. The Massachusetts law does not recognize the so-called common-law marriage and, therefore, children are included whose parents were living as married, no ceremony having been performed. Children are also included whose parents had been illegally married, the marriage having been void because one or the other had a legal spouse living, or because the ceremony was not performed by a person authorized under the law.

The report is divided into two sections—The Problem in Boston and The Problem in the State. The first section includes a study of infants born out of wedlock in Boston during one year, an analysis of children of illegitimate birth under care of social agencies, and a summary of the Massachusetts law for the support of children born out of wedlock together with a study of the administration of the law in the Boston courts. The second section deals with the number and distribution of births out of wedlock in Massachusetts, children of illegitimate birth under supervision of the State board of charity, adoption cases involving children born out of wedlock, children born out of wedlock who were under the care of State institutions for delinquents and of State institutions for the feeble-minded, and a comparison of the problem in certain sections of the State. The study was based on material secured from public records and from the records of social agencies.

The city of Boston and the State of Massachusetts were selected for the inquiry for the following reasons:

First. The completeness of the registration of births and deaths. Massachusetts was one of the 10 States included in the United States birth-registration area when established in 1915 and one of the 24 included in the death-registration area in 1914.¹ These areas, established by the United States Bureau of the Census, comprise territory in which registration is found to be at least 90 per cent complete.

Second. The high degree of development of organized social effort, both public and private, for dealing with problems of child dependency, the awareness of social agencies of the importance of illegitimacy as a child welfare problem, and the comparative com-

¹ The District of Columbia, also, was included in these areas.

pleteness of their records. The first conference on illegitimacy in this country was established in Boston in 1912, and was composed of representatives of social agencies who felt the need of thoroughgoing discussion of the problems daily met with in their case work. The State has developed a system of caring for children dependent upon the public for support, which is more centralized and on a larger scale than in any other State. The records of the State board of charity, as well as of other agencies, public and private, furnish a mass of very valuable social information.

Third. The activities of the State are to a large extent centralized in Boston, making records easily available. Moreover, Boston is a center of social effort for the State as a whole and, to a lesser degree, for other New England States.

General characteristics of the State.

Massachusetts, in 1910, ranked sixth among the States in population and second in density of population.² In 1914 the estimated population of the State was 3,643,863.³

The State is divided into 14 counties. Five are entirely inland—Berkshire, Franklin, Hampshire, Hampden, and Worcester. Berkshire and parts of Hampshire and Hampden Counties are to a considerable extent mountainous. Worcester County is the central county of the State and contains the second largest city—Worcester. Six counties border on the sea—Essex, Middlesex, Suffolk, Norfolk, Plymouth, and Bristol. These counties comprise the chief industrial and commercial sections of the State, with Boston as the center. Almost the whole of Suffolk County is included in the city of Boston. Of the three southernmost counties, Barnstable is a peninsula and Dukes and Nantucket are islands. In these counties the population is sparse and the main industries are fishing and cranberry growing.

Twelve cities in the State have 50,000 or more inhabitants, five having populations of 100,000 or more. In 1910 three-fourths of the population of the State lived in cities and towns having a population of over 10,000.⁴

Boston is not only the capital and metropolis of the State but also the commercial center of New England. Its population of 670,585 in 1910 was estimated to have increased to 736,461 in

² U. S. Bureau of the Census: Statistical Atlas of the United States. Washington, 1914. P. 24.

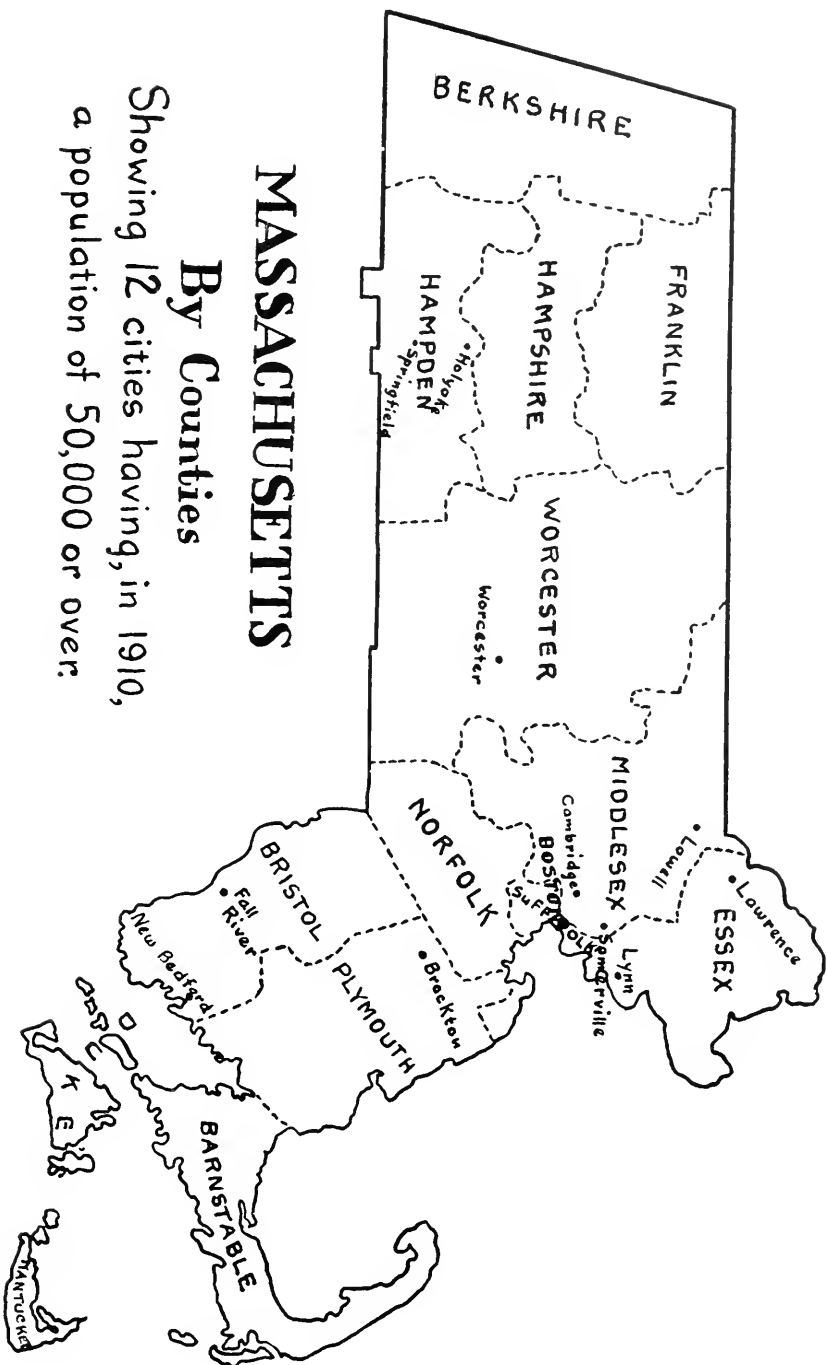
³ Estimated as for July 1, 1914, on the basis of the population, Apr. 15, 1910, as given by the U. S. Census, and the population, Apr. 1, 1915, as given by the Massachusetts State census, Seventy-third Annual Report on Births, Marriages, and Deaths for the Year 1914. Boston, 1915. P. 8.

⁴ Thirteenth Census of the United States, 1910: Vol. II, Population, p. 855; Vol. IX, Manufactures, p. 489.

MASSACHUSETTS

By Counties

Showing 12 cities having, in 1910,
a population of 50,000 or over.



1914.⁵ A number of neighboring towns and cities are to a considerable degree suburban to Boston. Thirty-nine of these towns and cities, together with Boston, belong either to the Metropolitan Water District or to the Metropolitan Parks District.⁶ The "metropolitan district" subsequently referred to in this report comprises the cities and towns included in one or both of the metropolitan districts named above. The population of this metropolitan district was 1,429,247 in 1910, and was estimated to be 1,569,171 in 1914.

In 1910, 32.8 per cent of the population of the State were native whites of native parentage; 34.8 per cent were native whites of foreign or mixed parentage; 31.2 per cent were foreign-born white; 1.1 per cent were Negroes, and 0.1 per cent were Chinese. Of the foreign-born white population, 28.1 per cent were born in Canada; 21.2 per cent in Ireland; 11.2 per cent in Russia; and 39.5 per cent in other countries.⁷

In Boston, 23.5 per cent of the population were, in 1910, native whites of native parentage; 38.3 per cent native whites of foreign or mixed parentage, 35.9 per cent foreign-born whites; and 2 per cent, Negroes. Of the foreign-born-white population, 20.9 per cent were born in Canada; 27.4 per cent in Ireland; 17.4 per cent in Russia; 13 per cent in Italy; and 21.3 per cent in other countries.⁸

The female population of Massachusetts between the ages of 15 and 44 years, inclusive, was 871,230 in 1910. Of this population, 47.1 per cent were single, 49.8 per cent were married, and 3.1 per cent were widowed or divorced. The total number of single, widowed, and divorced women of the ages specified was 437,040.⁹

In Boston, the total female population between the ages of 15 and 44 years numbered 181,823 in 1910. The percentage of single women was 49—somewhat higher than for the State as a whole. Married women comprised 47 per cent of the Boston women 15 to 44 years of age, and widowed or divorced women 4 per cent. The total number of single, widowed, and divorced women between the ages of 15 and 44 years, inclusive, was 96,378.¹⁰

⁵ Estimated as for July 1, 1914, on the basis of the population, Apr. 15, 1910, as given by the U. S. Census, and the population, Apr. 1, 1915, as given by the Massachusetts State census, Seventy-third Annual Report on Births, Marriages, and Deaths for the Year 1914. Boston, 1915. P. 8.

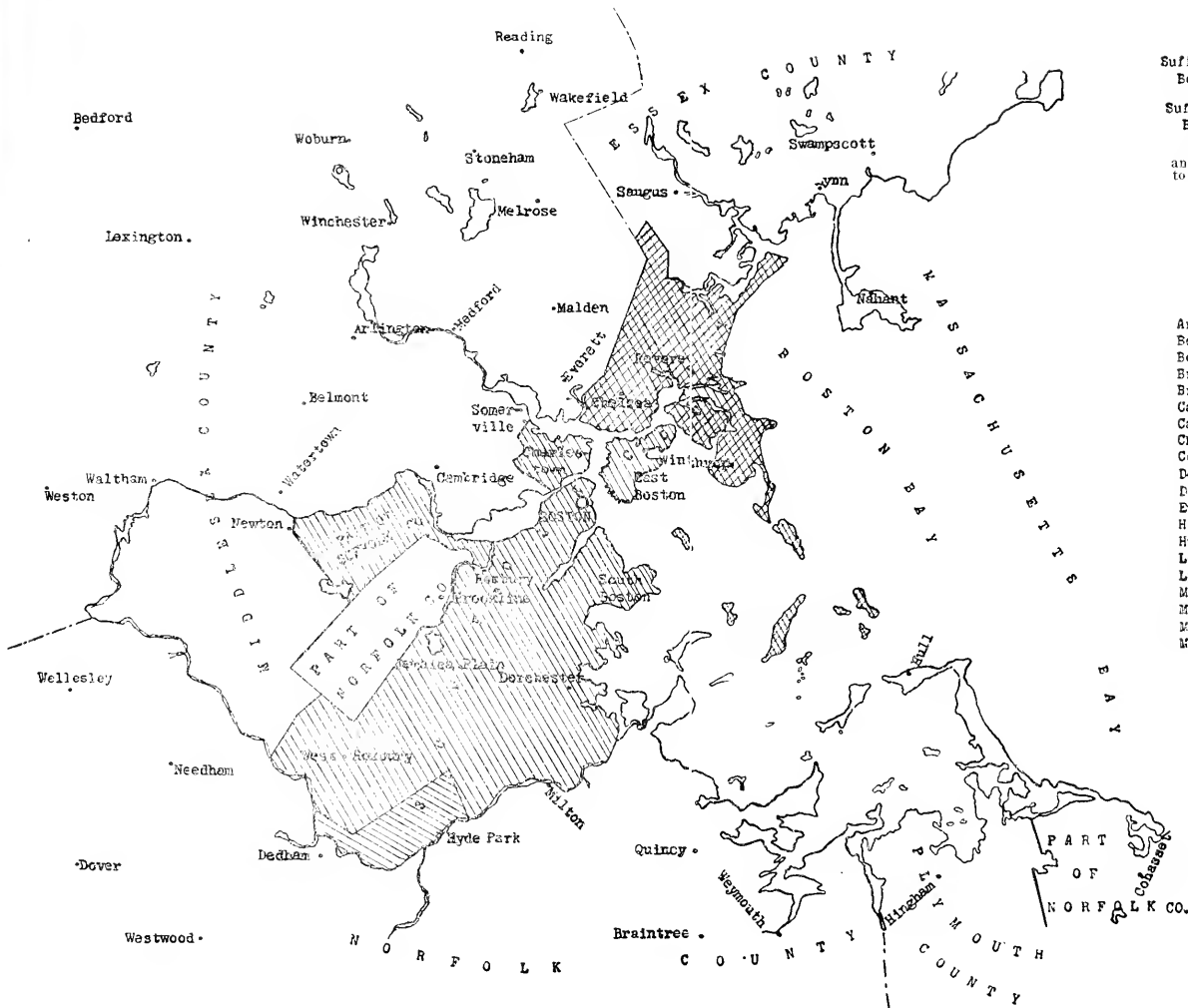
⁶ The Commonwealth of Massachusetts; 1915. Assessments for Interest, Sinking Funds, Serial Bonds, and Maintenance of the Metropolitan Districts. Boston, 1915. Pp. 7, 14-18. In 1919, as a part of the general reorganization of the executive and administrative functions of the Commonwealth, the metropolitan park commission and the metropolitan water and sewerage board were abolished and their functions transferred to the metropolitan district commission. Acts 1919, ch. 350, sec. 123.

⁷ Thirteenth Census of the United States, 1910: Vol. II, Population, pp. 863-865.

⁸ *Ibid.*, pp. 880, 868.

⁹ *Ibid.*, p. 867.

¹⁰ *Ibid.*, p. 871.



Suffolk Co., City of Boston

Suffolk Co., outside Boston

(Hyde Park Township was annexed to Suffolk County and to Boston in 1911.)

METROPOLITAN DISTRICT

Arlington	Nahant
Belmont	Needham
Boston	Newton
Braintree	Quincy
Brookline	Reading
Cambridge	Revere
Canton	Saugus
Chelsea	Somerville
Cohasset	Stonham
Dedham	Swampscott
Dover	Wakefield
Everett	Waltham
Hingham	Watertown
Hull	Wellesley
Lexington	Weston
Lynn	Westwood
Malden	Weymouth
Medford	Winchester
Melrose	Winthrop
Milton	Woburn

The total population under 20 years of age in the State of Massachusetts in 1910 was 1,205,253. In Boston, the population under the age of 20 was 115,500.¹¹

Massachusetts is primarily a manufacturing State. In 1909, 17.4 per cent of the total population were wage earners employed in manufactures. Of these wage earners, 3.5 per cent were children under 16 years of age, and 29.6 per cent were women 16 years of age and over.¹² Boston, in 1909, ranked eighth among the cities of the United States in value of manufactured products. Of the wage earners in the State, 11.9 per cent were in Boston.¹³

Historical development of the care of dependent, delinquent, and defective children in Massachusetts.

The development of State provision.—The tendency toward State provision for dependent classes has been very marked in Massachusetts. The principal reason for this development lies in the settlement laws. Legal settlement, or residence for purpose of poor relief, is difficult to acquire. In severity of requirements for legal settlement Massachusetts is equaled by only a few States.¹⁴

The necessity for aid to persons in distress early confronted the colonists of Plymouth and Massachusetts Bay, and the question immediately arose as to who was entitled to receive assistance. During the seventeenth and the greater part of the eighteenth century the acquirement of settlement was a matter of no great difficulty, a few months' residence constituting a sufficient claim. The town was the unit of local government; and since the rural area surrounding a settlement was included in the town, everyone living in the Commonwealth belonged in some town. Poor relief was a function of the town, not of the county, except that in cases of dispute between towns the county court was empowered to hear and determine complaints and to defray from the county treasury the expense of maintaining persons whose settlement could not be determined. Until 1675 no pauper had received assistance from the general treasury of the Commonwealth. In 1675 the colony of Massachusetts Bay granted aid to refugees from King Philip's War, and this was later regarded as a precedent for the granting of aid to those who could not claim settlement in any town or county.¹⁵

With the increase of immigration and changing industrial and social conditions, Massachusetts found it necessary to revise her settlement laws. A somewhat stringent law had been passed in 1766,

¹¹ Thirteenth Census of the United States, 1910: Vol. II, Population, pp. 866, 869.

¹² Ibid., Vol. IX, Manufactures, pp. 489-492, 497.

¹³ Ibid., p. 500.

¹⁴ U. S. Bureau of the Census: Summary of State Laws Relating to the Dependent Classes, 1913. Washington, 1914. Pp. 322-328.

¹⁵ Cummings, John: "Poor Laws of Massachusetts and New York." Publications of the American Economic Association, Vol. X (July, 1895), pp. 497-502.

and the revision of 1794, instead of making the acquirement of settlement easier, made it a matter of very great difficulty. The present law is based on the law of 1794,¹⁶ though the severity of its provisions have been somewhat modified. During most of the nineteenth century the law provided that a settlement once gained was not defeated by the subsequent acquirement of a settlement outside the Commonwealth. A person removing outside the Commonwealth always retained his settlement and passed it on to his children and his children's children. As a consequence, needy persons outside the State who could claim settlement, even through a remote ancestor, were often sent to Massachusetts for relief.¹⁷

The present law provides that five consecutive years' residence in a city or town is necessary to acquire a settlement. Settlement can not be acquired or in process of acquirement while a person is receiving relief as a pauper from the State or from a city or town unless the cost thereof is repaid within two years after its receipt. A married woman acquires the settlement of her husband if he has any within the State; otherwise she retains her own. Children of legitimate birth have the settlement of their father if he has any within the State; otherwise they have the settlement of their mother if she has any, and if the father dies they have the settlement of their mother. Children of illegitimate birth have the settlement of their mother if she has any within the Commonwealth. Five consecutive years' absence from a town or city terminates settlement therein. Residence in a public institution within the Commonwealth is not to be counted in computing the time either for acquiring or losing a settlement, except as included above in connection with relief as a pauper and failure to make reimbursement.¹⁸

With the increasing severity of settlement laws many persons in need of relief could not claim it from the city or town in which they were living. In 1789 a law was passed providing for the reimbursement by the State of cities and towns for expenses incurred in the care of persons without settlement.¹⁹ The administration of relief was left in the hands of the towns, which drew heavily upon the treasury of the Commonwealth. In 1851 the State board of inspectors in regard to alien passengers and State paupers was created. One of its chief duties was the examination of claims brought against the Commonwealth by towns for the support of State paupers.²⁰ In 1863 the legislature created a more effective central

¹⁶ Acts 1794 ch. 34.

¹⁷ Cummings, John: "Poor Laws of Massachusetts and New York." Publications of the American Economic Association, Vol. X (July, 1895), pp. 509-512.

¹⁸ R. L. 1902 ch. 80; Acts 1911 ch. 669, 1913 ch. 266, 1914 ch. 323.

¹⁹ Cummings, John: "Poor Laws of Massachusetts and New York." Publications of the American Economic Association, Vol. X (July, 1895), p. 513.—Acts 1789 ch. 30.

²⁰ Ibid., p. 517.—Acts 1851 ch. 342.

board—the board of State charities.²¹ This board was directed to “investigate and supervise the whole system of public and correctional institutions of the Commonwealth.” In 1879 the State board of health, the board of State charities, and the subordinate boards of trustees and inspectors of the several State institutions were abolished and in their place was created a consolidated board of health, lunacy, and charity.²² In 1886 a separate board of health was established.²³ In 1898 the State board of lunacy and charity was reorganized into two boards, the State board of insanity and the State board of charity.²⁴ In 1908 a division of State adult poor and a division of State minor wards were established within the State board of charity.²⁵

By legislative act of 1919 the executive and administrative functions of the Commonwealth have been reorganized into 20 departments. The department of public welfare takes over the functions of the State board of charity, and has three divisions—aid and relief, child guardianship, and juvenile training. The division of aid and relief includes the functions of the division of State adult poor of the State board of charity, and the division of child guardianship includes the functions of the division of State minor wards. The division of juvenile training consists of the board of trustees of the Massachusetts Training Schools—institutions for juvenile delinquents.²⁶

Care of dependent children.—In colonial days the selectmen of the town and later a special board of overseers of the poor provided for dependent children by binding them out as apprentices. Stubborn children were committed to county houses of correction. Later, town workhouses were established to which indigent persons were committed.²⁷

By 1832 there were three institutions owned and maintained by the State—a prison, a hospital, and an insane asylum. Several private hospitals and asylums received State aid. In 1847 the first State reformatory for juveniles in this country was established in Massachusetts.²⁸ In 1848 a State appropriation was made for the education of a limited number of feeble-minded children,²⁹ and three years later the first State institution in America for the care of this class of children was established.³⁰ In 1854 the establishment of the

²¹ Acts 1863 ch. 240.

²² Acts 1879 ch. 291.

²³ Acts 1886 ch. 101.

²⁴ Acts 1898 ch. 433.

²⁵ R. L. 1902 ch. 84 sec. 2; Acts 1908 ch. 598.

²⁶ Acts 1919 ch. 350 secs. 87-95.

²⁷ Cummings, John: “Poor Laws of Massachusetts and New York.” Publications of the American Economic Association, Vol. X (July, 1895), pp. 503-505.

²⁸ Acts 1847 ch. 165.

²⁹ Resolves 1848 ch. 65.

³⁰ Resolves 1851 ch. 44.

first separate reformatory for girls in the United States was authorized by law.³¹ Massachusetts was beginning to classify children in need of public support, and separate provision for the delinquent and the feeble-minded came before the needs of the destitute and neglected were recognized.

One of the first acts of the board of State charities was to transfer children from two of the State almshouses to the third almshouse at Monson. These State almshouses had been established in 1852,³² and half their inmates were children. In 1866 the institution at Monson was designated the State Primary School for Dependent and Neglected Children, though it was also used as an almshouse until 1872.³³ This school was the first State institution for dependent children in the country. Children were kept in the institution for longer or shorter periods and were then placed out in families, free of expense to the State. Children under 3 years of age were not admitted.

From the first, the board of State charities had recommended care of children outside institutions. It engaged an agent to supervise children placed out from State institutions, and three years later—in 1869—a State visiting agency was established, reporting to the board.³⁴ The duties of this agency were: To visit all children placed out from State institutions; to visit and report upon the homes of applicants for children; to attend trials of juvenile offenders, investigate the circumstances, and advise whether the children should be committed to a reform school or to the custody of the board of State charities, to be placed by it with their parents or in other families or temporarily in the State primary school. Children could be transferred from the custody of the board to the reform schools. By these means, flexibility in dealing with individual children and treatment according to their development and needs were made possible.

Meanwhile, in 1867, the Massachusetts Infant Asylum was incorporated, where public officials and agents could place infants. The institution was supported by public funds and private subscriptions, and it inaugurated a system of boarding out. In 1880 the boarding out of children from the State primary school was authorized.³⁵ The year previous the legislature instructed overseers of the poor to place children over 4 years of age in respectable families, and declared it to be unlawful to detain such children in almshouses if possible to care for them in families without inordinate expense.³⁶ The

³¹ Resolves 1854 ch. 52.

³² Acts 1852 ch. 275.

³³ Acts 1866 ch. 209, 1872 ch. 45.

³⁴ Acts 1869 ch. 453.

³⁵ Acts 1880 ch. 208.

³⁶ Acts 1879 ch. 103.

State visiting agency was abolished³⁷ and its duties were assigned to the State board, which was given general supervision over all the State charitable institutions, the hospitals for the insane, and the reform schools. In 1882 provision was made for the commitment of neglected children to the custody of the State board,³⁸ and the board was authorized to place children in families directly without passing them through the State primary school. From time to time laws were enacted extending the classes of children committed to the board's custody. With the development of the boarding-out and placing-out systems it was found possible to decrease the numbers of children in the primary school, and in 1895 this institution was closed.³⁹ Since that time the State has cared for its dependent and neglected children wholly in private families. In 1900 the State board of charity was authorized to provide for dependent children, without regard to settlement, at the request of parents, guardians, or overseers of the poor.⁴⁰

The city of Boston began a system of special provision for destitute and neglected children in 1877. Previous to that time they had been cared for at the house of industry (city almshouse and workhouse). In that year the boys were removed to the Roxbury almshouse, which became the Marcella Street Children's Home. In 1881 the girls were removed to a building near this home, which was thereafter included as part of the Marcella Street institution. In 1897 the children were placed under a separate board of trustees. The city began in 1889 to board out the younger children, especially the infants, and agents were employed for finding free homes. Nine years later the Marcella Street home was abandoned altogether, all the children being placed out in families.⁴¹

In the other cities and towns of Massachusetts, dependent children are under the care of the overseers of the poor and are either kept in almshouses, placed in boarding or free homes, or boarded in institutions. A child can not legally be kept in an almshouse longer than two months unless he is under 2 years of age, under 3 years of age if with his mother, or "unless he is a State pauper, an idiot, or otherwise so defective in body or mind as to make his retention in an almshouse desirable."⁴² Children supported by cities and towns must be visited at least once a year by agents of the State board of charity. Overseers of the poor turn over large numbers of their cases to the care of the State board, reimbursing the State for the expense involved.

³⁷ Acts 1879 ch. 291.

³⁸ Acts 1882 ch. 181.

³⁹ Acts 1895 ch. 428.

⁴⁰ R. L. 1902 ch. 83 sec. 36; Acts 1900 ch. 397.

⁴¹ Folks, Homer: *The Care of Destitute, Neglected and Delinquent Children*. New York, 1911. Pp. 154-156.

⁴² R. L. 1902 ch. 81 secs. 5-7; Acts, 1905 ch. 303, 1913 ch. 112.

The care of delinquent children.—The development of State provision for delinquent children has already been touched upon. In 1847 the Lyman School for Boys was established, to which boys under 16 years of age could be committed and retained until the age of 21.⁴³ The present law provides for the commitment of boys under 15 to this institution. In 1854 the establishment of the Industrial School for Girls was authorized, to which girls over 7 and under 16 could be committed and retained until 18.⁴⁴ Subsequent changes in the age limits have brought the law to its present form, in which girls under 17 may be committed and retained until 21. In 1869 the State visiting agency began the practice of having a representative at all trials of juveniles and advising as to what disposition should be made. Later, representatives of the State board were present at the trials. In 1870 jurisdiction was vested in the probate courts to try all children under 16 years of age for all offenses except those punishable by imprisonment for life.⁴⁵ Four years later a law was passed providing that:⁴⁶ "Police, district, and municipal courts shall try juvenile offenders separate and apart from the trial of other criminal cases at suitable times which shall be designated therefor by said courts and shall be called the session for juvenile offenders for which a separate docket and record shall be kept." This was the forerunner of modern juvenile court legislation. In 1879 a single board, known as the trustees of the State primary and reform schools, was given charge of the institutions for delinquent children and of the State primary school.⁴⁷ The girls' parole department was established in 1900 in connection with the Industrial School for Girls, and a similar department for boys had been created previously. The Industrial School for Boys was established in 1908,⁴⁸ receiving boys between the ages of 15 and 17 years, inclusive. Subsequently the board of trustees, created in 1879, and later changed to the trustees of the Lyman and Industrial Schools, was combined with the trustees of the new Industrial School for Boys to form the trustees of the Massachusetts Training Schools.⁴⁹ This board constitutes the division of juvenile training of the new department of public welfare, established by legislative act of 1919.

The Boston House of Reformation for Juvenile Offenders was the second juvenile reformatory in the United States and was established

⁴³ Acts 1847 ch. 165.

⁴⁴ Resolves 1854 ch. 52; Acts 1855 ch. 442.

⁴⁵ Acts 1870 ch. 359 sec. 7.

⁴⁶ Acts 1874 ch. 258 sec. 3.

⁴⁷ Acts 1879 ch. 291 sec. 8.

⁴⁸ Acts 1908 ch. 639.

⁴⁹ Acts 1911 ch. 566.

in 1826.⁵⁰ In 1860 the girls were removed to a separate building, and in 1889 the department for girls was closed and the girls were sent to the State industrial school. In 1877 the parental (or truant) school was differentiated from the house of reformation. Later the house of reformation became the Suffolk School for Boys of the City of Boston. During 1914 the parental school was closed.⁵¹

An exception to the general tendency toward State provision is the existence of five county training schools, maintained by seven counties, to which juvenile offenders may be committed. The Boston parental school, closed in 1914, was also classified as a county training school. The State board of charity in its annual report for 1914 pointed out that this system was "not in accord with the best accepted methods in the care and protection of children, in spite of the efforts of loyal and efficient superintendents to adapt it to their problem."⁵²

Provision for the feeble-minded.—The first State institution in the country for the care of the feeble-minded, established in Massachusetts in 1851,⁵³ was called the Massachusetts School for Idiotic and Feeble-Minded Youth. Later the name was changed to the Massachusetts School for the Feeble-Minded.⁵⁴ In 1898 a farm was purchased to be used in connection with the school for the feeble-minded for the employment of adults. This farm became the present Templeton Colony. In 1907 a second State institution for the feeble-minded was established, and in 1915 an appropriation was made for a third institution not yet completed.

In the development of care for the dependent, delinquent, and defective, Massachusetts has taken the lead among American States. Most significant in this development have been the increasing differentiation and classification of those requiring care, together with the tendency toward centralization under State control of provision for these classes, and the use of the family home instead of the institution as a means of providing for dependent, neglected, and certain classes of delinquent children.

Present methods of care.—At the time this study was made the State of Massachusetts provided for dependent and neglected children through the division of State minor wards of the State board of charity, placing them in boarding or free homes; for juvenile delinquents through the division of State minor wards and the three State training schools with their parole departments; and for mentally defective children in the two State institutions for the

⁵⁰ Acts 1826 ch. 182.

⁵¹ Acts 1914 ch. 738.

⁵² Thirty-sixth Annual Report of the State Board of Charity of Massachusetts for the Year Ending November 30, 1914. Boston, 1915. Part I, p. 95.

⁵³ Resolves 1851 ch. 44.

⁵⁴ Acts 1883 ch. 239.

feeble-minded. However, the accommodations for the care of the mentally defective were far from adequate, and many remained in the community, often constituting serious problems to public and private agencies designed for the care of other classes. In addition to providing for the classes above mentioned, the State also maintained or partly supported institutions for blind, crippled and deformed, and epileptic children, State sanatoria for the tuberculous, and State hospitals for the insane.

The reorganization act of 1919, by which the executive and administrative functions of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts were organized into 20 departments, established two departments of interest in connection with this study—the department of public welfare and the department of mental diseases. The department of public welfare is the successor to the State board of charity and has three divisions—the division of aid and relief, which performs the functions of the former division of State adult poor; the division of child guardianship, which takes over the work of the division of State minor wards; and the division of juvenile training, which consists of the board of trustees of the Massachusetts Training Schools as organized prior to the passage of the act. The department of mental diseases consists of the Massachusetts Commission on Mental Diseases as organized under an act passed in 1916. This commission was the successor to the Massachusetts State Board of Insanity, under whose supervision were the State hospitals for the insane and the State institutions for the feeble-minded.⁵⁵

Alongside the public agencies many private agencies exist for the care and protection of children and are performing valuable functions, both as a stimulus to the public agencies and as a means of working out advanced methods of dealing with special types of problems. The private agencies have utilized the family-home system of caring for their wards to almost as great an extent as the State, placing the children under supervision in boarding or free homes. All private charitable corporations must report to the State board of charity, which also exercises supervision over children under 2 years of age placed in family homes. More detailed descriptions of the work of public and private agencies in Boston and in the State of Massachusetts are given in later sections of this report.

Sources of information and method of analysis.

In the early days of philanthropic effort it was deemed neither necessary nor desirable to keep full records of the circumstances of the individual or family receiving assistance and of the amount and

⁵⁵ Acts 1919 ch. 350 secs. 79–81, 87–95.

kind of work done in their behalf. Even now some agencies and institutions have not progressed beyond this stage. But with the realization of the need for adequate social information as prerequisite to efficient treatment of the problems presented, social agencies have come to see the value of the systematic recording of the histories of their cases. There is still much to be desired in the way of completeness of information obtained and methods of entering social data. It is generally agreed that the purpose of record keeping is to help the agency to perform its functions with regard to the individuals and families under its care, and to preserve the data obtained in the course of its work for analysis and interpretation which will lead to general measures for social improvement. It is this latter function of record keeping with which this report is mainly concerned. The prime motive in this study was the belief that a wealth of material lies buried in the records of social agencies and institutions which, with little effort, can be made available, and that the subject of illegitimacy is a field in which this method of research is particularly desirable because of the difficulties involved in getting first-hand information from the individuals concerned.

That there are serious difficulties involved in a study based on existing records of agencies and institutions is acknowledged. The greatest obstacle is the lack of completeness and uniformity in case records. One of the reasons for the selection of the city of Boston and the State of Massachusetts for the field of this inquiry was the comparative excellence of the records of social agencies. But the high standards of record keeping maintained by some agencies were not common to all, nor was there general agreement as to the minimum information which should be obtained in the preliminary investigations or as to the method of measuring progress and results obtained after the cases had been definitely assumed. The statistical analyses presented in this study are therefore qualified by the failure to obtain reports as to every item for all the cases included, and the possibility that the cases for which reports were obtained were not entirely representative of the whole group.

It must also be borne in mind that, except for those portions dealing with vital statistics, this study is not representative of the whole problem involved in illegitimate birth, but only of that portion of the problem—the most serious from the point of view of the child and also from that of the burden to the community—with which social agencies come in contact. But it is believed that the data here presented are sufficiently representative to form a basis for general conclusions of value and to furnish a foundation for further studies of special phases of the problem.

The advantages of a study based on existing records are particularly great in a consideration of illegitimacy. They may be summarized as follows:

1. It is not necessary to repeat the delicate and often painful interviews which have already been held by representatives of the agencies and institutions, who make the investigations only for the sake of the service they can render the family.
2. Much information in regard to family history can not be obtained by means of a visit to the family alone. Such data have in many instances been secured by social agencies through many interviews and consultations.
3. Saving of time and expense in the field work required for the investigation.

The study covered the year 1914. This was the last year during which normal conditions prevailed, the succeeding years bringing changes due to the war—the cessation of immigration, for instance.

The material for the inquiry was secured from records of births and deaths, from court records, and from records of public and private agencies and institutions—State and city. Vital statistics gave the data for the first part of the chapter on the infant born out of wedlock, and the chapter on illegitimate births in Massachusetts. The former chapter centers in infants born out of wedlock in Boston during the year 1914, the vital statistics data being supplemented by information secured from the records of social agencies and from court records. The aim was to determine the illegitimate birth rate, the infant mortality among children born out of wedlock as compared with that among children of legitimate birth, the proportion of infants of illegitimate birth coming to the attention of social agencies during the first year of life, and something of the histories of those infants who were more or less dependent upon public or private agencies.

The chapter entitled "Children of Illegitimate Birth under the Care of Social Agencies"—the second chapter of Section I, The Problem in Boston—was based on material obtained from 37 public and private agencies and institutions. These agencies included the State child-caring agency; the public and private child-caring and child-protective agencies of Boston; the State and city infirmaries; maternity homes, health agencies, and hospitals in Boston; the Boston legal aid society; the Boston juvenile court; two State institutions for juvenile delinquents and the reformatory for women; the State institutions for the feeble-minded; and a State hospital, located in Boston, for the first care and observation of mental patients. The State agencies and institutions were included in this chapter only so far as they cared for children whose residence was

Boston at the time of application or commitment. Practically all the social agencies and institutions in Boston whose work touched the problem of illegitimacy were included, except the agencies for family relief and rehabilitation—such as the associated charities and the overseers of the poor—whose work dealt only incidentally with children born out of wedlock. The aim of this part of the study was to determine the proportion the care of children born out of wedlock bore to the total work of the agencies studied, and to secure data in regard to these children which would show how long they had been cared for, why they had come to the attention of the agencies, their circumstances at the time of application for care, where they were living at the end of the period, their physical and mental condition and characteristics, and something of the histories of the mothers and their families and of the fathers. The age limit for inclusion was 21 years.

The third chapter of the analysis of the problem in Boston is a summary of the Massachusetts law for the support of children born out of wedlock and of the administration of the law in the Boston courts. The latter was based on a study of all court cases in Boston initiated in 1914 under the act of 1913, the material having been obtained from court and probation records.

Section II, The Problem in the State, deals principally with children of illegitimate birth under the care of State institutions and agencies caring for dependent, neglected, delinquent, and defective children. The points covered are very similar to those included in the chapter of the Boston section on children under the care of social agencies. The chapter on children under the care of the State board of charity includes studies of children cared for by the division of State minor wards during the year, of infants reported to the board as being cared for apart from their relatives, and of mothers and children at the State infirmary given care by the social service committee of the board. Adoption records of the probate courts of four counties furnished the material for the chapter on the adoption of children born out of wedlock. Infant mortality studies made by the children's bureau in two Massachusetts cities,⁵⁶ and a brief field survey of a seacoast rural section made possible the comparative material in the last chapter of the report. Detailed descriptions of the methods used in analyzing and presenting the data are given in each section.

In order to call attention to the most significant findings of the study and to bring together from the different sections of the report the facts that bear on the same topics, a somewhat detailed summary of the whole report is presented as a part of this introductory chapter.

⁵⁶ Brockton and New Bedford.

SUMMARY OF FINDINGS.

Prevalence of birth out of wedlock.

The information secured in this study indicates that in the city of Boston about 1 in every 23 live births is illegitimate, and that for the whole State the proportion is about 1 in 44. During the five years 1910 to 1914 the number of live births registered as illegitimate in Boston ranged from 670 to 867, representing from 3.8 per cent to 4.6 per cent of the total live births in each year; the number of live births registered as illegitimate per 1,000 single, widowed, and divorced women 15 to 44 years of age ranged from 6.9 to 8.7. In the State as a whole in 1914 the number of births registered as illegitimate was 2,108, or 2.3 per cent of the total live births. The rate per 1,000 single, widowed, and divorced women of childbearing age in the State was 4.5. The higher rate for Boston is accounted for largely by the fact that a considerable number of nonresident mothers come to the metropolis to secure maternity care. More than two-fifths of the mothers of infants born in Boston resided elsewhere. Comparison of statistics for communities of various populations in the State indicated that the problem in rural areas and small towns is practically as great as in all cities save the largest.

The year 1914 was selected for intensive study. During this year there were in Boston 752 live births registered as illegitimate and 95 others registered as legitimate, but, as a result of checking through agency and court records, found to be illegitimate. Hence, the total number known to be illegitimate was 847, or 4.4 per cent of all live births in the city, and since there were seven pairs of twins the number of mothers was 840.

Number of children born out of wedlock included in the study.

In addition to the 847 infants born out of wedlock in Boston during the year 1914,¹ the numbers of children dealt with in the various parts of the inquiry are as stated below.

Children under care of Boston agencies.—In this summary the term “children under care of Boston agencies” must be understood to refer to children under care of Boston public and private agencies, and also to children under care of State agencies whose residence was

¹ Information analyzed in Sec. I, ch. 1.

Boston at the time of application or commitment. Included in this group are the children who received temporary or prolonged care from Boston agencies whose work included the care of children born out of wedlock, and children under the temporary or prolonged care of the State board of charity or of State institutions for delinquents or mental defectives, if Boston was their residence at the time of application for care or at commitment. During the year 1914 a total of 2,863 children born out of wedlock were under the care of Boston agencies as defined above. The records of 2,178 of these children contained more or less complete social information, and a large part of the analysis relates to them. However, in certain instances the data relate to larger or smaller numbers, according to the varying degrees of completeness of information.

Children under care of the division of State minor wards.—A total of 7,526 children were under the temporary or prolonged care of the division of State minor wards of the Massachusetts State Board of Charity during the year covered by the study, of whom 1,721 were of illegitimate birth. The greater part of chapter 2, Section II, is concerned with their histories. In addition, a comparative study was made of the histories of 1,717 children of legitimate birth and 606 children of illegitimate birth under care of the division during the year whose case records were numbered from 1 to 2000²—a method of selection which may fairly be assumed to give unbiased results.

Children under care of State institutions for delinquents.—A total of 102 children under 21 years of age known to have been born out of wedlock were, during the year covered by the study, under the care of the three State training schools and their parole departments and of the reformatory for women. These children had been committed as delinquents. In addition 80 infants or young children of illegitimate birth were under care with their mothers, who had been committed as delinquents. Chapter 4 of Section II of the report deals with the children under care of these institutions.

Children under care of State institutions for the feeble-minded or awaiting admission.—Seventy-three children under 21 years of age, born out of wedlock, were under care of the two State institutions for the feeble-minded during the year. Sixty-seven children of illegitimate birth under 21 years of age were awaiting admission to these institutions. The facts secured relative to these children are given in Section II, chapter 5.

Other children included in the study.—As part of the chapter dealing with children under the supervision of the State board of charity, there is included a discussion of 1,996 children under 2

² The case records are filed by families, and the same number is given to all members of the family under care. Many of the cases in the 1 to 2000 group were not current in 1914, the children having been discharged from care before that date.

years of age reported as cared for apart from their relatives in family homes. Of these children, 995 were born out of wedlock. The same chapter also includes a discussion of 211 children of illegitimate birth under the supervision of the social service committee of the State board of charity. This committee makes investigations and gives after care to women and children at the State infirmary.

The chapter on the adoption of children born out of wedlock³ covers the adoption records of four counties. During 1914 there were 441 adoption cases before the courts of these counties, of which 204 involved children known to have been born out of wedlock.

The third chapter of Section I is concerned with legal action for the support of children born out of wedlock. In 1914 a total of 256 cases were initiated in the Boston courts. These cases involved 239 alleged fathers and 253 children.

The study of the seacoast rural section included 121 children born out of wedlock during a 10-year period.

The background of illegitimacy.

The possibilities of a child's development and the kind of care and protection needed are largely determined by the physical and mental condition and the character of the parents and their families, and by their economic and social status. The study revealed a large proportion of cases in which children deprived by the circumstances of their birth of the advantages of normal homes and parental care carried the additional burden of a heritage in which there was physical weakness or disease, mental subnormality or abnormality, or moral instability.

Ages of parents.—The youth of the parents was an outstanding feature in many cases. Of the 792 mothers of infants born out of wedlock in Boston during the year covered by the study, whose ages were reported, 2 per cent were under 16 years of age—the age of consent in Massachusetts; a total of 13 per cent were under 18 years of age, and 43 per cent were under the age of 21. Of the 285 fathers whose ages were reported, 21 per cent were less than 21 years of age, 4 per cent being under the age of 18. The mothers of 11 per cent of the children under the care of Boston agencies whose histories gave information on this point were under the age of 18 when their children were born; the mothers of 37 per cent were under 21 years of age. The fathers of 17 per cent of the 599 children under care of Boston agencies whose records gave this information were under the age of legal majority.

Physical condition of mother.—For 473 of the 840 mothers of infants born out of wedlock during the year, the information was

³ Sec. II ch. 3.

deemed sufficiently complete to justify classification as to physical condition. Mothers in poor physical condition comprised 24 per cent of the 473 reported, and 14 per cent of the total 840 mothers. Eight per cent of those reported, or 5 per cent of the total 840, had been diagnosed as having venereal infection.

The mothers of 3 per cent of the 2,178 children under care of Boston agencies, whose histories gave social information, were known to have died before the applications for care were made. The mothers of 22 per cent were known to be physically defective or diseased, or in poor physical condition. In 6 per cent of the cases the mother had been diagnosed as having venereal infection.

Mental condition of parents and grandparents.—The facts revealed in the study of infants born out of wedlock and of children of illegitimate birth under care of social agencies throw light on the relationship between low mentality and illegitimacy. The figures secured in the various parts of the inquiry in regard to the mentality of the the mother showed a remarkable similarity. (See Table I.)

TABLE I.—*Mental condition of mothers of children born out of wedlock, as shown by various parts of the inquiry.*

Mental condition of mother.	Per cent distribution.				
	Mothers of infants born out of wedlock during one year.		Children of illegitimate birth.		
	Total (840).	Mental condition reported (488). ^a	Under care of Boston agencies (2,178). ^b	Under care of 6 private child-caring agencies in Boston (472).	Under care of division of State minor wards (1,721).
Total.....	100.0	100.0	100.0	100.0	100.0
Normal, so far as known.....	87.4	78.3	82.6	81.1	82.0
Below normal.....	12.6	21.7	17.4	18.9	18.0
Subnormal, abnormal, or insane (diagnosed).....	2.6	4.5	4.5	5.9	4.6
Feeble-minded (diagnosed).....	5.1	8.8	6.1	4.7	6.5
Probably subnormal or feeble-minded.....	4.9	8.4	6.8	8.3	6.9

^a The histories of 488 mothers were sufficiently complete to justify their classification according to mental condition.

^b Including Boston children under care of State agencies. The total under care was 2,863, but 685 of these were under care of agencies not giving social information.

Thirteen per cent of the mothers of infants born out of wedlock during the year were known to be below normal mentally, 5 per cent having been diagnosed feeble-minded. For each of the three groups of children under agency care the percentage of children whose mothers were below normal was very nearly the same—17 per cent for children under care of Boston agencies, 18 per cent for those under the care of the division of State minor wards, and 19 per cent

for the children under care of a selected group of private child-caring agencies in Boston. The percentage whose mothers had been diagnosed feeble-minded ranged from 5 to 7, being highest for children under care of the division of State minor wards and lowest for children under care of the selected group of private agencies.

The fathers of 16 of the 2,178 children under care of Boston agencies whose histories gave social information were reported below normal mentally. One or both maternal grandparents of 65 children—3 per cent—were reported insane or mentally below normal. Considering together the mental condition of the parents and grandparents, 19 per cent of the 2,178 children had a heritage in which there was known to be insanity, feeble-mindedness, or other subnormal or abnormal mental condition, or probable feeble-mindedness or subnormality. In 9 per cent of the 2,178 cases there was definite feeble-mindedness or insanity in the family history. These percentages are understatements because of the large number of cases in which the information was incomplete.

Character of parents and grandparents.—The histories of the mothers, as given in the records of social agencies, contained information of varying degrees of completeness in regard to character. Absence of information was assumed to mean that the mothers were of good character, aside from the sex irregularities connected with these cases of illegitimate maternity. The information secured in various parts of the study in regard to the character of the mother is summarized in Table II.

TABLE II.—*Character of mothers of children born out of wedlock, as shown by various parts of the inquiry.*

Character of mother.	Per cent distribution.			
	Mothers of infants born out of wedlock during one year.		Children of illegitimate birth.	
	Total (840).	Character reported (495). ^a	Under care of Boston agencies (2,178). ^b	Under care of division of State minor wards (1,721).
Total.....	100.0	100.0	100.0	100.0
Good, so far as known.....	75.0	57.6	45.6	46.0
Immoral.....	18.7	31.7	45.8	47.0
Otherwise delinquent or of poor character.....	6.3	10.7	8.6	7.0

^a The histories of 495 mothers were sufficiently complete to justify their classification according to mental condition.

^b Including Boston children under care of State agencies. The total under care was 2,863, but 685 of these were under care of agencies not giving social information.

One-fourth of all the mothers of infants born out of wedlock during one year were known to have been previously immoral, otherwise

delinquent, or of poor character. Considering only those for whom there were social records, more than two-fifths came under this classification.

Repeated violations of the moral code, serious alcoholism, dishonesty, or general worthlessness were reported in the histories of the mothers of 54 per cent of the children under care of Boston agencies, and also for the mothers of the same per cent of the children under care of the division of State minor wards.

The histories of 732 children under care of Boston agencies contained more or less social information about the father. Other immorality besides that connected with the present case was reported in regard to the fathers of 43 per cent of these children. The fathers of 25 per cent were said to be alcoholic. In many instances the father was both alcoholic and immoral. In all, the fathers of 66 per cent of the 732 children were alcoholic, immoral, otherwise delinquent, or of poor character. This high percentage may be partly accounted for by the probability that the histories of fathers who had been repeatedly before the courts or who had other records of delinquency would be known to social agencies to a greater extent than the histories of other fathers.

Considering together the character of the mother, father, and maternal grandparents for the group of 2,178 children under care of Boston agencies, only 38 per cent of the children had parents and maternal grandparents who were of good character, so far as known. The mothers, fathers, or maternal grandparents of 62 per cent were alcoholic, immoral, otherwise delinquent, or of poor character.

Infant welfare.

Infant mortality.—The most significant facts revealed by this study are those relating to the high mortality of infants born out of wedlock. No other data give so definite an index of the hardships and social injustice involved in illegitimate birth. Not only does a high infant mortality rate mean a waste of infant life, but the conditions which result in high mortality also produce lowered vitality and impaired physique among the children who survive.

Infants born out of wedlock in Boston died at a rate three times as high as the rate for infants born in wedlock. The infant mortality rate in 1914, based on the number of births and of infant deaths in that year, was 95 for children born in wedlock and 281 for infants born out of wedlock. In other words, the figures indicate that less than one-tenth of the infants born in wedlock died before they had reached 1 year of age, while between one-fourth and one-third of the infants of illegitimate birth failed to survive the first year of life.

The general infant mortality rate in Boston for the year 1914 was 103.1. The exclusion of births and deaths of infants born out of wed-

lock reduces the infant mortality rate to 95, a reduction of 8 per cent. The importance of efforts to lower the mortality rate among infants born out of wedlock as a part of the general movement for the reduction of infant mortality is, therefore, evident.

The findings as to age at death indicated that the early separation of the mother and child was a very important factor in the high mortality among infants born out of wedlock. The number of deaths under 1 month per 1,000 illegitimate births was twice as high as in the case of legitimate births. At 1 month the number of deaths per 1,000 illegitimate births was nearly eight times as high, and at 2 months nearly six times as high. Infant mortality statistics in England and Wales show somewhat the same tendency as that shown by the figures for Boston in regard to the relative difference between the number of infant deaths at various ages per 1,000 births among infants of illegitimate birth and among infants born in wedlock. In both cases the difference was less for those under 1 month of age at death than for those dying in the months immediately following. In Boston the difference was greatest at 1 month, while in England and Wales the peak came at 2 months.

According to cause of death, the relative difference between the mortality rate among infants born out of wedlock and among infants of legitimate birth was greatest for the gastric and intestinal diseases, the rate among the former class being nearly six times that among children born in wedlock. The diseases in this group are caused largely by improper feeding. The rate for diseases of early infancy among children born out of wedlock was nearly three times as high as the corresponding rate for children of legitimate birth.

Another and, for some reasons, a more satisfactory method of estimating infant mortality is the following through the first year of life of infants born during a given year, and determining how many died before reaching 1 year of age. On this basis the mortality among the infants born out of wedlock in Boston in 1914 was 251.5 deaths per 1,000 births. This rate is based only on registered deaths, and is an understatement because many of the infants were lost sight of before they reached the age of 1 year. But the rate secured by this method was nearly two and a half times as great as the general infant mortality rate (103.1) for the city in the same year.

Of the 847 infants born out of wedlock in Boston during the year 209 were born at one institution which cares for large numbers of infants, many of whom are separated from their mothers at an early age. Of these 209 infants 74 died at the same institution before they had reached 1 year of age, and 14 were known to have died elsewhere, death certificates having been found. Of the 638 infants

of illegitimate birth born elsewhere in the city during the year 125 were known to have died during the first year of life. It would, therefore, appear that 421 out of every 1,000 children born out of wedlock at the institution die before they reach 1 year of age, 354 of them dying in the same institution in which they were born, while the infant mortality among infants born out of wedlock elsewhere than at this institution is 196. Analyzing the figures according to cause of death, it would appear that of every 1,000 infants born out of wedlock at the institution 196 die from gastric and intestinal causes during their first year of life, as compared with a rate of 42 among infants of illegitimate birth born elsewhere in Boston; and that 120 of every 1,000 infants born at the institution die from diseases of early infancy, as compared with 85 of every 1,000 born elsewhere.

Conditions surrounding birth.—More than three-fourths of the 847 infants born out of wedlock in Boston during the year were born in hospitals, maternity homes, or the public infirmary, although less than one-third of all the births in the city during the year occurred in hospitals or other institutions. Of the infants born out of wedlock, 49 per cent were born in hospitals, 25 per cent in maternity homes, 3 per cent in the public infirmary, and 23 per cent in private homes. Hospitals, as a rule, gave care for only a short period following birth, while the maternity homes and the public infirmary often gave care extending over several months before and after the child's birth. Of mothers cared for at the maternity homes, the proportion whose residence was Boston was small. Almost three-fifths of all the mothers out of wedlock were resident in Boston, while less than a third of the mothers cared for in maternity homes were Boston residents. Slightly more than half the mothers confined in hospitals resided in the city.

One-third of the mothers of children born out of wedlock in Boston during the year had received care from child-caring agencies, maternity homes, the public infirmary, or agencies of other types previous to confinement. The child-caring agencies and agencies of other types secured medical care and advice for the mother, provided her with a place where she could live during pregnancy, and arranged for her care during confinement. In two-thirds of the maternity-home cases the mother had been cared for in the home a month or more previous to confinement. These institutions also made a practice of keeping mother and child together for a considerable period following the child's birth. In three-fourths of the maternity-home cases the mother and child remained in the home a month or longer; in a third of the cases they remained two months or longer.

The great advantage of prolonged care, which makes it possible for the mother to keep the child with her under proper conditions

and to breast-feed the baby, is indicated by the findings.⁴ Twenty-seven per cent of the 847 infants born out of wedlock in Boston were known to have died during the first year of life.⁵ Of the 241 infants born in maternity homes or in the public infirmary, 40, or 17 per cent, were known to have died; of the 193 born in private homes, 46, or 24 per cent; of the 201 born in hospitals other than the large institution previously mentioned, 50, or 25 per cent; of the 209 born in that institution, 94, or 45 per cent, were known to have died during the first year of life.

The care of the infant.—Prolonged care by the agencies studied was known to have been given 62 per cent of the children born out of wedlock during the year. Child-caring or child-protective agencies cared for 35 per cent of the children born during the year; maternity homes and the public infirmary cared for 31 per cent, 9 per cent also being under the care of child-caring or child-protective agencies during the year. Of the children not known to have died during the first year of life, 20 per cent were under prolonged care their entire first year.

Of primary importance in the welfare of an infant is the care given him by his own mother, and one of the most serious handicaps to which children born out of wedlock are frequently subjected is the deprivation of a mother's care. Of the infants surviving, so far as known, at the age of 1 month, at least 20 per cent had already been separated from their mothers; and at the age of 3 months, at least 27 per cent had been separated. These are understatements, for there were many cases for which no information was available. Evidence of the hazard to the child's life involved in early separation from the mother is found in information concerning the care of infants of various ages. Of the children definitely known to be surviving at 3 months whose presence with or separation from the mother was reported, 47 per cent were being cared for away from their mothers, while 80 per cent of the infants who had died after reaching the age of 2 weeks but before the age of 3 months, and whose whereabouts previous to death was known, had been separated from their mothers.

The possibilities of parental care.

The physical and mental condition and character of the parents.—Conditions such as extreme youth, low mentality, and bad character, making it difficult to secure for the child care by his own parents, have already been discussed under the heading "The background of

⁴ See pp. 133-135.

⁵ Of the 847 born, 213 died during the first year of life and death certificates were found, and 17 others were reported by agencies to have died, but death certificates were not found because of change of name or because the death had occurred outside the area covered by the study.

illegitimacy." Thirteen per cent of the mothers of infants born out of wedlock in Boston during the year were under the age of 18; the mothers of 11 per cent of the children under care of Boston agencies whose histories gave information concerning age of mother were under the age of 18 when their children were born. The assumption of the responsibility for the physical care of the child is often beyond the powers of these child mothers, even though provision is made for the support of the mother and child. In a considerable number of cases the father was a mere boy, incapable of contributing materially to the child's support.

Almost one-fourth of the mothers of infants born out of wedlock whose histories were deemed sufficiently complete to warrant classification as to physical condition were known to be physically defective or diseased or in poor physical condition; the mothers of almost the same proportion of children under the care of Boston agencies were known to be in poor condition. One-eighth of the mothers of infants born out of wedlock during the year were known to be below normal mentally; the mothers of more than one-sixth of the children under care of Boston agencies and the mothers of about the same proportion of children under the care of the division of State minor wards were reported mentally below normal. One-fourth of the mothers of infants born out of wedlock during the year and the mothers of more than half the children under care of Boston agencies and also of those under care of the division of State minor wards were known to be immoral, otherwise delinquent, or of poor character. Information as to the character of the father was obtained for about one-fourth of the children under the care of Boston agencies. The fathers of 66 per cent of these children were alcoholic, immoral, otherwise delinquent, or of poor character. Conditions such as these usually signify impaired earning capacity, lack of a feeling of responsibility for the welfare of the child, and general unfitness to give the child a proper home or provide adequate support.

Civil condition of mother and father.—Ninety-three per cent of the mothers of infants born out of wedlock during the year for whom this information was obtained were single; 2 per cent were married; and 5 per cent were widowed, divorced, separated, deserting, or deserted. The mothers of 85 per cent of the children of illegitimate birth under care of Boston agencies whose histories gave civil condition were single; of 2 per cent, married; of 4 per cent, widowed; and of 9 per cent, divorced, separated, deserting, or deserted. It is evident that the problem of illegitimate maternity is by no means limited to unmarried women, and that a considerable number of mothers out of wedlock also presumably have children of legitimate birth to care for. The mothers of 251 children under care of Boston agencies whose histories gave social information—12 per cent—were illegally

married to the fathers or had been living with the fathers as married prior to the time when the children were born.

Civil condition was reported for only 237 of the fathers of infants born during the year. Twenty-one per cent of these fathers, or 6 per cent of the total 840, were married; 9 per cent of those reported, or 3 per cent of the total, were widowed, divorced, separated, deserting, or deserted. The fathers of about one-third of the children under care of Boston agencies whose histories gave civil condition were presumably responsible for the support of a family, in addition to their obligations for the maintenance of their children of illegitimate birth. The significance of the proportion of cases in which the father probably had family responsibilities is manifest in connection with his ability to contribute to the support of his child born out of wedlock.

Nine per cent of the mothers of infants born out of wedlock during the year were known to have married within a year after the child's birth. Of the 73 known to have married, 31 married the fathers of the children, 24 married other men, and in 18 cases it was not reported whether or not the man was the father of the child.

Economic status of mother and father.—The question of the occupation and earning capacity of the mother is of especial importance in connection with her ability to care for her child. In a large proportion of cases the mother must depend upon her own resources or upon the assistance of social agencies in supporting herself and in caring for the child, and the number of occupations in which she can keep the child with her at her place of employment is limited. Her previous industrial experience is an important factor in planning for her future. The study revealed that a large proportion of mothers of infants born out of wedlock during the year were gainfully employed before their children were born, 86 per cent of those whose occupations were reported being so employed. Considering only the mothers who were 16 to 20 years of age at the time their children were born, 83 per cent were gainfully employed, as compared with 60 per cent of all women in Boston of the same age. Domestic service was the predominant occupation, 47 per cent of the mothers whose occupations were reported having been engaged in domestic or personal service, and 36 per cent of all reported having been employed at housework in private families. Considering only the mothers who were gainfully employed, 55 per cent were engaged in domestic and personal service, though only 25 per cent of all gainfully employed women in Boston in 1910 were in this occupational group. The percentage employed in factories was also considerably higher among the mothers than among all gainfully employed women in Boston—27 per cent as compared with 16 per cent. The percentage of mothers who were classified as clerks and kindred

workers was lower than the percentage of all gainfully employed women so classified—11 per cent as compared with 26 per cent.

At the time of application for the care of the children the mothers of 78 per cent of the children under care of Boston agencies whose histories gave information in regard to occupation were gainfully employed. Of the children whose mothers were gainfully employed the mothers of 59 per cent were engaged in domestic or personal service. In 38 per cent of the cases in which the mother was gainfully employed, she was employed at housework.

For 311 of the 840 fathers of infants born during the year of the study, information in regard to occupation was obtained. Twelve per cent of these fathers were engaged in an independent business or profession; 36 per cent were clerks or kindred workers, or skilled workers in various industries; 46 per cent were semiskilled workers, laborers, or servants; 3 per cent were soldiers, sailors, or marines; 3 per cent were not gainfully employed. The occupations of the fathers of 839 children under care of Boston agencies were reported. The distribution was very similar to that found among the fathers of infants born during the year. The information indicates that the father was a man of small income in the majority of cases.

Contributions of the father to the support of the child.—The obligation of the father to give at least a measure of support to his child born out of wedlock has been recognized by the laws of most of the United States. However, the period over which support is required and the maximum amounts frequently specified have in many cases been entirely inadequate. Even though the intent of the law is to require fairly adequate provision, the difficulties of enforcement are very great. The reluctance of the mother to reveal the name of the father and to testify in open court, the absconding of the father to another State, the difficulty in securing evidence and in establishing the facts, compromises out of court for inadequate sums—all these factors have made extremely difficult the establishing of paternity and the enforcement of support. In an effort to provide a more satisfactory means of determining paternity and to establish a higher standard of support Massachusetts enacted a law which went into effect in July, 1913, and which is commonly called the "illegitimate-children act." The provisions of this law are analyzed in Section I, chapter 3 of this report. The father is made liable for reasonable contributions to the support of the child during minority and to this end is made subject to the procedure already established for the support of children born in wedlock.

As a part of this study an analysis was made of the administration of the law in the Boston courts during 1914 and 1915. The law had been in operation for a comparatively short period, and many defects of administration have undoubtedly been remedied since the time

covered by the study. In 1914, 256 cases were initiated in Boston under the act; this was less than one-third of the number of children born out of wedlock in Boston during the year. The cases were followed to the end of 1915. By that time less than half the cases initiated in 1914 had actually resulted in an arrangement for the support of the child, for confinement expenses, or for both, which could legally hold the man to his obligation; in a few other cases support was secured as an indirect result of court action. Altogether, only 52 per cent of the cases initiated resulted in provision for the child; in but 7 per cent of the cases was the defendant dismissed as not guilty. The money collected did not as a rule come up to the standard for dependent children who are wards of the State. The marriage of the parents or the death of the child accounted for only a few of the small amounts.

Information obtained through the secretary of the Massachusetts Commission on Probation and from the probation department of the central municipal court indicated that the administration of the act in 1919 differed little from that in the period covered by the Children's Bureau study. Fewer cases came before the courts in 1919 than in 1914—due, in part, it may be assumed, to war conditions. An analysis of dispositions of cases in the largest court showed little variation from year to year in the proportion of cases resulting in an arrangement ordered or sanctioned by the court for the support of the child or for confinement expenses. Probation was more frequently used in the latter period than in the former, and marriages were proportionately less frequent.

Cases involving 99 of the 847 infants born out of wedlock in Boston were initiated in the Boston courts before the end of the first year of life. Agency records gave information in regard to 9 cases in which court action for support had been brought in other places. Hence, for 108 infants—13 per cent—court action was known to have been initiated during the first year of the child's life. As a result of court action, some provision was arranged before the end of the child's first year of life for 60 of the 108 infants—56 per cent. These 60 children comprised only 7 per cent of all the infants born during the year. The father of 1 of these 60 children contributed nothing, the child having been adopted by someone else. The fathers of 59 children not involved in court cases contributed something to the support of the mother or the child during the child's first year of life. Considering together the cases in which contributions were made by the father as a result of court action and the cases in which voluntary contributions were made without court action, the fathers of 118 children—one-seventh of those born during the year—were known to have given more or less financial assistance, though in many cases the amounts were very small.

Undoubtedly the fathers of some of the infants born during the year who did not come to the attention of social agencies contributed to their support without court action. It is impossible to say whether the number of fathers so contributing was large or small.

The fathers of 674 children under care of Boston agencies—not quite one-third of the 2,178 whose histories gave social information—were known to have aided in the support of the children or to have given the mother financial assistance. Often the amount of help was so small as to be practically negligible. In many instances in which the father aided in supporting the child the mother and father had been illegally living as married for a considerable period of time. The fathers of 241 children—11 per cent of the 2,178 for whom social information was obtained—had been involved in court cases for support. It must be borne in mind that the present law did not go into effect until the year before the period covered by the study.

Mother's parental home and mode of living.—The character of the mother's parental home is of significance in a consideration of the possibility of the mother's caring for the child. If the parents are able and willing to take the mother and child into their own home, or to give the mother financial assistance outside the home, the problem of caring for the child is very much simplified.

One or both parents of almost one-third of the 840 mothers of infants born out of wedlock during the year were dead, not living in the United States, or were divorced or separated. Since this information was known only for mothers who had come to the attention of social agencies, this proportion is an understatement. Eight of the 840 mothers were themselves known to be of illegitimate birth. One or both parents of one-eighth of the mothers were reported to be alcoholic, immoral, or otherwise of poor character.

The mode of living previous to the birth of the child was known for 533 of the 840 mothers. Of these mothers, 36 per cent were living in their parental homes, 5 per cent in homes of their own, 9 per cent with relatives or friends, 4 per cent were boarding, and 46 per cent were living in their places of employment. Only 81 per cent of the mothers under 18 years of age were living in homes from which they might expect assistance before the birth of the children or help in caring for their babies. Of the mothers under the age of 18 whose mode of living was reported, 16 per cent were living in their places of employment.

The mothers of 15 per cent of the 2,178 children under care of Boston agencies whose histories gave social information had no parental homes, or none in this country, to which they might look for help. The mothers of 16 per cent lacked normal homes because

of the death of one parent or because the parents were divorced or separated, deserting, or deserted. One or both maternal grandparents of 10 per cent of the children were of poor character, were mentally below normal, or were entirely or partially dependent upon charitable aid. Hence, the mothers of 41 per cent of the 2,178 children under care of Boston agencies did not have normal parental homes, or the character of the grandparents made it impossible for them to provide proper homes for the mothers and children.

Mother's other children.—There are very great difficulties in the way of the mother who attempts to provide for a second child born out of wedlock. If she must depend upon her own resources, it is almost impossible for her to keep more than one child with her. Even though one of the children does not live, or is provided for apart from the mother, it is more difficult for her to secure the assistance needed if she is known to be a "repeater," since some agencies make it a rule to refuse care in such cases.

Seventy-two mothers of infants born out of wedlock during the year—10 per cent of the 730 for whom this information was available, or 9 per cent of all the mothers—were known to have had previous illegitimate births. Sixteen mothers—2 per cent of the total—were known to have become illegitimately pregnant during the first year of life of the child included in the study.

The mothers of 19 per cent of the 2,863 children under care of Boston agencies were known to have had one or more illegitimate births before the children included in the study were born. The mothers of 13 per cent had had such births subsequent to the birth of the child of the study. In all, eliminating duplications, the mothers of more than one-fourth of the children were known to have had other children born out of wedlock.

Child dependency.

Illegitimacy is closely associated with child dependency. Factors, such as poor health, low mentality, bad character, and low economic status on the part of the mother, father, or grandparents, often make it impossible for the child to be provided for without the assistance of social agencies. The failure of the father, in so large a proportion of cases, to contribute amounts at all adequate for the child's support results in placing upon the mother a double burden of care and support. An indication of the extent to which agency care must be provided is furnished by the figures relating to infants born out of wedlock during the year; more than three-fifths of these infants received prolonged care during the first year of life from the agencies studied; more than one-third were under the care of child-caring agencies or of the child-protective agency.

As a part of this inquiry the records of municipal and private agencies in the city of Boston whose work included the care of children born out of wedlock, and of certain State agencies so far as they dealt with Boston children, were studied. The number of agencies included was 37. A separate study was made of the children under care of the division of State minor wards of the State board of charity. Reference has already been made to some of the findings of these studies. The main types of agencies represented were: Child-caring agencies, public and private; a child-protective agency; maternity homes; hospitals; institutions for the care of delinquent children; institutions for the care of mental defectives. Some of the children were given temporary care only—intended to meet emergent situations or to give special types of treatment; a large proportion received prolonged care. Dependent, neglected, delinquent, and defective children were represented, though the proportion of delinquent children was small. All the children, however, were receiving care from social agencies, and, therefore, may be termed “dependent” in the broad sense of the term.

Extent of the problem of illegitimacy in the work of the agencies studied.—In 1914 there were 2,863 children born out of wedlock who were under care of the Boston agencies included in the study and of certain State agencies so far as their work concerned Boston children. Four-fifths of these children had received more or less prolonged treatment from the agencies, their care having been definitely assumed. Cases concerning children born out of wedlock constituted 11 per cent of those dealt with by the public child-caring agency of the city, 17 per cent of the cases dealt with by the private child-caring agencies, and 9 per cent of the cases handled by the child-protective agency. The average for these child-caring and child-protective agencies was 13 per cent. The approximate amount spent during the year for the care of children born out of wedlock by the Boston child-caring and child-protective agencies and for the Boston children by the State child-caring agency was \$124,000. This estimate is presumably an understatement of the actual expenditures of these agencies chargeable to illegitimacy, since it is probable that children born out of wedlock presented more difficult problems and required more prolonged and expensive care than other children.

The total number of children receiving prolonged or temporary care from the division of State minor wards during the year was 7,526. Of these children, 1,721, or 23 per cent, were of illegitimate birth. Twenty-two per cent of the children receiving prolonged care were born out of wedlock.

The child's age at time of application.—More than one-fourth of the children under care of Boston agencies had been under care from birth; almost three-fifths had come under care of the agencies

studied before they had completed their first year of life. Of the children coming under the care of child-caring and child-protective agencies during the year, more than half were under 1 year of age at the time of application, and more than three-fourths were under the age of 4 years.

The children under the care of the division of State minor wards had also come under care at an early age. Almost half the children born out of wedlock were under 1 year of age at the time they came to the attention of the division; three-fifths were under 2 years of age; more than four-fifths were less than 6 years old.

The comparison of 1,717 children of legitimate birth and 606 children of illegitimate birth under care of the division of State minor wards whose case records were numbered from 1 to 2000 showed that almost half the children born out of wedlock—46 per cent—were less than 1 year of age when application for their care was made to the division, while of the children born in wedlock only 9 per cent were less than 1 year old. A total of 60 per cent of the children born out of wedlock were under 2 years of age, as against 15 per cent of the children born in wedlock. Eighty per cent of the children of illegitimate birth were under the age of 6 years, while only 46 per cent of the children of legitimate birth were under this age. It is evident that children born out of wedlock came under the care of the State at an earlier age than children of legitimate birth.

Previous agency care.—Before coming to the attention of agencies giving care extending into the year studied, many of the children born out of wedlock had been under the care of social agencies for longer or shorter periods. Of the children under the care of Boston agencies giving information in regard to previous history—excluding the children under their care from birth—more than one-third had previously received prolonged care from agencies; many had been cared for by more than one agency. The majority of the children receiving care previously had been under the supervision of other than child-caring agencies. These other agencies included principally maternity homes, public infirmaries, and the child-protective agency. However, one-eighth of the children whose previous histories were known had been wards of child-caring agencies before applications were made to the agencies giving care during the year covered by the study. Almost one-fourth of the children 6 years of age and over at the time of application had been wards of child-caring agencies before coming to the attention of the agencies under whose protection they were at the time of the study.

More than half the children of illegitimate birth under care of the division of State minor wards were under the supervision of agencies at the time of application or commitment. Of the children receiving

prolonged care from the division during the year, almost two-fifths had received prolonged care from agencies at some time previous to their coming under care of the division; in many instances care had been given by more than one agency. One-eighth of the children had been under the supervision of child-caring agencies before coming under care of the division of State minor wards.

Source of, and reason for, application or commitment.—The applications or commitments to Boston agencies for 27 per cent of the children under care came from courts or other public agencies, and for 28 per cent from private agencies. The reasons for application or commitment in the cases of children under care of Boston agencies were analyzed only for children first coming under the care of child-caring agencies or of the child-protective agency. Twenty-seven per cent of the applications or commitments were made because the mother was unfit to care for the child or was living in a home in which there existed conditions detrimental to the child's welfare. The largest single group of applications—37 per cent of the total reported—came because of the mother's inability to care for the child. Sixteen per cent of the children came under care because their board had not been paid, they had been definitely abandoned at board, or otherwise deserted.

Almost one-third—32 per cent—of the children of illegitimate birth under the care of the division of State minor wards were committed by courts to the care of the State. Overseers of the poor and other public agencies committed or made application for the care of 27 per cent. Applications for the care of 8 per cent of the children came from private agencies. The mothers applied directly for the care of 21 per cent of the children, and the care of 9 per cent more was applied for by relatives or friends. In the remaining cases the applications came from other sources. The mother's inability to provide for the child was the reason for application for the care of two-fifths of the children; one-fifth came under care because they had been abandoned or deserted. The unfitness of the mother to care for the child, or detrimental conditions in the mother's home, were the reasons given in about one-fourth of the cases.

The comparative study of children born in wedlock and children born out of wedlock who were under care of the division of State minor wards—based on the records of 1,717 children of legitimate birth and 606 of illegitimate birth—showed that less than two-fifths of the children of illegitimate birth were received on court commitments, while almost three-fourths of the children of legitimate birth were committed by courts. In the case of children born out of wedlock the problem appears to be mainly one of dependency, while neglect brings under care the majority of the children of legitimate birth who must depend upon the public for support.

Care given by the agencies studied.—During the year 2,319 children born out of wedlock received prolonged care from Boston agencies. By the end of the year or the close of care, 56 per cent had received care for one year or more. Of the children 6 years of age and over, 49 per cent had been under care for at least six years. The average time under care for the children 1 year of age and over was three years and nine months. Since more than three-fourths of these children remained under care at the end of the year, the time reported under care does not represent the total amount of time over which agency care was likely to be required.

At the end of the year studied or previous to the close of care, 81 per cent of the children receiving prolonged care from Boston agencies were living in family homes, 17 per cent were in institutions, and the place of residence of 2 per cent was not reported. The majority of the children in institutions were in hospitals, infirmaries, or maternity homes.

Of the children under care of child-caring or child-protective agencies, nine-tenths were living in family homes and only one-tenth were cared for in institutions. Two-thirds of the children under care of these agencies were living in boarding, free, or wage homes. Child-caring and child-protective agencies had placed nearly seven times as many children in boarding, free, or wage homes as in institutions. Only 3 per cent of the children had been placed in homes into which they had been adopted or in which they had been placed on trial for adoption. Public child-caring agencies had been able in 1 per cent of their cases to keep mother and child together. Private child-caring agencies had been able to avoid separation in 14 per cent of their cases. It must be borne in mind in this connection that the cases presenting the least possibility of assumption of care by the mother are usually referred to the public agencies.

By the end of the year or the close of care, seven-eighths of the 1,393 children born out of wedlock receiving prolonged care from the division of State minor wards had been under care one year or longer. Of the children 6 years of age and over, more than two-thirds had been under the care of the State for at least six years. Of the children 10 years of age and over, more than half had been under care at least 10 years. The average time under care for the children 1 year of age and over was six years. The figures do not represent the total length of time during which these children will be dependent upon the State, since almost seven-eighths remained under care at the close of the year.

Three per cent of the children receiving prolonged care from the division of State minor wards were with their mothers at the end of the year or the close of care. More than nine-tenths of the children receiving prolonged care—92 per cent—were living in family homes,

7 per cent were in institutions, and the place of residence of 1 per cent was not reported. More than nine-tenths of the children living in family homes were in boarding or free homes.

The comparison of children of legitimate and of illegitimate birth under care of the division of State minor wards showed that the average number of years under care was seven for children of legitimate birth, and eight for children born out of wedlock, though 57 per cent of the former were 14 years of age or over, while only 32 per cent of the latter had reached this age.

Juvenile delinquency.

The conditions frequently accompanying birth out of wedlock—defective heredity; lack of opportunity for normal, healthful living; deprivation of a mother's care and absence of a father's care and support; the social stigma; the mental conflicts caused by knowledge of birth out of wedlock and by the actual or imagined degradation of the parents—these conditions are not conducive to the development of right habits and a sane and normal outlook upon life. Rather may they be expected to lead to restlessness, morbidness, or even to marked delinquency and misconduct. This study has thrown some light upon the effect of bad heredity, unfortunate environment, or the lack of normal conditions of living and the absence of parental care and affection on character development. Some of the findings are here summarized.

Conduct of dependent children born out of wedlock.—During the year 1914 there were 656 children of illegitimate birth 7 years of age and over under care of Boston agencies, excluding 148 under care of agencies not reporting conduct. The conduct of one-fourth of these 656 children was poor; the conduct of more than one-third of the children 14 years of age and over was unsatisfactory. The high percentage among the older children was due partly to the fact that Boston children committed to State institutions for delinquents were included. Of the 29 boys and 59 girls 14 years of age and over whose behavior was reported as unsatisfactory, 3 boys and 37 girls were known to have been sex offenders; 13 boys and 6 girls had been guilty of stealing, stubbornness, or other forms of delinquency; and the remaining 13 boys and 16 girls had given serious trouble at home or at school.

One-fifth of the 849 children of illegitimate birth 7 years of age and over who were under care of the division of State minor wards presented serious problems of conduct. Of those 14 years of age and over more than one-fourth were unsatisfactory in conduct.

Among the children 7 years of age and over who were under care of the division of State minor wards and were included in the comparative study, there were 914 of legitimate birth who were not

feeble-minded, concerning whose conduct information was obtained, and 410 born out of wedlock. The conduct of 13 per cent of the former as against 18 per cent of the latter was reported as poor. Considering only the children 14 years of age and over, the conduct of 16 per cent of the children born in wedlock was unsatisfactory, while 28 per cent of the children born out of wedlock were delinquent or presented serious problems of conduct. Hence it is seen that the proportion of children of illegitimate birth under the care of the State who were delinquent or troublesome was considerably higher than of children of legitimate birth who were under care, though children born out of wedlock came under the care of the State at an earlier age than children born in wedlock, and a larger proportion of the former than of the latter were received because of the inability of the mother or other relatives to support the child, and a smaller proportion because of parental neglect, unfit homes, or delinquency. The figures suggest that children cared for during the first years of life in their own homes, even though the homes be of poor character, have an advantage over children cared for from early childhood in boarding or foster homes.

Children of illegitimate birth under the care of institutions for delinquents.—As a part of this inquiry a study was made of wards of State institutions for delinquents who had been born out of wedlock and who were under 21 years of age at the time the study was made. Two State training schools for boys and one for girls, together with their parole departments, were represented, as was also the reformatory for women.

The only figures secured which gave any reliable index of the proportion of wards of institutions for delinquents, who were of illegitimate birth, were those for girls committed to the institutions during the year 1914. In all, 184 girls under 21 years of age were committed, and of these, 17—9 per cent—were of illegitimate birth. This proportion was large in comparison with the proportion of illegitimate births in the State; it was considerably smaller than the proportion—almost one-fourth—of children under care of the division of State minor wards during the year who were born out of wedlock. The conditions accompanying illegitimate birth seem to be more closely associated with dependency and neglect than with delinquency.

The information in regard to age at commitment and time under care suggests that children born out of wedlock come earlier under care of correctional institutions, and remain longer, than do children of legitimate birth. Forty per cent of the children of illegitimate birth under care of the institutions and parole departments were under 14 years of age at the time of commitment; only 25 per cent

of the children of legitimate birth committed during the year were under the age of 14. Furthermore, an analysis of offenses indicated that larger percentages of boys and girls born out of wedlock were committed on charges of stubbornness and other undefined delinquencies than were all boys and girls committed during the year. The fact that children of illegitimate birth were committed at younger ages than children born in wedlock probably accounts for the difference in the proportions committed for the less serious offenses.

Somewhat more than one-fourth of the delinquent children born out of wedlock were living with their mothers at the time of commitment; nearly three-fourths were separated from them. Twenty-one per cent of the delinquent children of illegitimate birth were living in adoptive or foster homes, a surprisingly large proportion as compared with the 7 per cent of the children of illegitimate birth 6 years of age and over under the care of the division of State minor wards who were living in adoptive or foster homes at the time of application or commitment.

Almost half the homes from which the delinquent children born out of wedlock were committed were known to be bad. The mothers of almost two-thirds were known to be alcoholic, immoral, or of otherwise poor character. Many of the families had been dependent upon charitable aid for two or three generations. More than two-thirds of the children had been under the care of agencies or had been before the courts previous to the time of commitment. More than one-fifth of the children were very backward or below normal mentally, and one-fourth were in poor physical condition at the time of commitment.

Mental defect.

The heritage of children born out of wedlock.—It has already been shown that one-eighth of the mothers of infants born out of wedlock in Boston during the year were reported to be mentally below normal, and that the mothers of more than one-sixth of the children under care of Boston agencies whose histories gave social information, and about the same proportion of the mothers of children under care of the division of State minor wards, were not normal mentally. The mothers of 6 per cent of the children under care of Boston agencies, and of 7 per cent of those under care of the division of State minor wards had been diagnosed as feeble-minded.⁶ In the study of the seacoast rural section the proportion of feeble-mindedness among the mothers appeared to be considerably larger. Nineteen per cent of the children under care of Boston agencies were

⁶ See pp. 39, 45.

known to have a family history in which there was insanity, feeble-mindedness, or other subnormal or abnormal mental condition. In 9 per cent of all the cases there was a history of definite feeble-mindedness or insanity.

Feeble-minded mothers of children born out of wedlock.—A study of the records of the two State institutions for the feeble-minded revealed that one-eighth of the estimated number of girls and women in the institutions who had reached childbearing age at the time of the study had been illegitimately pregnant. More than one-fifth of the 383 girls and women of childbearing age awaiting admission to the institutions had been illegitimately pregnant, and more than one-third of those who had been mothers out of wedlock had been awaiting admission to the institutions for two years or longer. More than one-fourth of those in the institutions who had been mothers out of wedlock and almost half the mothers awaiting admission had had more than one illegitimate pregnancy.

Mentality of dependent and delinquent children of illegitimate birth.—Excluding children under care of agencies not reporting mental condition, the information in regard to the mental condition of the children under care of Boston agencies indicated that at least 17 per cent of those 7 years of age and over were not normal mentally or were very backward in school. Six per cent had been diagnosed feeble-minded; this was about six times the percentage found in studies of school children made by the United States Public Health Service.

Nineteen per cent of the children of illegitimate birth under care of the division of State minor wards, who were 7 years of age and over, were mentally below normal or were very backward in school; 10 per cent of all reported had been diagnosed feeble-minded. Of the children 7 years of age and over included in the comparative analysis, 10.9 per cent of those of legitimate birth and 11.1 per cent of those born out of wedlock were diagnosed feeble-minded. This finding would seem to controvert an opinion frequently expressed to the effect that dependent children born out of wedlock are more likely to have a sound heritage than are children of legitimate birth for whom public provision has been necessary.

Table III summarizes the data from the various parts of the study in regard to the prevalence of marked retardation, subnormality, or feeble-mindedness among dependent and delinquent children born out of wedlock.

TABLE III.—*Mental condition of dependent and delinquent children born out of wedlock, as shown by various parts of the inquiry.*

Mental condition.	Per cent distribution of children 7 years of age and over under care of—			
	Boston agencies reporting mental condition (646 children). ^a	Selected group of Boston agencies (305 children). ^b	Division of State minor wards (849 children).	State institutions for delinquents or parole departments (102 children).
Total.....	100.0	100.0	100.0	100.0
Norm. i. so far as known.....	83.2	89.2	81.4	78.4
Very backward in school.....	5.3	4.9	5.9	3.9
Probably subnormal or feeble-minded, but not diagnosed.....	2.6	2.3	1.8	4.9
Subnormal or abnormal (diagnosed).....	2.3	2.3	.8	5.9
Feeble-minded (diagnosed).....	6.3	1.3	9.8	5.9
Insane.....	.3	.....	.3	1.0

^a Including Boston children under care of State agencies.^b Five private child-caring agencies and the child-protective agency.

Children of illegitimate birth under care of State institutions for the feeble-minded or awaiting admission.—In Massachusetts in 1914 a total of 2,553 patients were cared for at the two State institutions for the feeble-minded. Of these, 100—4 per cent—were known to have been born out of wedlock, 73 of them being under 21 years of age.

In 1914 there were 467 applications for admission to the Wrentham State School for persons who could not be received during the year. Thirteen per cent of these applications were for persons of illegitimate birth. The proportion of those born out of wedlock was much smaller among those awaiting admission to the school for the feeble-minded at Waltham; this difference is partly accounted for by the fact that almost half those on the Wrentham waiting list were State wards. Seventy-two feeble-minded persons of illegitimate birth were awaiting admission to the two institutions in 1914, of whom 67 were under 21 years of age.

All but 24 of the 73 in the institutions and 10 of the 67 awaiting admission were known to have been under the care of agencies previous to admission or application. More than three-fifths of the total 140 children had been charges of public child-caring agencies before they were admitted to the schools for the feeble-minded or were placed on the waiting lists.

Half the children in the institutions or awaiting admission were reported as having been delinquent or of otherwise poor character. Four of the girls in the institutions and 2 of those on the waiting lists were themselves mothers of children out of wedlock.

Of the 67 children awaiting admission, 17 had been on the waiting lists for one year, 19 for two years, 11 for three years, and 3 for four

years. Three-fourths had been awaiting admission for one year or more. Thirty of the 67 children whose admission had not been secured were delinquent or of otherwise poor character.

The mothers of half the children in the institutions or awaiting admission were known to be immoral, alcoholic, or of otherwise poor character. The mothers of almost one-fourth were reported to be below normal mentally. In 6 of the 140 cases the mother had been diagnosed feeble-minded. The mothers of 43 of the 140 children had had other births out of wedlock.

The histories of many of the children born out of wedlock included in various parts of the study gave evidence of mental subnormality or feeble-mindedness, associated with inefficiency, low standards of living, dependency, and moral laxness, extending through several generations. The relationship between mental defect and such anti-social manifestations as illegitimate maternity or paternity is one which society can not afford to ignore.

The child's point of view.

One of the objects of this study has been to determine the significance to the individual child of birth out of wedlock. The findings have revealed something of the meaning of illegitimate birth in terms of the chance of survival, the absence of normal home life, dependency, defective mentality, and the conditions that handicap normal character development. There is, however, another phase—the psychological factor—which is of very great importance. It is practically impossible to obtain statistical data on this subject, but the stories of several children who were dependent or delinquent charges of society indicated the mental suffering occasioned by uncertainty in regard to the histories or whereabouts of their parents, or by the knowledge that they were of illegitimate birth.⁷

The psychological effect of such knowledge may be illustrated by the experience of a 16-year-old girl who for seven years had been under the care of the State. Previous to her commitment she lived with her mother and stepfather, who treated her cruelly and wished to be rid of her. While under the care of the State she did well in school and gave satisfaction in the home in which she was placed. However, at the age of 15 she began to realize the facts about her birth and the character of her mother, brooding over these things and insisting that she had inherited her mother's tendencies. As a result of this mental attitude she did little things which she knew were not right. Fortunately the girl was wisely handled by the

⁷ For discussion of the relation between mental conflicts concerning parentage and misconduct, see *Mental Conflicts and Misconduct*, by William Healy. Boston, 1917. Pp. 47, 73, 213-217.

family with whom she was living, as well as by the State board, and at the last date of record was reported to be doing well.

The strength of filial affection and the unhappiness and restlessness caused by uncertainty concerning the whereabouts and circumstances of a mother are brought out in the case of a 20-year-old boy who had been under the care of the State from the age of 4 years. At that time his mother, who was boarding him in a private family, failed to meet the payments required, and the authorities committed him to the care of the division of State minor wards. The boy was bright and ambitious, though of a roving disposition and not altogether reliable. His mother visited him occasionally, but there were long periods during which he had no news of her whereabouts. At the age of 17 the boy, not having seen her for three years, wrote for information to the board, which was able to tell him little except the name of a town in a near-by State from which she had come originally. He went there to find traces of his relatives but he was unsuccessful. The next year he met his mother on the street of the town in which he was living. She looked dissipated and her breath smelled of liquor. She would give little information concerning herself and he lost track of her again. The boy continued to worry about her and again wrote to the board asking for assistance in locating her. In one of his letters he said: "I guess she is a pretty slim affair, but just the same she is my mother, and all that is done for her good I shall appreciate."

The instinctive yearning of every child for a mother and father and kin of his own is shown in the appeal of a 17-year-old boy who, after having been a ward of the State from infancy, had been sent at the age of 14 to an industrial school. He wrote to the State board:

I would like to know where I was born and how old I was when I was put on the State, and what for did my Father and Mother die or what was the matter. Have I any brothers or sisters in the world or any friends? I am 17 years old the 25th of this month, just the rite age to learn a trade. Please write and tell me how things are as soon as possible. Your friend.

Another instance is that of a 14-year-old boy who had been under the care of the State for 13 years and whose mother had not been heard from in all that time until the year covered by this study. Then, to his great surprise, he received a letter from her, and his delight was very touching. He wrote the following letter, never received by her, since it was returned from the address she had given:

I was very glad to hear from you. I was so surprised to hear from my mother I didn't know what to do. I didn't know I had a mother. Have I any father, sisters or brothers, aunts, uncles, cousins? I am well. I am almost 14. How old are you? I hope you are well the same as me. Write to me and tell me more about you—what you are doing. From your son.

CONCLUSIONS.

From this study, based upon public records and records of social agencies and institutions in Boston and the State of Massachusetts, certain general inferences may be drawn in regard to the status and care of children born out of wedlock in the United States. However, in connection with the findings of this report, consideration must be given to the fact that conditions differ in the several States, and that children born out of wedlock in one State may be more fortunate than those born in another State in respect to their status under the law and to available care. Massachusetts has taken a leading part in the development of provision for children who are in need of special care. During recent years Boston agencies have given special attention to the problems incident to the care of children born out of wedlock. The Massachusetts law providing for paternal support is comparatively advanced. On the other hand, it may be that the problem of illegitimacy is more serious in States like Massachusetts, where a large proportion of the population lives in cities, than in States having largely rural populations and less complicated social problems.

The conclusions of the study will be dealt with under four topics, concerned with (1) the meaning to the child of birth out of wedlock, (2) the burden upon the public for the care of these children, (3) the measures needed for their better protection, and (4) the lines along which social effort may be so directed as to effect a lessening of the problem.

The handicap of illegitimate birth.

The handicap of illegitimate birth is found chiefly in the defective heritage, the absence of normal home life and parental care, and the other detrimental conditions so frequently accompanying birth out of wedlock. The results of these grave disadvantages may be summarized as follows:

The hazard to life and health.—In Boston, during the year of the study, infants born out of wedlock died at a rate three times as high as the rate for infants of legitimate birth. That many of these deaths might have been prevented is indicated by the differences in the percentages of deaths according to place of birth and kind of care given. A high infant mortality rate implies not only a waste of infant life, but also a high rate of physical disabilities and weaknesses among those who survive.

The deprivation of a mother's care.—Separation from the mother at a very early age is a common experience among children born out of wedlock. Sometimes this separation is unavoidable, because of the mother's extreme youth, low mentality, or unfitness to care for her child. Often separation occurs when it might have been prevented, and when it is contrary to the best interests of the child and the mother. Of the infants born in Boston and surviving at 1 month, so far as known, at least 20 per cent had already been separated from their mothers; of those surviving at 3 months, so far as known, at least 27 per cent had been thus separated. Early separation from the mother is shown in this study to be an important contributing factor in the high infant mortality among children born out of wedlock. Those who survive infancy and who do not have the care and affection of their mothers are deprived of that for which they can never be fully compensated.

The deprivation of a father's care and support.—From the information obtained in this study, it would seem probable that a large proportion of children born out of wedlock do not receive any financial assistance from their fathers. In Boston, during the year of the study, the number of court cases initiated under the act relative to the support of children born out of wedlock was less than one-third the number of children born out of wedlock during the same year. Frequently the alleged father can not be located, or the mother's character makes it impossible to determine paternity with certainty. Support is sometimes secured without court action, through the efforts of social agencies or otherwise. However, the records of the agencies studied showed the small proportion of children dependent upon the public whose fathers had assumed any responsibility for their support. That so many children born out of wedlock are deprived of support from their fathers has serious implications in regard to chance for survival, health, and opportunities for normal childhood. Perhaps of almost as great concern is the fact that most children born out of wedlock must grow up without the advantage of a father's affection and guidance.

Hereditary handicaps.—In the heritage of children born out of wedlock are frequently found elements which may seriously affect the child's physical and mental make-up and character development. Almost one-fifth of the children of illegitimate birth under care of Boston agencies were known to have a heritage in which there was insanity, feeble-mindedness, or other subnormal or abnormal mental condition, or probable feeble-mindedness or subnormality. The mothers, fathers, or maternal grandparents of more than three-fifths of the children were known to be alcoholic, immoral, otherwise delinquent, or of poor character. Although it is impossible to determine the extent to which these defects of mentality or character were trans-

mitted, it is significant to note that one-sixth of the children under care of Boston agencies were very backward in school or were not normal mentally, and that 6 per cent were feeble-minded.

Environmental difficulties.—In addition to the deprivation of parental care and support, children born out of wedlock are frequently subjected to other detrimental conditions occasioned by the circumstances under which they live. Many of the children received under care by social agencies had previously lived in homes in which there were alcoholism, immorality, or other delinquencies. The breaking of associations and the readjustment to new conditions involved in frequent shiftings from home to home and from care of one type to care of another, which children of illegitimate birth must often undergo, are likely to deprive them of the advantage of close family and social relationships, and to have injurious effects upon their development.

Legal and social disabilities.—The child born out of wedlock is at a disadvantage in regard to legal rights and social status. In the United States he can usually inherit from the mother but not from the father; his right to care and support from the father is in most cases only partially fulfilled, even though paternity is established through court action. He is frequently excluded from the benefits of such social legislation as workmen's compensation acts and mothers' pensions. His birth record specifically or by implication reveals the fact of his illegitimate birth, and that record is frequently open to public inspection and may be used for malicious purposes; when he goes to school and a copy of his birth certificate is produced, the information concerning the circumstances of his birth is often needlessly revealed; when he goes to work he may be subjected to a similar experience. If he has been cared for apart from his parents from infancy he frequently must suffer from uncertainty as to their whereabouts and condition, and from a longing for knowledge of his heritage. He is sometimes subjected to scorn and undergoes humiliation because of his parentage.

Specific evidence in regard to the psychological effect upon a sensitive child of the knowledge of illegitimate birth is difficult to obtain. Several histories suggested the mental suffering often occasioned children born out of wedlock by the realization of the circumstances of their birth or the character of their parents.

The burden upon the public.

Birth out of wedlock usually implies social maladjustment. This study has shown the large number of cases in which the mothers, for various reasons, were unable to care for their children, and the small proportion of cases in which the fathers contributed to the children's

support. The obligations that are not fulfilled by the parents or other relatives must be assumed by the public.

Maternity and infancy care.—More than three-fourths of the infants born out of wedlock in Boston during the year covered by the study were born in hospitals, maternity homes, or the public infirmary. Although no data were compiled in regard to the proportion of cases in which the care was free or was paid for only in part, the indications were that in the majority of instances all or part of the expense was met by these organizations. The necessity for care and supervision of infants born out of wedlock is shown by the fact that more than three-fifths of those born in Boston during one year were known to have been under the prolonged care of agencies for all or part of the first year of life. Almost one-third of the infants born during the year had been cared for by maternity homes or the public infirmary—institutions keeping mother and child together for considerable periods. Child-caring agencies also provided care for a large number of babies.

Child dependency.—One of the most significant aspects of the problem of birth out of wedlock is the burden of child dependency that devolves upon the public. The proportion of children becoming dependent is indicated by the fact that more than one-third of the infants born during one year were given prolonged care by child-caring or child-protective agencies during their first year of life.

The care of children born out of wedlock comprised a considerable proportion of the work of social agencies in Boston and in the State. One-sixth of the cases under care of Boston private child-caring agencies during the year concerned children born out of wedlock, one-ninth of the cases under care of the public child-caring agency of the city, and almost one-fourth of those under care of the division of State minor wards. A comparison of dependent children of legitimate and of illegitimate birth under care of the State showed also that those born out of wedlock came under care earlier and remained public charges longer than those born in lawful marriage.

Antisocial attitude.—The conditions with which many children born out of wedlock must contend often give rise to restlessness, a morbid outlook upon life, or delinquent conduct. There is increasing recognition of the need for careful, expert study, with especial reference to their mental life, of individual children who are not normal in their social reactions. The Judge Baker Foundation is doing pioneer work along these lines, and some of the other agencies in Boston are also giving attention to this important phase of case work.

A comparison of dependent children of legitimate and of illegitimate birth under the care of the State, who were 7 years of age and over, showed that 18 per cent of those born out of wedlock were

delinquent or troublesome in their conduct, as against 13 per cent of the children born in wedlock. Among the children 14 years of age and over the corresponding percentages were 28 and 16.

The study of children under care of State institutions for delinquents indicated that the proportion of children born out of wedlock was high in comparison with the percentage of illegitimate births in the State. The figures were too small to warrant definite conclusions, but the findings suggest that children handicapped by birth out of wedlock, and therefore frequently deprived of care by their own parents, are turned over to the care of correctional institutions at an earlier age and for less serious offenses than children whose home ties are more nearly normal.

Measures for the protection of children born out of wedlock.

It has been shown that children born out of wedlock are in special need of protection. This need begins before the child is born, and frequently extends through childhood. The protection of life and health, beginning with the prevention of death in infancy; the safeguarding of the child's right to a mother's care; the securing of support from the father; the closest possible approximation to normal home care for children whose mothers are unable to provide for them; especially wise and understanding care for children handicapped by defective heredity; the equalization, so far as practicable, of the status of the child born out of wedlock with that of the child of legitimate birth; the recognition by the State of its fundamental responsibility for the welfare of these children, who are both the result and the innocent victims of social maladjustment—these are means by which the handicap which has so unjustly been the portion of the child born out of wedlock may be in part overcome.

The prevention of infant mortality.—The means for the reduction of the appalling infant mortality among children born out of wedlock, as revealed by this study, may be summarized as follows:

1. Provision for maternity care, including: Medical advice and supervision during pregnancy and protection of the mother from harmful employment, unfavorable living conditions, financial stress, and mental anguish; confinement in an adequately equipped hospital or maternity home, or, if in a private home, by a properly qualified attendant; and adequate care following confinement. The majority of the mothers of infants born in Boston were confined in hospitals or maternity homes, but the evidence indicated a need for increased care during pregnancy and for convalescent care. Almost half the mothers were confined in hospitals where they usually remained for only two or three weeks following the birth of the child. If they had no homes to which they could go, they were forced to face life with the burden of a child to care for and support before they had

fully recuperated. Under such conditions, the child could neither be properly nourished nor adequately cared for.

2. Care for the mother and infant which will enable the mother to keep her child with her during the nursing period at least. The great advantage to the child of maternal care under proper conditions, either in a maternity home or in a private family, has been shown by the findings of this study. Unless the mother is physically unable to nurse her child, or there is some reason for separation of very great importance, the child should be kept with his own mother during the first few months of life, at least. In order to accomplish this, the most wise and understanding assistance and supervision on the part of social agencies is often necessary.

3. At least as much medical oversight and health supervision for infants born out of wedlock as are deemed necessary for infants of legitimate birth. This can usually be accomplished through general health or infant-welfare agencies; two such private agencies in Boston cared for some of the infants born out of wedlock during the year. Nurses employed by the Boston department of health now visit all infants whose births are registered, if they can be found; during one period they visited only infants of legitimate birth, thus omitting those most in need of supervision.

4. Effective State supervision and licensing of private lying-in hospitals, boarding homes for infants, and agencies and institutions, including the supervision of infants in institutions and of those placed in family homes. In Massachusetts the State board of charity exercises supervision over lying-in hospitals and boarding homes for infants, and nurses employed by the State visit infants reported as cared for apart from their own relatives. The data presented in this report in regard to the mortality of infants born out of wedlock show how necessary it is for the State to gather information in regard to the mortality among infants cared for in the various institutions or under the supervision of agencies and, wherever unduly high rates are found, to take steps to ascertain the reasons and remove the causes.

Insuring a mother's care and a father's support.—Not only during infancy, but also in the years following, is the child entitled to the care of his own mother. In some instances this is impossible, but the child should not be separated from his mother except for urgent reasons. To keep mother and child together often involves prolonged financial and other assistance and careful supervision from social agencies. Several private agencies in Boston and the social service committee of the State board of charity were doing successful work along these lines. In many instances, however, children were being separated from their mothers without due consideration of other possibilities or of the injustice that was being done mother and

child. The interests of the child also demand that the father fulfill his obligations, at least to the extent of assisting in the child's support. There would seem to be need in Massachusetts for further development in the practical administration of the law for the determination of paternity and the enforcement of support by the father. Considerable difference of opinion exists among the agencies in regard to the extent to which this act should be uniformly applied and the type of cases which should be brought to court.

The standards adopted by a series of child-welfare conferences held under the auspices of the United States Children's Bureau include the following statement of principles relating to the responsibility of parents for the care of their children born out of wedlock:¹

Save for unusual reasons both parents should be held responsible for the child during his minority, and especially should the responsibility of the father be emphasized.

Care of the child by his mother is highly desirable, particularly during the nursing months.

No parent of a child born out of wedlock should be permitted to surrender the child outside his own family, save with the consent of a properly designated State department or a court of proper jurisdiction.

Each State should make suitable provision of a humane character for establishing paternity and guaranteeing to children born out of wedlock the rights naturally belonging to children born in wedlock. The fathers of such children should be under the same financial responsibilities and the same legal liabilities toward their children as other fathers. The administration of the courts with reference to such cases should be so regulated as not only to protect the legal rights of the mother and child but also to avoid unnecessary publicity and humiliation.

The care of children whose parents can not provide for them.—For many children born out of wedlock there is no possibility of permanent care by their own parents. For these children provision must be made which compensates as fully as possible for the deprivation of parental care. The essentials of provision for them are in general the same as for children of legitimate birth who must be cared for by agencies or institutions,² and may be summarized as follows:

1. Complete investigation of family history and circumstances.
2. The study of the child's physical and mental condition and characteristics.
3. The placing of the child in a properly qualified family home or, if his condition requires, in an institution suited to his needs.

¹ U. S. Children's Bureau: Minimum Standards for Child Welfare Adopted by the Washington and Regional Conferences on Child Welfare, 1919. Conference Series No. 2, Bureau Publication No. 62. Washington, 1919. P. 12.

² *Ibid.*, pp. 10-14.

4. Careful supervision of the child's health, education, and moral and spiritual development.
5. Complete records of the child's history, and of his development and progress while under care.
6. Vocational training for the child and helpful supervision while he is becoming self-supporting.
7. Particular consideration of the needs of children handicapped by defective heredity.
8. Cooperation between agencies and the fullest utilization of the resources of the community.

The agencies in Boston and in Massachusetts as a rule maintained high standards of work for children under care. Nevertheless, the grade of service was by no means uniform, and in some cases the welfare of the children under care was jeopardized by inadequacy of staff, insufficiency of resources, or lack of emphasis on certain essential features. Proper understanding of the child's needs and of the type of care required was often impossible because of absence of complete information concerning the mother and her family and the father; incompleteness of data in regard to physical condition, only acute illnesses or serious physical handicaps being entered; and failure to secure mental examinations for all children whose development was backward or who presented special problems. Visitors were often too overburdened to give the necessary supervision or to develop the helpful relationships which would be desirable. An unusual amount of cooperation was found among the Boston agencies, but the study indicated the need for still further unification of effort and for utilization of all the community resources available for child welfare. Of great benefit in connection with the handling of cases for the unmarried mother and her child might well be a central application bureau, to which all such cases could first be referred, and which would send applicants to agencies equipped to give the care required.

Safeguarding the rights of the child.—There is much difference of opinion in regard to the extent to which the law should raise the status of the child born out of wedlock to that of the child of legitimate birth in respect to inheritance and the right to the father's name. The matter of inheritance would not seem to be of great practical importance, owing to the relatively few cases in which the father is a man of means. Under many circumstances the bearing of the name of the father might be an actual disadvantage, especially if the mother had the custody of the child. On the other hand, it is argued that as a matter of justice the child of illegitimate birth should be given the same legal rights as though he had been born in wedlock. These questions are of much less practical significance than the in-

suring to the child of the care and support of his parents, which has already been discussed.

The matter of birth registration is of considerable importance in relation to the rights and welfare of the child born out of wedlock. Birth registration is necessary to the safeguarding of the health of infants and, in later life, to proof of age which is required for various purposes. In Massachusetts, birth registration is fairly complete. However, consideration should be given to the question of whether birth records ought to be safeguarded against improper use or unnecessary publicity. The present law of the State requires that public records shall be open to inspection on demand, and transcripts of birth certificates for various purposes reveal the birth status. In some communities in other States, either by law or by regulation, it is provided that only persons who can show due cause for interest in the information may be permitted access to birth records, and information in regard to parentage is omitted from transcripts for school and employment purposes.³

The State's responsibility.—In this country the guardianship or supervision of the State over children born out of wedlock is usually an incidental part of State provision for dependent children or of supervision over agencies and institutions. It is a question as to whether the United States should follow the example of those European countries in which all children born out of wedlock come under public guardianship by virtue of their status, or whether such special protection should be exercised only over those dependent upon social agencies.

The State of Massachusetts not only has some supervision over agencies and institutions caring for children and over infant boarding homes, but it also has under its direct care large numbers of children dependent upon the public, a considerable proportion of whom are of illegitimate birth. The supervisory powers of the State over private agencies and institutions are limited; more effective supervision would promote the welfare of all children under care of these organizations.

One of the weak points in the protection of children born out of wedlock, as well as of children of legitimate birth, is the absence of provision for the investigation of adoption cases before the courts; decrees of adoption are given without adequate consideration of the child's history and circumstances or of the character of the home into which he is to be placed. State officials and leaders in social work in Massachusetts have recognized the need for investigation of

³ For a discussion of the status of the child and birth registration, see U. S. Children's Bureau; *Illegitimacy as a Child-Welfare Problem*, Pt. 1, by Emma O. Lundberg and Katharine F. Lenroot. Dependent, Defective, and Delinquent Classes Series No. 9. Bureau Publication No. 66. Washington, 1920. Pp. 18-20.

every adoption case by a State department, which would act in an advisory capacity to the court.

In the standards adopted by the child-welfare conferences held under the auspices of the United States Children's Bureau the following principles of State responsibility are set forth:⁴

Upon the State devolves the ultimate responsibility for children who are in need of special care by reason of unfortunate home conditions, physical or mental handicap, or delinquency.

* * * * * *

A State board of charities or a similar supervisory body should be responsible for the regular inspection and licensing of every institution, agency, or association, incorporated or otherwise, which receives or cares for mothers with children or children who suffer from physical or mental handicaps, or who are delinquent, dependent, or without suitable parental care, and should have authority to revoke such licenses for cause and to prescribe forms of registration and report. This State agency should maintain such supervision and visitation of children in institutions and children placed in family homes as will insure their proper care, training, and protection. The incorporation of private organizations caring for children should be required, and should be subject to the approval of the State board of charities or similar body. State supervision should be conceived and exercised in harmony with democratic ideals which invite and encourage the service of efficient, altruistic forces of society in the common welfare.

General constructive measures.

A consideration of illegitimacy, even though it be from the point of view of the child, would not be complete without mention of measures that may result in a reduction of the problem. This study has dealt with the causative side of illegitimacy only as incidental to the discussion of the child's heritage and the possibilities of parental care. However, the information obtained has thrown some light upon the underlying social and economic conditions leading to illegitimacy.

In a large number of cases included in the study the mother came from a home in which there was poverty, dependency, alcoholism, immorality, absence of parental supervision, or even, in some instances, encouragement of misconduct. In other cases she had no home.

Absence of opportunity for wholesome companionship and recreation, either because of the situation in the home or conditions surrounding employment, and lack of supervision over commercialized recreation, are important factors in moral delinquency. Significant also in this connection are lack of moral training, ignorance of the dangers involved in disregard of the safeguards that have been built up through social conventions, and too great suggestibility or other weaknesses of character. One of the generally recognized factors

⁴U. S. Children's Bureau: Minimum Standards for Child Welfare Adopted by the Washington and Regional Conferences on Child Welfare, 1919. Conference Series No. 2. Bureau Publication No. 62. Washington, 1919. P. 10.

in delinquency of this kind is mental subnormality, which often results in lack of judgment and self-control.

There has been practically no study of the histories of fathers of children born out of wedlock. If the contributing factors in the moral delinquency of the fathers were analyzed, they would probably be found to parallel to some extent the conditions leading to immorality among girls—bad home conditions, unsupervised recreation, lack of moral training, character weakness, and mental subnormality.

Following is a brief statement of some of the measures which will tend toward the reduction of the illegitimate-birth rate through raising the level of family life, developing constructive forces in the community in place of those that are degrading, and affording special protection to individuals who stand in need of such help:

1. Improvement of industrial and economic conditions, resulting in better standards of living.
2. Raising the level of general education, and providing for all children opportunities for moral and spiritual development, including training in standards of morality and conduct.
3. Provision of opportunity for wholesome recreation, properly safeguarded, and supervision of commercialized amusements.
4. Removal of degrading community influences.
5. Adequate provision for the diagnosis and care of the mentally subnormal, including institutional provision for the feeble-minded and the defective delinquent in need of such care, and special training and supervision in the community.
6. Special protection for young people of both sexes who are surrounded by dangerous influences or who show tendencies toward wrongdoing; improved standards of case work with families and children, with special reference to the detection and removal of the influences that menace the welfare of children.
7. Assisting and safeguarding mothers of children born out of wedlock, to the end that they may gain a position of independence and self-respect in the community and that they may not repeat their unfortunate experiences.

SECTION I. THE PROBLEM IN BOSTON.

SECTION I. THE PROBLEM IN BOSTON.

INTRODUCTION.

Boston has long been a center of philanthropic effort for the New England States. Into the metropolis come the unfortunate in need of special help and care, and from it radiate social activities that reach more remote centers of populations as well as near-by towns and cities. As the capital of the State it is the administrative center for State institutions and agencies. Its many organizations for the betterment of social conditions and the amelioration of distress bear witness to the humanitarian ideals of its citizens, while the growing tendency toward coordination and cooperation in social work is gradually eliminating the duplication of effort sometimes occasioned by multiplicity of organizations. The well-developed State provision for dependent classes has allowed the private agencies to select the more promising cases and to specialize in intensive and experimental work.

As indications of the cooperation between agencies and the recognition of the importance of adequate understanding of the problems dealt with, may be mentioned the founding in Boston in 1876 of the first confidential exchange of social information in the United States;¹ the publication in 1880 of a charities directory; the agreement in 1912 between child-caring and child-protective agencies as to the territory which should be covered by the respective societies, the entire State being apportioned among the different agencies; the establishment in 1912 of the Boston Conference on Illegitimacy; the creation in 1915 of the League for Preventive Work, founded and maintained by Boston social agencies for the study and prevention of some of the causes of misery found in their work with families. More recent developments are the Committee of the Permanent Charity Fund, which began operations in 1917, whose functions are to administer an endowment fund in the assistance of such activities as seem to promise the greatest usefulness to the community and to utilize in the same way gifts which may be made to the fund; and the Bureau on Illegitimacy, founded early in 1919 for the study of that problem, the initial support being granted by the Permanent Charity Fund.

Much remains to be accomplished by some of the agencies in the direction of improved methods of case work and greater utilization

¹ Byington, Margaret F.: *The Confidential Exchange, a Form of Social Cooperation*. Charity Organization Department of the Russell Sage Foundation. New York City, 1912. P. 4.

of the available community resources, as well as in further coordination of effort between societies and in elimination of needless duplication and division of endeavor. Forces already set in motion will do much toward the accomplishment of these ends.

The development of municipal provision for dependent and delinquent children has already been discussed, as has the effect of the stringent settlement laws upon the division of responsibility between the State and the city.² In 1914, the year covered by this study, the public agencies and institutions of Boston of interest in connection with the inquiry were as follows:

The overseers of the poor.

Public outdoor relief and aid to mothers with dependent children.

The children's institutions department—under the management of the trustees for children.

Care of dependent children, for the most part having settlement in Boston; of neglected children; and of juvenile offenders committed to the Suffolk School for Boys or the Parental School. The latter institution was closed in 1914.

The Boston Infirmity Department—having charge of Long Island Hospital.

For the treatment of chronic cases or cases requiring care for long periods of time. Most of the children received are with their mothers or are wards of the trustees for children.

The Boston City Hospital.

For the treatment of acute diseases.

The Boston Juvenile Court (serving the central district) and courts in other parts of the city hearing children's cases.³

Neglected and delinquent children.

Besides these agencies, the department of the city registrar, who keeps the records of births and deaths, was of great importance to this study. The work of this department is described in chapter 1 of this section.

The children's institutions department cared for dependent and neglected children through the placing-out and office division. The children were placed in boarding or free homes under the supervision of visitors. Boys on parole from the Suffolk School for Boys were under the supervision of the placing-out division, as were those on

² See pp. 25-27, 29-31.

³ Since the year covered by this study the Judge Baker Foundation has been established in Boston. The principal purpose of this foundation, privately maintained, is to work in cooperation with the juvenile court, serving as a department for medico-psychological study of the children. Thorough physical and mental examinations are given, and information in regard to home conditions, family history, and personal history and characteristics is secured. The foundation also works in cooperation with other agencies in Boston and sometimes gives attention to children who have not come before the court.

parole from the Parental School previous to the close of that institution. A total of 1,537 children, including those in institutions, received prolonged care from the children's institutions department in 1914, and there were 284 applications for care which were not accepted.

There were 36 births in Long Island Hospital in 1914. Expectant mothers often entered the hospital some little time before confinement, and remained in the institution with their babies for several months. The type of care given was akin to that of a private maternity home, in that it included prolonged care before and after the birth of the child. Aside from settlement requirements, there were no limitations as to the women received. The Boston City Hospital reported 77 births during the year, though it had no regular maternity service until October, 1916. In September, 1917, medical-social work for the maternity patients in the hospital was organized.⁴ There is also a gynecological out-patient department, in connection with which medical-social work has been inaugurated since the year of this study.

Eleven private child-caring agencies in Boston during the year of this study dealt more or less with the problem of the child born out of wedlock. The Society for Helping Destitute Mothers and Infants⁵ placed mothers and babies together, working in close cooperation with hospitals, dispensaries, and other agencies. Its work was limited to Boston. The Children's Aid Society, Children's Friend Society, Children's Mission to Children, Church Home Society,⁶ and New England Home for Little Wanderers cared for dependent and neglected children, three of these organizations also providing for delinquent children committed to their care and for mothers who wished to keep their babies with them. Children were supervised in their own homes, placed in boarding or free homes, and given necessary medical care, either by the agencies themselves or by arrangements with hospitals and dispensaries. The Society for Helping Destitute Mothers and Infants and the Children's Aid Society had an arrangement by which the former worked with mothers over 20 and the latter with younger mothers. The Children's Aid Society, Children's Friend Society, Children's Mission to Children, and New England Home for Little Wanderers had an agreement among themselves and with other agencies in the State as to territory covered. All four worked in the city of Boston, but the outlying territory was divided into geographical districts, each district being assigned to one of the agencies entering into the arrangement. The New England Home for Little Wanderers covered also the other New England

⁴ Russell, Bess Lynde: "A year's study of the maternity ward at the Boston City Hospital." *Boston Medical and Surgical Journal*, Vol. CLXXX (May 1, 1919), pp. 487-495.

⁵ This society discontinued work in 1919.

⁶ Formerly the Church Home for Orphan and Destitute Children.

States. The Church Home Society worked throughout Massachusetts, caring for children of Protestant-Episcopal parentage.

The Children's Mission to Children maintained a special service for delicate children, boarding convalescent medical cases for the Massachusetts General Hospital. The New England Home for Little Wanderers opened in 1915 a new home with all modern facilities for medical care and mental diagnosis. To this institution are brought children difficult of diagnosis on the physical side or in need of special medical care and children presenting problems of mentality or behavior. Children remain in the institution as long as their condition requires. The Children's Aid Society in 1915 made special arrangements with the Boston Dispensary for medical care for their wards, placing emphasis upon the preventive side. This work is functioning through a department of the dispensary known as the preventive clinic. The Church Home Society has a similar arrangement with the Boston Dispensary.

The Massachusetts Babies Hospital (formerly the Massachusetts Infant Asylum) provided boarding and convalescent care for babies under 2 years of age. The babies were placed in country homes and visited at least once a week by trained nurses. Under an arrangement with the Boston Dispensary medical care was given by that institution. In 1916 the Massachusetts Babies Hospital was amalgamated with the Children's Aid Society.

The Catholic Charitable Bureau boarded dependent and neglected children and mothers and babies in family homes, and it also conducted a bureau of information for Catholic agencies. It received Catholic children who were residents of Massachusetts. The Home for Destitute Catholic Children cared for children 3 years of age and over, in the Boston diocese, maintaining a temporary receiving home and placing its wards in foster homes. St. Mary's Infant Asylum, maintained in connection with St. Mary's Lying-in Hospital, cared for children under 3 years of age, placing the majority of them in family homes, though caring for some in the institution. Its territory of work was also the Boston diocese.⁷

The court department of the Council of Jewish Women worked with Jewish neglected and delinquent children before the juvenile court and also handled informal cases that had not yet come to court. It gave supervision in the children's own homes and placed children in boarding or free homes.⁸

⁷ The State is divided into three Catholic dioceses—Boston, Springfield, and Fall River.

⁸ Subsequent to the year covered by this study, the Jewish Children's Bureau has been established in Boston for the care of dependent, neglected, and delinquent Jewish children. Its purpose is to care for all Jewish children in the metropolitan district who do not have adequate care in their own homes. Such children are usually placed in carefully selected Jewish homes. A clinic for physical examinations is maintained by the bureau, and mental examinations are given by the Judge Baker Foundation. The work is supported by the Federated Jewish Charities.

The Boston office of the Massachusetts Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Children was the central office of the society. It dealt mainly with cases in Boston and vicinity but also did special work throughout the State. A temporary home was maintained in connection with the Boston office, where children were kept pending the disposition of their cases in court. In the majority of the towns and cities of the State the society had a representative in court at the hearing of neglect cases, and in these localities neglected children not committed to the State were usually committed to the society on continuances, the society supervising them in their own homes, in homes in which they had been placed, or while under the care of private agencies. The cases handled by this agency were of two types—those brought into court and those given advice, supervision, and assistance, but not brought into court. The society has taken a leading part in general child-welfare movements.

Four maternity homes in Boston gave prenatal and postnatal care to girls and women illegitimately pregnant for the first time and not having venereal infection. Three of them received only mothers who promised to keep their children with them. The Florence Crittenton Home, the Salvation Army Home, and the Talitha Cumi Home received residents of New England. The House of Mercy worked throughout the Episcopal diocese of Massachusetts. The last institution sent girls and women under care to the New England Hospital for Women and Children for confinement, giving care before and after the child's birth. The three other homes had their own maternity wards. Women were often received several months before confinement, and frequently remained with their babies in the homes for four or five months, nursing them and receiving instruction in housework. Places were then found for the mothers where they might keep their children, and supervision and after care were given.

Two health agencies, the Instructive District Nursing Association and the Baby Hygiene Association,⁹ did home nursing. The first-named agency, as a part of its work, made a specialty of pregnancy clinics and prenatal and postnatal care, and the second agency of milk stations and well-baby clinics. These societies have done much to reduce infant mortality in Boston.

Four hospitals had large maternity wards and reported illegitimate births during the year studied. These were the Boston Lying-in Hospital, the Massachusetts Homeopathic Hospital, the New England Hospital for Women and Children, and St. Mary's Lying-in Hospital. The Massachusetts General Hospital cared for but few maternity cases. All these hospitals, with the exception of St. Mary's, had out-patient departments.

⁹ Formerly the Milk and Baby Hygiene Association.

The Boston Dispensary cooperated with other social agencies, giving physical examinations and medical care.

The Boston Legal Aid Society gave legal aid and advice gratuitously or for nominal fees. This agency was important in connection with the prosecution of cases under the law providing for the support of children of illegitimate birth.

The most important private family-care agencies in Boston were the Associated Charities, the Boston Provident Association, the St. Vincent de Paul Society, and the Federated Jewish Charities. The last agency also maintained a home for Jewish children over 5 years of age. The Council of Jewish Women, through its immigrant-aid department, cared for immigrant girls, securing employment for them and assisting them in other ways.¹⁰

The Boston Society for the Care of Girls and the House of the Good Shepherd dealt with illegitimacy incidentally to their work for the protection of girls. The former society gave care and supervision to girls taken from the juvenile court or received from other sources. The girls were usually placed in boarding or free homes. The House of the Good Shepherd cared for wayward girls and women, either committed by court or received on voluntary application. There were in Boston other agencies and institutions caring for children, most of them having very limited capacity. The ones mentioned are those of most importance to this study.

The psychopathic department of the Boston State Hospital, one of the State hospitals for the care of the insane, gave first care and observation to mental patients, including the feeble-minded, and treated acute and curable mental diseases. It served the metropolitan district; but the out-patient department had no limitations, accepting all who came for diagnosis, advice, and out-patient treatment. The scientific investigation and research work was also State-wide in scope. The purpose of the out-patient department was "to afford free consultation to the poor, and such advice and medical treatment as would, with the aid of district nursing, promote the home care of mental patients."¹¹ The social service department made investigations and gave supervision and advice. The facilities for diagnosis and out-patient care afforded by the psychopathic department are invaluable to the work of Boston agencies.

¹⁰ See note, p. 77, relative to the Jewish Children's Bureau, established subsequent to the year of the study and maintained by the Federated Jewish Charities.

¹¹ Recommendations of the State board of insanity, quoted in the Second Annual Report of the Psychopathic Department of the Boston State Hospital for the Year Ending November 30, 1913, p. 22.

CHAPTER 1. THE INFANT BORN OUT OF WEDLOCK.

METHOD AND SCOPE OF STUDY.

Of prime importance in a study of illegitimacy is the consideration of the number of illegitimate births each year, the proportion of total births which this number constitutes, the mortality of infants of illegitimate birth as compared with others, and the conditions surrounding their birth and infancy. Vital statistics necessarily form the basis of such a study. The information obtained from birth and death records was supplemented in this study by data secured from the records of social agencies. So far as possible, each child was followed through his first year of life. This investigation was based upon a study of records, and no attempt was made to follow up cases not known to social agencies or to supplement the information secured from records.

The question of registration of illegitimate births has been the subject of much discussion. The method of registering such births varies in different States, but nowhere in this country has a system been put into practice which is thoroughly satisfactory from all points of view. In Massachusetts the fact of illegitimacy is not entered on the birth certificate, and the law forbids the statement in the certificate of the name and other facts relating to the father of a child of illegitimate birth, except at the request, in writing, of both parents. It is, however, in most cases possible to determine the fact of illegitimacy from the birth certificate by the absence of the father's name. This has been considered a basis of selection sufficiently accurate to warrant the issuance of statistics of illegitimate births by the health department of the city of Boston.¹

Great care is taken by the city registrar to verify and complete all birth-certificate data. As they come in from the physicians, copies of the certificates are sent to the parents for correction. Canvassers are also sent out to secure complete birth registration. The chances of the name of a father of a child of legitimate birth being omitted from the birth record are thus rendered negligible. In checking birth certificates with the records of social agencies, there was no instance in which a child thought to be of illegitimate birth by reason of the evidence on the birth certificate was discovered to be of legitimate birth. The

¹ Forty-fourth Annual Report of the Health Department of the City of Boston for the Year 1915. Boston, 1916. P. 145.

error would appear to lie, rather, in the registration of infants born out of wedlock as though they were of legitimate birth, resulting in an understatement of the number of illegitimate births. A number of instances were found in which this had happened. In some of these cases the parents had been living as married. In others the mother had probably misinformed the doctor as to her civil state.

The name of the father is commonly omitted from the death certificate of a child of illegitimate birth. However, in cases in which the mother was married subsequent to the child's birth, whether to the father or to another man, and kept the baby with her, the name of the mother's husband would probably appear on the death certificate as the name of the child's father.

In order to secure information as to infants born out of wedlock in Boston in the year of the study, all the birth records for 1914 were searched for those that indicated illegitimate birth. Birth certificates indicating that the child had been born out of wedlock were then checked with death certificates indicating illegitimacy, in order that cases in which the child appeared from the death record to be of illegitimate birth, but which had not been found among the birth certificates, might be discovered. Such cases were then traced through the birth registry to determine whether the birth had been registered as illegitimate or legitimate. In some instances the birth and death of the same child were registered under different names, but it was usually possible to check by the first name of the mother and the date and place of birth.

The list of births obtained in the above manner was supplemented by comparison with records of social agencies in Boston. A number of cases were found in which the social agency stated that a child of illegitimate birth had been born in Boston in the year studied, though no birth certificate had been found. These cases were checked through the birth registry and in many instances it was found that the child had been registered as of legitimate birth. These cases were then included in the list of illegitimate births. In the final tabulation of the results only those infants whose births had been registered as either illegitimate or legitimate were included.

As a means of determining how far the year of the study was representative, the total numbers of illegitimate births were secured for each year of the period 1910 to 1914, inclusive. It was not practicable to check the births for the first four years of the period with death records and records of agencies, as was done for the year selected for intensive study. Hence the figures given include only those births registered as illegitimate, and do not include illegitimate births registered as legitimate. The proportions of illegitimate births are, therefore, understatements. The birth registry of Boston includes

also records of infants born outside the city whose mothers are residents of Boston, since under the Massachusetts law births to mothers not residents of the place where they are confined are reported to the town of residence.² These nonresident births are included in the total births and in the illegitimate births for the first four years of the period, but not for the year 1914. For the purpose of comparison with the first four years of the period, only births registered as illegitimate are included in the 1914 figures.

Two methods were used for measuring the infant mortality among children born out of wedlock. The first method was a comparison of the number of illegitimate births during a given year with the number of deaths during the same year of infants under 1 year of age born out of wedlock. This comparison was made for each year of the five-year period 1910 to 1914, inclusive.

The death certificates were searched for records of infants of illegitimate birth who died under 1 year of age in Boston during the period specified. No distinction was made between deaths of infants born in Boston or outside Boston, or born during the year specified or the year previous. The comparison with births was based on the number of births secured by the method previously described. A more correct rate was obtained for 1914 than for the entire five-year period, because of the greater accuracy in the number of births, obtained through the process of checking. Analyses of age at death and cause of death were made for that year.

The second method used in this study for measuring mortality among infants born out of wedlock was the following, through all available records, of the infants born during the year to determine the number of these infants who died during their first year of life. For this purpose the Boston death certificates of 1914 and 1915 were searched for infants of illegitimate birth born in Boston during 1914 and dying in Boston in 1914 or 1915, aged under 1 year. Where the residence of the mother was a Massachusetts town outside Boston, the death records of the town specified were also searched and death certificates for infants born in Boston in 1914 and dying under 1 year of age were included in the total number of deaths. Deaths reported by social agencies but not verified by death certificates were not included for the purpose of measuring infant mortality. Analyses of age at death and cause of death were made.

A considerable amount of information was available for all these infants from the birth and death certificates. In a large number of cases this was supplemented by information from records of social

² Copies of all birth certificates are filed in the office of the Secretary of the Commonwealth. Here the returns are checked to avoid duplication in the published statistics. R. L. 1902 ch. 29 sec. 13 as amended by acts 1910 ch. 93; sec. 18 as amended by 1903 ch. 305.

agencies. Material from all sources pertaining to a given case was assembled on one form and the data were then counterchecked.

NUMBER OF ILLEGITIMATE BIRTHS AND PROPORTION TO TOTAL BIRTHS.

During a Five-Year Period.

There are two methods of computing illegitimacy rates. The first gives the percentage of illegitimate births in a given period and is obtained by dividing the number of illegitimate births by the total births. The second method compares the number of illegitimate births with the number of single, widowed, and divorced women of childbearing age in the community, and is obtained by dividing the number of illegitimate births by the number of such women in the population. The first method has to commend it the fact that it emphasizes the extent of the child-care problem involved. The second method is the more valuable if the purpose is to deal with causative factors and to consider the moral and preventive sides of the problem. Both methods are difficult to apply fairly in a city like Boston, which is a center for maternity care and consequently has a large proportion of births to nonresident mothers, particularly mothers of children born out of wedlock.

Table 1 shows for each year from 1910 to 1914, inclusive, the total number of births and the number and per cent of illegitimate births. It must be remembered that these percentages are based upon uncorrected figures, the illegitimate births including only those registered as such.

TABLE 1.—*Per cent of live births in Boston registered as illegitimate, 1910 to 1914.*

Year of birth.	Total live births. ^a	Live births registered as illegitimate.	
		Number. ^b	Per cent.
1910.....	17,831	670	3.8
1911.....	18,007	757	4.2
1912.....	18,924	867	4.6
1913.....	19,288	829	4.3
1914.....	c 19,462	d 752	3.9

^a Unpublished figures, except for the year 1914, secured from the registry department. Except for 1914, includes births outside Boston to Boston mothers, if registered in Boston. These figures are slightly larger than those published in the annual reports, because of additional births that occurred in the years specified but were not registered in time for inclusion in the annual reports.

^b Except for 1914, includes births outside Boston to Boston mothers, if registered in Boston.

^c Actual births in Boston. Forty-third Annual Report of the Health Department of the city of Boston for the year 1914. Boston, 1915. p. 104.

^d Actual births in Boston. This figure does not include births known to be illegitimate but registered as legitimate. It is given in order to be comparable with the preceding uncorrected figures. It is smaller than the corrected figure used later in the report.

The percentage varied during the five years from 3.8 per cent to 4.6 per cent, the lowest percentage being in 1910, and the highest in

1912. The rate for 1914, the year of the intensive study, was 3.9 per cent, the next to the lowest in the five-year period. In the annual report for 1915 the Health Department of the City of Boston published statistics relating to births and deaths of infants born out of wedlock. In that year there were 800 illegitimate births, 4.1 per cent of the total births.³

The number of illegitimate births per 1,000 single, widowed, and divorced women 15 to 44 years of age is shown in Table 2 for five years, 1910 to 1914.

TABLE 2.—*Number of live births in Boston registered as illegitimate per 1,000 single, widowed, and divorced women 15 to 44 years of age, 1910 to 1914.*

Year.	Single, widowed, and divorced women 15 to 44 years of age. ^a	Live births during year registered as illegitimate.	
		Number. ^b	Rate per 1,000 women.
1910.....	96,655	670	6.9
1911.....	97,984	757	7.7
1912.....	99,313	867	8.7
1913.....	100,642	829	8.2
1914.....	101,971	752	7.4

^a Estimated as for July 1 of each year, on the basis of U. S. Census figures for 1900 and 1910.

^b See notes ^b and ^d Table 1.

The rate of illegitimate live births per 1,000 single, widowed, and divorced women of child-bearing age shows a yearly variation similar to that shown by the percentages of illegitimate live births (See Table 1.) The rate estimated on either basis is high in comparison with the illegitimacy rates for the State as a whole. The percentage of illegitimate live births in Massachusetts was 2.3 in 1914,⁴ as compared with the percentage of 3.9 for Boston. The number of illegitimate live births per 1,000 single, widowed, and divorced women of child-bearing age in Massachusetts was 4.5 in 1914,⁵ as compared with the rate of 7.4 for Boston. The relatively high Boston rates are in part due to the fact that Boston is a center to which many women come from outside the city for the purpose of securing maternity care.

The registration of stillbirths is likely to be less complete than that of live births. The figures obtained, and shown in Table 3, indicate a higher percentage of stillbirths among illegitimate births than among all births. The numbers of stillbirths per 100 births registered range from 3.6 to 3.9 in the period 1910 to 1914. The number of illegitimate stillbirths per 100 births registered as ille-

³ Forty-fourth Annual Report of the Health Department of the City of Boston for the year 1915. Boston, 1916. Pp. 145, 147.

⁴ See p. 270.

⁵ Idem.

gitimate range from 6.7 to 5.4, being lower for 1914 than for any other year. Too much importance must not be attached to these figures, however, because of the probable incomplete registration of stillbirths.

TABLE 3.—*Per cent of stillbirths registered in Boston among total births and among births registered as illegitimate, 1910 to 1914.*

Year of birth.	Total births. ^a	Stillbirths.		Births registered as illegitimate. ^c	Stillbirths registered as illegitimate.	
		Number. ^b	Per cent of total births.		Number.	Per cent of all births registered as illegitimate.
1910.....	18,506	675	3.6	718	48	6.7
1911.....	18,722	715	3.8	805	48	6.0
1912.....	19,666	742	3.8	925	58	6.3
1913.....	20,025	737	3.7	877	48	5.5
1914.....	20,251	789	3.9	795	43	5.4

^a Live births (see Table 1, p. 83) plus stillbirths.

^b Forty-third Annual Report of the Health Department of the City of Boston for the Year 1914. Boston, 1915. Pp. 98 and 104.

^c Illegitimate live births (see Table 1, p. 83) plus illegitimate stillbirths.

During the Year of the Study.

Considering only the births registered as illegitimate, there were in Boston in 1914, the year selected for intensive study, 752 illegitimate live births. These births were 3.9 per cent of all live births registered in the city.

Through a process of checking with death records and with the records of agencies and institutions, as described above, 95 cases were found in which illegitimate births were registered as legitimate. Hence, there was known to have been a total of 847 illegitimate live births during the year, constituting 4.4 per cent of all live births.⁶ This percentage of illegitimate births is still an understatement. Undoubtedly there were other illegitimate births registered as legitimate, which were impossible to trace by the means employed.

During the year there were 43 stillbirths registered as illegitimate—5.4 per cent of all stillbirths—and 5 others registered as legitimate which were known to agencies to be illegitimate. Hence, the total number known was 48, or 6.1 per cent of all stillbirths. In addition, there were 17 stillbirths registered as of unknown parentage.

⁶ There were 30 illegitimate births to Boston mothers at the State Infirmary during the year, and 9 other illegitimate births to Boston mothers occurring outside Boston and registered in Boston. These were not included in this study.

The following list gives the distribution of live births and stillbirths according to the parentage of the child:

Legitimate.....	18,614
Registered as illegitimate.....	752
Registered as legitimate, but known to be illegitimate.....	95
Of unknown parentage.....	1
Total live births.....	19,462
Legitimate.....	724
Registered as illegitimate.....	43
Registered as legitimate, but known to be illegitimate.....	5
Of unknown parentage.....	17
Total stillbirths.....	789

The distribution of illegitimate live births according to month of birth is given in Table 4, in comparison with the distribution of total live births in Suffolk County.

TABLE 4.—*Relative monthly frequency of live births in Suffolk County and of illegitimate live births in Boston, 1914.*

Month of birth.	Live births in Suffolk County. ^a		Illegitimate live births in Boston.	
	Number. ^b	Relative monthly frequency. ^c	Number.	Relative monthly frequency. ^d
Total.....	21,794	.....	847	.....
January.....	1,885	102	86	120
February.....	1,658	99	65	100
March.....	1,929	104	94	131
April.....	1,791	100	86	124
May.....	1,831	99	80	111
June.....	1,777	99	57	82
July.....	1,871	101	68	95
August.....	1,844	100	64	89
September.....	1,870	104	61	88
October.....	1,768	96	53	74
November.....	1,780	99	60	86
December.....	1,790	97	73	102

^a The county in which Boston is located. In 1910 Boston included 92 per cent of the population of the county.

^b Commonwealth of Massachusetts: Seventy-third Annual Report on Births, Marriages, and Deaths for the Year 1914. Boston, 1915. P. 74.

^c The daily average number of live births for the year was 59.71. For each month the number of births that would have occurred at this daily average rate was calculated; the number of births that actually occurred was then divided by the number calculated. The quotient is the relative frequency of births for the month, 100 expressing the average frequency.

^d The daily average number of illegitimate live births for the year was 2.32. The relative monthly frequency was computed as described above.

There were no published figures as to month of birth for total births in Boston in 1914. Data in regard to month of birth were available, however, for Suffolk County. Since the population of Boston represents 92 per cent of the population of the county, these figures are fairly comparable with illegitimate births in Boston. The relative monthly frequency of live births in the county was fairly regular, ranging from 96 to 104. In the case of illegitimate births,

however, the relative monthly frequencies for the winter and spring months were considerably higher than for the summer and autumn months. In the six months from December to May, inclusive, the relative frequencies were all above the average for the year, rising as high as 131. The frequencies for the six months from June to November were all below the average for the year, falling as low as 74. These figures indicate that a larger number of illegitimate conceptions occur in the months from April through September than at other times of the year, and would seem to show a direct relation to the greater freedom from restraint offered by many forms of recreation prevalent during the spring and summer months.

Accuracy of Registration of Illegitimate Births.

The State of Massachusetts was one of the original States included in the registration area for births established by the United States Bureau of the Census in 1915, on the basis of a registration efficiency of at least 90 per cent.⁷ Birth registration in Boston in 1916 was estimated by the Bureau of the Census to be at least 94.6 per cent complete.⁸

It was impossible in the course of this study to make a complete test of the accuracy of the registration of illegitimate births. Only those cases of incorrect registration were found which were disclosed by checking with records of social agencies or with death records. Undoubtedly there were other cases of illegitimate birth registered as legitimate. Even cases which were known to social agencies were sometimes impossible to trace through the registry of births, because of change of name. A number of instances were found in which the mother had assumed several different names, or in which she had married after the birth of the child and was known to agencies only by her married name.

There were 36 cases discovered in which the record stated that the child was of illegitimate birth and had been born in Boston during the year studied, but for which it was impossible to find a birth certificate. It is probable that these were not cases of unregistered birth, but that most of the children had been registered as of legitimate birth under names other than those given in the records. This supposition is borne out by the fact that, of a total of 140 children not registered as of illegitimate birth, 95, or 67.9 per cent, were finally found recorded in the birth registry, though often under other names than those given in the death records or in records of social agencies. Of the remaining 45, 3 were discovered to have been born

⁷ U. S. Bureau of the Census: Birth Statistics for the Registration Area of the United States, 1915. Washington, 1917. P. 9.

⁸ Estimate secured from Division of Vital Statistics, U. S. Bureau of the Census.

outside Boston, though reported by agency or death records to have been born in the city, and 6 were found not to have been born in the year studied. Had complete information been available for all cases, it is highly probable that most of the others actually born in Boston during the year would have proved to have been registered as of legitimate birth. It was considered more conservative to exclude from the study the cases not found in the birth registry, because of the possibility of these births having occurred outside Boston, or outside the year.

It would appear, therefore, that a high percentage of illegitimate births in Boston are registered, but that a considerable number of them are registered as legitimate. It was impossible to ascertain the percentage of illegitimate births actually registered as such, but the figures available indicate that not more than 88.8 per cent are so registered, 752 of the 847 known illegitimate births in Boston being registered as illegitimate.

INFANT MORTALITY.

During a Five-Year Period.

Infant mortality is recognized as an index of social conditions and of child welfare in general. The public has been aroused to a realization of the importance of preventing infant mortality and improving the conditions surrounding infancy and childhood. Those economic and social conditions⁹ found to accompany a high infant mortality rate exist to a greater extent among infants of illegitimate birth than among other infants, economic stress and absence of the mother's nursing care being particularly common among the former. The fact that of every 1,000 children born in Boston in 1914 at least 44 were born out of wedlock indicates the importance of a consideration of illegitimacy in efforts for the reduction of infant deaths.

Records of deaths of infants under 1 year of age were searched for the five-year period 1910 to 1914, inclusive, and the deaths of infants of illegitimate birth counted. An intensive study of the death records was made for the year 1914. Infant mortality rates were obtained by dividing the total number of deaths in each year by the number of births in the same year, and the number of deaths of infants born out of wedlock by the number of illegitimate births. For this purpose "illegitimate births" include only births registered as such, since no effort was made to supplement the number of illegitimate births by comparison with records of social agencies, except for the last year of the period.

⁹ See Infant Mortality reports containing results of field studies in Johnstown, Pa.; Manchester, N. H.; Waterbury, Conn.; Brockton, Mass.; Saginaw, Mich.; New Bedford, Mass.; Akron, Ohio. U. S. Children's Bureau Publications Nos. 9, 20, 29, 37, 52, 68, 72.

TABLE 5.—*Infant mortality rates for all infants and for infants born out of wedlock, 1910 to 1914.*

Year.	Live births registered as illegitimate in Boston. ^a	Deaths of infants registered as illegitimate in Boston. ^b	Infant mortality rate for infants of illegitimate birth. ^c	Infant mortality rate for all infants. ^d
1910.....	670	303	452.2	126.7
1911.....	757	302	398.9	125.2
1912.....	867	282	325.3	115.7
1913.....	829	263	317.2	109.7
1914 ^e	752	236	313.8	103.1

^a Except for 1914, includes births outside Boston to Boston mothers, if registered in Boston.

^b Deaths registered in Boston as for infants of illegitimate birth. Except for 1914, includes deaths outside Boston of Boston residents, if registered in Boston.

^c These rates are based only upon births and deaths registered as illegitimate. The 1914 rate here given is somewhat higher than the corrected rate used later in the report, but it is used here in order to be comparable with the preceding uncorrected figures.

^d Forty-third Annual Report of the Health Department of the City of Boston for the Year 1914. Boston, 1915. P. 101.

^e Only births and deaths registered as illegitimate are included, in order to make this year comparable with the preceding years.

From the figures given in Table 5 it appears that the infant mortality rate among children of illegitimate birth is about three times as high as the general infant mortality rate. There was a steady decrease in the general infant mortality rate during the five-year period, and an even greater decline in the illegitimate infant mortality rate. In 1910 the rate among infants of illegitimate birth was 452 deaths to 1,000 births. In 1914 the rate was 314 deaths to 1,000 births. The illegitimate infant mortality rate in 1910 was three and six-tenths times the mortality rate among all infants. In 1914 the rate was three times the general infant mortality rate. The illegitimate infant mortality rates here given are probably somewhat high, because of inaccuracies in registration. The relative difference between the illegitimate infant mortality rates and the general infant mortality rates (the former divided by the latter) for each of the five years were as follows: 1910, 3.6; 1911, 3.2; 1912, 2.8; 1913, 2.9; 1914, 3.0.

In the 1915 annual report the health department of the city of Boston for the first time published the number of deaths of infants of illegitimate birth that had occurred during the year and the illegitimate infant mortality rate. The illegitimate infant mortality rate in 1915 as given in this report was 300 and the general infant mortality rate was 103.7,¹⁰ a ratio of nearly 3 to 1.

During the Year of the Study.

Rate.

In 1914, the year selected for intensive study, the illegitimate infant mortality rate, based upon the number of illegitimate births

¹⁰ Forty-fourth Annual Report of the Health Department of the City of Boston for the Year 1915. Boston, 1916. Pp. 77, 143.

in that year and the number of deaths in the same year of infants of illegitimate birth, was 281.¹¹ The general infant mortality rate during the year was 103.1. Subtracting the number of illegitimate births from the total births, and the deaths of infants of illegitimate birth from the total infant deaths, the infant mortality rate among infants of legitimate birth was 95. The rate for infants of illegitimate birth was therefore three times as high as that for infants of legitimate birth. The exclusion of births and deaths of infants born out of wedlock reduces the infant mortality rate for the city 8 per cent. (See Table 6.)

Infant deaths per 1,000 live births

Born in
wedlock

95.0

Born out
of wedlock

281.0

CHART I.—Comparative infant mortality rates for infants born in wedlock and born out of wedlock, 1914.

TABLE 6.—*Infant mortality rates for infants of legitimate and of illegitimate birth, 1914.*

Status.	Live births.			Deaths.			Infant mortality rate.		
	Total.	Male.	Female.	Total.	Male.	Female.	General.	Male.	Female.
Total <i>a</i>	<i>b</i> 19,462	9,910	9,551	2,007	1,090	917	103.1	110.0	96.0
Legitimate <i>c</i>	<i>b</i> 18,615	9,479	9,135	1,769	963	806	95.0	101.6	88.2
Illegitimate <i>d</i>	847	431	416	238	127	111	281.0	294.7	266.8

a Forty-third Annual Report of the Health Department of the City of Boston for the Year 1914. Boston, 1915. Pp. 108-109.

b Includes 1, sex unknown.

c Obtained by subtracting illegitimate from total.

d Includes 95 births and 2 deaths registered as legitimate, though found to be illegitimate.

The infant mortality rate for males among those of legitimate birth was 101.6, and for females, 88.2. The infant mortality rate for males among those of illegitimate birth was 294.7, and for females, 266.8. The ratio of the infant mortality rate for males to the rate for females among the first group was 1.15 to 1, while the corresponding ratio for infants of illegitimate birth was 1.10 to 1.

¹¹ In Boston, in 1914, there were 847 illegitimate births registered as illegitimate or as legitimate and 238 infant deaths among children born out of wedlock. The number of deaths of infants born outside Boston is approximately equaled by the number of deaths known to have occurred outside the city among infants of illegitimate birth born in Boston in 1914. Included in the 238 deaths are those of 36 infants born outside Boston—i. e., deaths among infants who moved into Boston after birth. On the other hand, among the 847 infants of illegitimate birth born in Boston in 1914, 35 were known to have died outside Boston under 1 year of age (death certificates found in 22 instances), and 2 others probably died outside Boston though the place of death was not definitely reported.

One-fourth of the illegitimate births during the year and more than half the deaths of infants born out of wedlock occurred in one large institution—a maternity hospital and children's institution combined. No estimate could be made for this institution of the infant mortality rate based upon the number of illegitimate births and infant deaths during one year. On the one hand, babies were discharged from the hospital after a few weeks, and on the other hand, infants were received after birth. It is evident, however, from figures given later in this report,¹² that the infant mortality in this institution was disproportionately high.

Age at death.

In order to compare the age at death of infants born in wedlock and out of wedlock, it was necessary to ascertain the number of infants of legitimate birth who died at various ages, by subtracting the deaths of infants of illegitimate birth from the total deaths at various ages as given in the report of the health department. The numbers of deaths at various ages per 1,000 live births, obtained by dividing the number of deaths at each age by the total number of births during the year, are given in Table 7.

TABLE 7.—Deaths per 1,000 births, 1914, among infants of legitimate and of illegitimate birth, by age at death.

Age at death.	Total deaths.		Deaths of infants of legitimate birth.		Deaths of infants of illegitimate birth.	
	Number. ^a	Per 1,000 live births. ^b	Number. ^c	Per 1,000 legitimate live births. ^d	Number.	Per 1,000 illegitimate live births. ^e
Total.....	2,007	103.1	1,769	95.0	238	281.0
Less than 1 month.....	917	47.1	836	44.9	81	95.6
Less than 1 week.....	655	33.7	610	32.7	45	53.1
1 week.....	102	5.2	93	5.0	9	10.6
2 weeks.....	87	4.5	74	4.0	13	15.4
3 weeks.....	73	3.7	59	3.2	14	16.5
1 month.....	174	9.0	129	6.9	45	53.1
2 months.....	127	6.5	101	5.4	26	30.7
3-5 months.....	294	15.1	249	13.4	45	53.1
6-8 months.....	261	13.4	232	12.5	29	34.3
9-11 months.....	234	12.0	222	11.9	12	14.2

^a Forty-third Annual Report of the Health Department of the City of Boston for the Year 1914. Boston, 1915. Pp. 148-149.

^b Based on total live births in 1914—19,462.

^c Obtained by subtracting deaths of infants of illegitimate birth from total.

^d Based on total live births minus the illegitimate—18,615.

^e Based on 847 illegitimate live births.

The deaths per 1,000 births in each age group were very much higher for infants of illegitimate than for those of legitimate birth. The relative differences between the number of deaths per 1,000 births for children born out of wedlock and for those of legiti-

¹² See p. 98.

mate birth (the former divided by the latter), according to age at death, were as follows:

All ages.....	2.1	1 month.....	7.7
Less than 1 month.....	2.1	2 months.....	5.7
Less than 1 week.....	1.6	3-5 months.....	4.0
1 week.....	2.0	6-8 months.....	2.7
2 weeks.....	3.9	9-11 months.....	1.2
3 weeks.....	5.2		

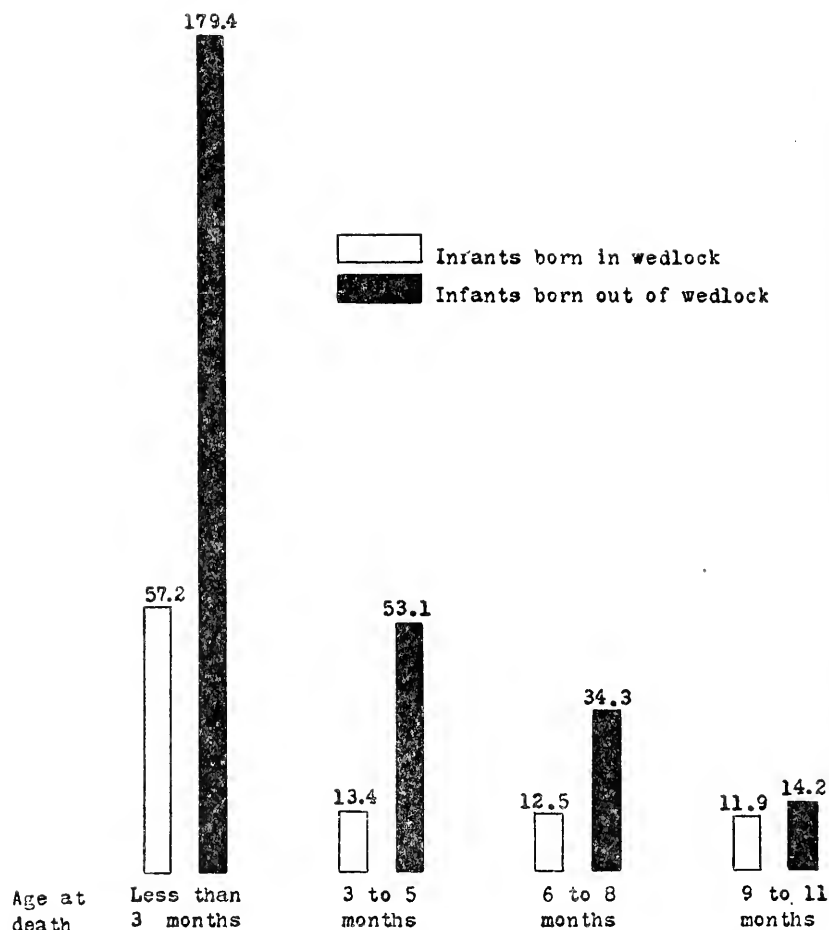


CHART II.—Deaths per 1,000 live births, 1914, among infants born in wedlock and born out of wedlock, by age at death.

The number of deaths per 1,000 births for infants of illegitimate birth less than a week old was 1.6 times that for infants of legitimate birth of the same age. At 1 week of age the rate for infants of illegitimate birth was twice that for infants of legitimate birth. Up to and including 1 month there was a steady increase in the pre-

ponderance of deaths per 1,000 births for infants of illegitimate birth. The rate for infants of illegitimate birth 1 month of age, but less than 2 months, was 7.7 times as great as the rate for infants of legitimate birth of the same age group. After this age there was a steady decline in the relative difference, until for infants 9 to 11 months of age the mortality for those of illegitimate birth was only 1.2 times the mortality for those of legitimate birth. The smaller relative difference in the later age groups may be accounted for in part by the increasing probability as the child grows older that his death would be registered as though he were of legitimate birth, because of the marriage of the mother, the child's adoption, or other reasons.

The greater preponderance of the rate for infants of illegitimate birth in the 1-month age group over that for infants of legitimate birth in the same group, and the lesser preponderance in the age groups under 1 month, can probably be accounted for by the separation of mother and child, which occurs in so many cases soon after the mother has recovered from her confinement.¹³ Early separation from the mother would seem to have a greater effect upon the infant mortality rate than detrimental prenatal conditions. It might have been expected that the mental stress, the disturbance in economic and social relations, and the absence of proper care to which so many of these mothers were subject during pregnancy would result in an extremely high mortality during the first weeks of the child's life. Although the rate for the period under 1 month is more than twice as high as in the case of infants of legitimate birth, yet the relative difference is not as great as in the later periods of infancy.

Infant mortality statistics in England and Wales show somewhat the same tendency as that shown by the Boston figures in regard to the relative difference between the number of infant deaths at various ages per 1,000 births among infants born out of wedlock and among infants born in wedlock. In the English statistics the comparison is shown in terms of the per cent that infant mortality among children born out of wedlock constitutes of infant mortality among children of legitimate birth (the latter rate being taken as 100). The general infant mortality rate in England and Wales among children born out of wedlock was only twice that among children of legitimate birth, as compared with a relative difference of 3 in Boston. Following are the percentages that the infant mortality rates in 1914 among infants of illegitimate birth were of the

¹³ See pp. 139-143.

rates for infants born in wedlock, according to age at death, for England and Wales:¹⁴

Under 1 year----- 206			
Under 1 month-----	196	6 months-----	200
1 month-----	229	7 months-----	188
2 months-----	261	8 months-----	169
3 months-----	257	9 months-----	163
4 months-----	234	10 months-----	163
5 months-----	230	11 months-----	148

Until the end of the third month of life there was an increase in the relative differences between the rates for infants of illegitimate birth and those for infants born in wedlock, the largest difference being at the age of 2 months. The peak thus comes at a later age than was shown in the Boston figures, where the greatest difference came at the age of 1 month. In England and Wales the relative difference at 3 months was almost as great as that at 2 months. There was a steady decline in the later age groups, but not until the age of 7 months was the difference as low as in the age group under 1 month.

Cause of death.

In order to obtain comparative data upon the cause of death among infants of illegitimate and of legitimate birth it was necessary to subtract the number of infants of illegitimate birth dying from specified causes from the total numbers of infant deaths from specified causes as given in the report of the health department. The results are shown in Table 8.

TABLE 8.—*Cause of death for infants of legitimate and of illegitimate birth, 1914.*

Cause of death.	Total infant deaths. ^a	Deaths of infants of legitimate birth. ^b	Deaths of infants of illegitimate birth.
All causes.....	2,007	1,769	238
Principal gastric and intestinal diseases.....	418	329	89
Diseases of the stomach.....	9	8	1
Diarrhea and enteritis.....	409	321	88
Principal respiratory diseases.....	355	330	25
Acute bronchitis.....	29	28	1
Broncho-pneumonia.....	191	175	16
Pneumonia.....	135	127	8
Malformations.....	141	132	9
Diseases of early infancy.....	687	613	74
Premature birth.....	422	387	35
Congenital debility.....	115	82	33
Injuries at birth.....	90	84	6
Other.....	60	60	.....

^a Forty-third Annual Report of the Health Department of the City of Boston for the Year 1914. Boston, 1915. 1p. 106-107.

^b Obtained by subtracting deaths of infants of illegitimate birth from total infant deaths.

¹⁴ Seventy-ninth Annual Report of the Registrar-General of Births, Deaths, and Marriages in England and Wales (1916). London, 1918. P. xxxv.

TABLE 8.—Cause of death for infants of legitimate and of illegitimate birth, 1914.—Continued.

Cause of death.	Total infant deaths. ^a	Deaths of infants of legitimate birth. ^b	Deaths of infants of illegitimate birth.
Principal epidemic diseases.....	183	159	24
Measles.....	17	17	0
Scarlet fever.....	3	3	0
Whooping cough.....	23	21	2
Diphtheria.....	13	7	6
Influenza.....	2	2	0
Dysentery.....	16	16	0
Erysipelas.....	19	18	1
Tuberculosis of the lungs.....	21	19	2
Tuberculous meningitis.....	29	25	4
Other forms of tuberculosis.....	9	6	3
Syphilis.....	31	25	6
External causes.....	20	18	2
Causes ill-defined or unknown.....	13	12	1
All other causes.....	190	176	14
Meningitis.....	25	24	1
Convulsions.....	15	14	1
Organic diseases of the heart.....	3	2	1
Other.....	147	136	11

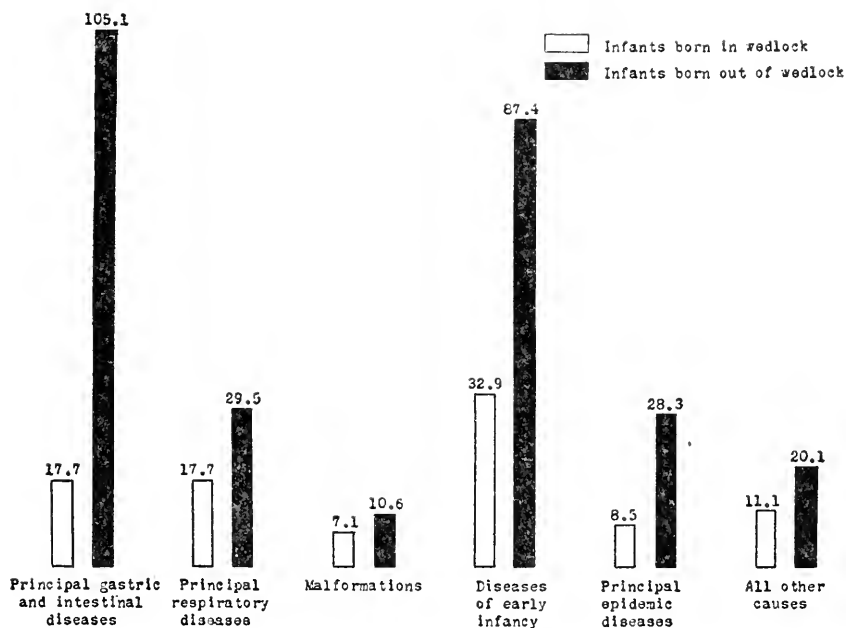


CHART III.—Deaths per 1,000 live births, 1914, among infants born in wedlock and born out of wedlock, by cause of death.

The facts in Table 8 are summarized in Table 9, which also gives the infant mortality rates for the various causes. Specific infant mortality rates were obtained by dividing the number of deaths from each cause by the total number of births during the year.

TABLE 9.—*Specific mortality rates for infants of legitimate and of illegitimate birth, 1914, by cause of death.*

Cause of death.	Total infant deaths. ^a		Deaths of infants of legitimate birth. ^b		Deaths of infants of illegitimate birth.	
	Number.	Specific mortality rates. ^c	Number.	Specific mortality rates. ^d	Number.	Specific mortality rates. ^e
All causes.....	2,007	103.1	1,769	95.0	238	281.0
Principal gastric and intestinal diseases.....	418	21.5	329	17.7	89	105.1
Principal respiratory diseases.....	355	18.2	330	17.7	25	29.5
Malformations.....	141	7.3	132	7.1	9	10.6
Diseases of early infancy.....	687	35.3	613	32.9	74	87.4
Principal epidemic diseases.....	183	9.4	159	8.5	24	28.3
All other causes.....	223	11.4	206	11.1	17	20.1

^a Forty-third Annual Report of the Health Department of the City of Boston for the Year 1914. Boston, 1915. Pp. 106-107.

^b Obtained by subtracting deaths of infants of illegitimate birth from total infant deaths

^c Based on total live births in 1914—19,462.

^d Based on total live births minus illegitimate live births—18,615

^e Based on 847 illegitimate live births.

The specific infant mortality rates were invariably higher for infants of illegitimate birth than for others, though there was a great variation in the proportionate excess of "illegitimate" over "legitimate" rates for the various causes. The relative differences between the mortality rates among infants of illegitimate birth and infants of legitimate birth (the former divided by the latter), according to cause of death, were as follows:

All causes.....	3.0
Principal gastric and intestinal diseases.....	5.9
Principal respiratory diseases.....	1.7
Malformations.....	1.5
Diseases of early infancy.....	2.7
Principal epidemic diseases.....	3.3
All other causes.....	1.8

The rate for gastric and intestinal diseases was 5.9 times as high for infants of illegitimate birth as for those of legitimate birth. The diseases in this group are largely caused by improper feeding. Hence, early separation from the mother or other circumstances making maternal nursing impossible would be a factor in mortality from this cause. The rate for diseases of early infancy was 2.7 times as great for infants of illegitimate birth as for those of legitimate birth. This group of causes includes premature birth, congenital debility, injuries at birth, and other causes connected with birth. The rate for deaths due to premature birth was 41.3 for children of illegitimate birth, as against 20.8 for children of legitimate birth. The rate for deaths from congenital debility was 39 for infants of illegitimate births, as against 4.4 for infants of legitimate birth, or nine times as high. This rate shows the effect of the detrimental conditions to which the mothers were often subjected

during pregnancy. Had stillbirths been included, the comparative importance of the diseases of early infancy would have been considerably greater.

The distribution of deaths of infants born out of wedlock by cause of death was different for the group of 129 deaths occurring in one large maternity hospital and children's institution than for the 109 occurring elsewhere. Of the former group of deaths, 54 per cent were reported as due to gastric and intestinal causes, while among the latter only 17 per cent were so reported. The percentage of deaths of infants of illegitimate birth caused by diseases of early infancy was 22 at the institution specified and 41 elsewhere. The larger proportion of deaths due to gastric and intestinal diseases at the institution under consideration may be accounted for in part by the fact that many of the infants under care were separated from their mothers at a very early age. The comparative distribution of the two groups according to cause of death is given in Table 10.

TABLE 10.—*Cause of death for infants of illegitimate birth who died at a large maternity hospital and children's institution and for those who died elsewhere, 1914.*

Cause of death.	Deaths of infants of illegitimate births, 1914.		
	Total deaths.	Deaths in a large maternity hospital and children's institution.	Deaths elsewhere.
All causes.....	238	129	109
Principal gastric and intestinal diseases.....	89	70	19
Principal respiratory diseases.....	25	8	17
Malformations.....	9	4	5
Diseases of early infancy.....	74	29	45
Principal epidemic diseases.....	24	10	14
All other causes.....	17	8	9

During First Year of Life of Infants Born in 1914.

Rate.

The more accurate method of estimating the infant mortality rate is to follow all the infants born during a given year through the first year of life, determining how many died before reaching 1 year of age. This has been the method used by the Children's Bureau in its studies of infant mortality. Especially in the case of infants of illegitimate birth is this method preferable. The mothers of many of these infants are not residents of the city, but come in to secure care at the time of the child's birth. Besides, many infants are brought into the city at the time applications are made for agency care or in the hope that they may be disposed of through adoption. These difficulties are avoided by following infants born

during one year through the first year of life. However, many obstacles are encountered in this procedure. The difficulty in investigating the cases in which the mother has endeavored to conceal the situation from her relatives and friends and the numerous cases in which the children, shortly after birth, were taken out of the city by their mothers or by social agencies are serious obstacles in the way of obtaining complete information.

The histories of the 847 infants born out of wedlock during the year were followed throughout the first year of life, so far as was possible by the methods used. No attempt was made to follow up the histories except so far as they were known to social agencies and courts, or where deaths had been registered. Therefore, the number of deaths and the infant mortality rate here reported are considerable understatements. The data are of value only as indicating the minimum infant mortality rate which would be found were all the facts known.

In estimating the rate on this basis only those deaths which had been registered were included. In a number of cases, however, the deaths had occurred outside Boston, and had been registered elsewhere. All birth certificates which indicated that the mother's residence was a Massachusetts town outside Boston were checked with the death records of the towns specified. There were 17 cases in which the child was reported by social agencies to have died, but in which no death certificates were found. Because of the possibility of error in the date of death reported and the lack of accurate information as to the cause of death, these cases were not included in the number of deaths.

Of the 847 infants of illegitimate birth known to have been born in Boston in 1914, 213 were known to have died during the first year of life. The infant mortality rate was, therefore, 251.5. This is lower than the rate of 281 secured by the other method and is to be taken as a considerable understatement of the true rate. Even this minimum rate was 2.4 times as great as the general infant mortality rate of 103.1.

The large number of births and deaths at a single institution—the large maternity hospital and children's institution previously mentioned—make it of interest to consider separately the infant mortality at this institution and elsewhere. Of the 847 illegitimate births in Boston during the year, 209 occurred at the institution specified. Seventy-four of these 209 infants died at the same institution before they had reached 1 year of age, and 14 were known to have died elsewhere, death certificates having been found. On the basis of these figures it would appear that 421 out of every 1,000 children born out of wedlock at the institution die before they reach 1 year of age, 354 dying at the same institution. These infant mortality rates are con-

siderably higher than the rate (251.5) for all infants born out of wedlock in Boston. Eliminating the infants born at the institution mentioned there were 638 infants of illegitimate birth born in the city during the year, of whom 125 were known to have died before they had reached 1 year of age. The infant mortality rate among this group of infants was 195.9—less than half that among infants born at the institution specified.

Age at death.

The number of deaths per 1,000 births for the various ages, based upon births during 1914 and deaths among these same infants during the first year of life, followed the same tendency as the rate based upon the numbers of births and deaths during the same calendar year. The former rates were usually lower than the latter, no doubt largely because of the less complete information secured; but they were consistently higher than the rates for infants of legitimate birth based upon the numbers of births and deaths in the same year, except in the age group of 9 to 11 months. The low rate in this age group was undoubtedly due to the fact that the difficulty in tracing deaths increases with the age of the child, because of migration, legitimation, and adoption. In the age group of less than 1 month and in the 6-to-8-month age group, the infant mortality rate for infants of illegitimate birth was almost twice as high as for infants of legitimate birth. The rate at 1 month was more than 7 times as high as the rate for infants of legitimate birth, at 2 months the rate was 5 times as high, and at 3 to 5 months approximately 4 times the mortality among infants of legitimate birth. (See Table 11.)

TABLE 11.—Deaths during first year of life of infants born out of wedlock in 1914, and number per 1,000 live births, by age at death.

Age at death.	Deaths during first year of life of infants born out of wedlock in Boston in 1914.		Infant deaths, 1914, per 1,000 live births. ^a	
	Number.	Per 1,000 live births. ^b	Illegitimate.	Legitimate.
All deaths.....	213	251.5	281.0	95.0
Less than 1 month.....	75	88.5	95.6	44.9
Less than 1 week.....	43	50.8	53.1	32.7
1 week.....	7	8.3	10.6	5.0
2 weeks.....	13	15.3	15.4	4.0
3 weeks.....	12	14.1	16.5	3.2
1 month.....	43	50.8	53.1	6.9
2 months.....	23	27.2	30.7	5.4
3-5 months.....	45	53.1	53.1	13.4
6-8 months.....	21	24.8	34.3	12.5
9-11 months.....	6	7.1	14.2	11.9

^a See Table I, p. 91.

^b Based on known number of illegitimate births in 1914—847.

Cause of death.

A comparison of the specific infant mortality rates for deaths from various causes, based upon births during 1914 and deaths among the same infants during the first year of life, with the rates based upon the numbers of births and infant deaths during the same period, gives results similar to those obtained by the comparison of rates for various ages. (See Table 12.)

TABLE 12.—Deaths during first year of life of infants born out of wedlock in 1914, and specific mortality rates, by cause of death.

Cause of death.	Deaths during first year of life of infants born out of wedlock in Boston in 1914.		Infant mortality rates based on numbers of births and deaths during 1914. ^a	
	Number.	Specific mortality rates. ^b	Illegitimate.	Legitimate.
All causes.....	213	251.5	281.0	95.0
Principal gastric and intestinal diseases.....	68	80.3	105.1	17.7
Principal respiratory diseases.....	23	27.2	29.5	17.7
Malformations.....	8	9.4	10.6	7.1
Diseases of early infancy.....	79	93.3	87.4	32.9
Principal epidemic diseases.....	19	22.4	28.3	8.5
All other causes.....	16	18.9	20.1	11.1

^a See Table 9, p. 96.

^b Based on known number of illegitimate births in 1914—847.

Although the infant mortality rates for deaths from various causes are somewhat lower when based upon births and deaths of the same infants, because of the lack of complete information, they are very much higher than the rates for infants of legitimate birth. The two sets of rates for infants of illegitimate birth show the same general tendency, except that the rate for diseases of early infancy is higher than that for gastric and intestinal diseases when figured according to births and deaths among the same infants, and lower when obtained by the other method. This may be explained in part by the fact that deaths from diseases of early infancy are more likely to occur very early in the child's life than deaths from gastric and intestinal diseases, and that, because of migration or for other reasons, the information concerning infant deaths was more complete for those who died in the early months of life than for those who died in the later periods of infancy. The relative difference between the infant mortality rate for infants of illegitimate birth and that for infants of legitimate birth is very much larger in the group of deaths from gastric and intestinal diseases than in any other group, no matter by which method the rate is estimated.

If the deaths of infants born in the maternity hospital and children's institution previously mentioned are eliminated, the relative

importance of deaths from gastric and intestinal diseases becomes very much less, just as in the case of infant deaths in Boston during 1914.¹⁵ Of the 88 infants born out of wedlock at this institution who were known to have died during their first year of life, 47 per cent were reported to have died from gastric and intestinal diseases, while only 22 per cent of the infants born elsewhere who died were so reported. Twenty-eight per cent of the deaths of infants born at the institution were caused by diseases of early infancy, as against 43 per cent of the deaths of infants born elsewhere. The specific infant mortality rate for gastric and intestinal diseases was 196.2 among infants born at the institution, and 42.3 among infants born elsewhere. For diseases of early infancy the specific mortality rate was 119.6 among infants born at the institution, and 84.6 among infants born elsewhere. In other words, the specific infant mortality rate for gastric and intestinal diseases was nearly five times as high among infants born at the institution specified as among other infants, and the rate for diseases of early infancy also was higher in the former case than in the latter. In fact, all the specific mortality rates were higher for infants born in the institution than for infants born elsewhere. (See Table 13.)

TABLE 13.—Deaths during first year of life of infants born out of wedlock in a large maternity hospital and children's institution, and of infants born out of wedlock elsewhere, in 1914, and specific mortality rates, by cause of death.

Cause of death.	Deaths during first year of life of infants born out of wedlock in Boston in 1914.					
	Total deaths.		Deaths of infants born in a large maternity hospital and children's institution.		Deaths of infants born elsewhere.	
	Number.	Specific mortality rates. ^a	Number. ^b	Specific mortality rates. ^c	Number.	Specific mortality rates. ^d
All causes.....	213	251.5	88	421.1	125	195.9
Principal gastric and intestinal diseases.....	68	80.3	41	196.2	27	42.3
Principal respiratory diseases.....	23	27.2	6	28.7	17	26.6
Malformations.....	8	9.4	5	23.9	3	4.7
Diseases of early infancy.....	79	93.3	25	119.6	54	84.6
Principal epidemic diseases.....	19	22.4	6	28.7	13	20.4
All other causes.....	16	18.9	5	23.9	11	17.2

^a Based on known number of illegitimate births in 1914—847.

^b Includes 74 who died at the same institution in which they were born and 14 who died elsewhere. Of those who died elsewhere, 7 died from gastric and intestinal diseases, 2 from respiratory diseases, 1 from a disease of early infancy, 3 from epidemic diseases, and 1 from another cause.

^c Based on 209 illegitimate births at the institution in 1914.

^d Based on 638 illegitimate births in 1914 elsewhere than at the institution specified.

CONDITIONS SURROUNDING BIRTH.

Place of Birth.

There were known to have been born in Boston during the year of the study 847 infants of illegitimate birth. Among them were seven pairs of twins, hence the number of mothers represented was 840. The places of birth of the 847 children were as follows:

Total children.....	847
Private home.....	193
Mother's parental home.....	32
Mother's own home.....	18
Other, or not specified.....	143
Institution.....	651
Hospital (including 23 in small private hospitals)	410
Maternity home.....	214
Public infirmary.....	27
Not reported.....	3

Only 23 per cent of the children were born in private homes, while 77 per cent were born in hospitals or other institutions. This percentage of institution births was very large. According to figures furnished by the registrar of the city of Boston about 30 per cent of all births during the year studied occurred in hospitals or other institutions.

In the majority of cases in which the child was born in a private home it was impossible to determine whether this was the mother's parental home, her own home, the home of relatives or friends, or a lodging house. This information could be secured only in cases in which it was known to social agencies. Of the 193 births in private homes, 32 were known to have taken place in the mother's parental home, and 18 in the mother's own home. "Own home" is here understood to mean a home established by the mother and her husband or the man with whom she was living as married.

There were 410 infants born in hospitals, almost half the total. In 23 of these cases the place of birth was a small private hospital of very limited capacity. The 214 infants born in maternity homes constituted more than one-fourth of the total. Twenty-seven were born in the city infirmary.

The question arises as to how many of the cases cared for by hospitals and maternity homes were in reality Boston cases, and how many had come from outside the city. Table 14 gives the place of confinement and the residence of the mother.

TABLE 14.—*Place of confinement and residence of mothers of infants born out of wedlock in 1914.*

Place of confinement.	Total mothers.	Mothers resident—			
		In Boston.		Elsewhere.	
		Number.	Per cent.	Number.	Per cent.
Total.....	840	482	57.4	358	42.6
Private home.....	192	182	94.8	10	5.2
Hospital.....	407	214	52.6	193	47.4
Maternity home.....	211	61	28.9	150	71.1
Public infirmary.....	27	25	92.6	2	7.4
Not reported.....	3			3	(a)

a Per cent not given because of small number.

Mothers whose residence was Boston constituted 57 per cent of all the mothers. Of those confined at private homes, 95 per cent were Boston residents, but only 53 per cent of those confined at hospitals and 29 per cent of those confined at maternity homes were residents of the city.

Maternity Care.

The 645 mothers who were confined at hospitals, maternity homes, or at the public infirmary received medical and nursing care from the staffs of these institutions. It was impossible to determine in how many of the remaining 195 cases physicians were in attendance. Under the Massachusetts law the practice of midwifery is prohibited, yet the birth-registration law requires the midwife to register all births she attends. In Boston, midwives themselves do not register births, but the cases are reported through doctors, who in many instances are not present at the births.¹⁶ In 45 of the 195 cases in which the birth did not occur in an institution, it was known that hospital externes were in attendance; in 15 of these cases and in 14 others care was known to have been given by visiting nurses.

Complete information was not obtained as to medical examinations and advice given the mother during pregnancy by clinics and hospital out-patient departments. These cases differ from ordinary maternity cases in that mothers illegitimately pregnant require not only medical care and advice but in many cases must be entirely provided for during a considerable period preceding the birth of the child. Private child-caring agencies, maternity homes, the public infirmary, and other social agencies cared for 271 of the 840 mothers previous to confinement. Following are the types of agencies giving care and

¹⁶ Report of the Commission on Immigration on the Problem of Immigration in Massachusetts. House No. 2300, 1914. Boston, 1914. P. 193.

the number cared for by each, those cases in which care was given for less than a week preceding confinement being excluded :

Total receiving care previous to confinement.....	271
Private child-caring agency.....	25
Other agency.....	29
Maternity home.....	167
Public infirmary.....	19
Private child-caring and other agency.....	1
Private child-caring agency and maternity home.....	12
Private child-caring agency and public infirmary.....	3
Private child-caring agency, maternity home, and public infirmary.....	1
Private child-caring and other agency and public infirmary.....	2
Other agency and maternity home.....	7
Other agency and public infirmary.....	4
Maternity home and public infirmary.....	1

The work done by child-caring and other agencies in these cases consisted mainly in securing medical care and advice for the mother, providing her with a place in which she could live during pregnancy, arranging for her support, and securing care during confinement. These agencies in most cases continued care and supervision after the child was born. Of the 84 cases cared for by these agencies, 29 were turned over to maternity homes or to the public infirmary for special care.

The maternity homes and the public infirmary in many cases gave care for a considerable period before the birth of the child. There were 188 cases in which care was given by maternity homes, and 30 cases in which the public infirmary gave care. Three of the maternity-home cases and 5 public-infirmary cases were discharged before the child's birth. The length of time the mothers were in the maternity homes previous to confinement is given in the following list for the 185 cases included above, in which the birth occurred in a maternity home, and for 26 others in which the mother was in the home less than a week previous to confinement :

Total cases in which the birth occurred in a maternity home-----				211
Less than 1 week-----	26	2 months-----		46
1 week, but less than 2-----	14	3-5 months-----		34
2 weeks, but less than 1 month-----	32	6 months and over-----		2
1 month-----	57			

In two-thirds of the maternity-home cases the mother had been in the home a month or more previous to confinement. In two-fifths of the cases she had spent two months or more in the home.

The public infirmary also gave care for considerable periods of time. In the 27 cases in which the birth occurred in this institution the length of residence previous to confinement was as follows :

Total cases in which the birth occurred in the public infirmary-----				27
1 week but less than 2-----	1	2 months-----		6
2 weeks but less than 1 month----	3	3-5 months-----		6
1 month-----	8	Not-reported-----		¹⁷ 3

Of the 24 mothers for whom length of residence in the public infirmary previous to confinement was reported, 20 had been in the institution one month or longer, 12 having been cared for two months or more. Adding together the maternity-home and public-infirmary cases, 159 mothers were cared for by these institutions for one month or more before confinement. These 159 mothers comprised 19 per cent of all the mothers.

The maternity homes and the public infirmary made a practice of keeping mother and child for a considerable period following birth, thus giving the mother a chance to recuperate and to increase her economic efficiency and insuring for the child maternal care under proper conditions. The following list gives the length of time the mother and child remained in a maternity home:

Total cases in which the birth occurred in a maternity home-----				211
Less than 2 weeks-----	11	3-5 months-----		30
2 weeks but less than 1 month----	34	6 months and over-----		7
1 month-----	87	Not reported-----		8
2 months-----	34			

In three-fourths of the maternity-home cases the mother and child remained in the home a month or more. In a third of all the cases they remained two months or longer.

In the public-infirmary cases the length of residence following the child's birth was as follows:

Total cases in which the birth occurred in the public infirmary-----				27
Less than 2 weeks-----	2	3-5 months-----		8
2 weeks but less than 1 month----	3	6 months and over-----		6
1 month-----	2	Not reported-----		2
2 months-----	4			

Of the 25 cases in which length of residence was known, 20 remained a month or more, 18 of them remaining two months or more.

THE CHILD'S PARENTAGE.

The Mother.

The primary sources of information in regard to the mother were data from birth certificates. The items covered in the birth records were race and nativity, residence, age, and occupation. This information was supplemented by records of courts, hospitals, and other

¹⁷ In one instance the mother was known to have been in the infirmary at least a week previous to confinement and so was considered to have received prenatal care from that institution (p. 104). In the other two instances the mother was not included among those known to have received prenatal care.

social agencies. Fairly complete social information was obtained for 335 of the 840 mothers. Information on individual topics was secured from one source or another for varying numbers of cases.

Race, nativity, and years in the United States.

The racial distribution of the 840 mothers of infants known to have been born out of wedlock in Boston during the year was as follows: White, 787; Negro, 52; American Indian, 1. The percentage of colored mothers was nearly four times as high as in the case of mothers of infants of legitimate birth born during the same period.¹⁸

Of the 787 white mothers, 453, or 58 per cent, were born in the United States and 327, or 42 per cent, in foreign countries. The nativity of 7 was not reported. Of the 453 native-born white mothers, 80 per cent were born in Massachusetts, 5 per cent in other New England States, and 15 per cent in other parts of the United States. Of the 327 foreign born, 33 per cent were born in Canada, 33 per cent in Ireland, and the remaining 34 per cent in other countries. The following list gives the nativity of the white mothers:

Total white mothers-----		787
Native born-----	453	
Massachusetts-----	363	Germany ----- 4
Other New England States. 21		Ireland----- 108
Other parts of the United		Italy ----- 18
States-----	69	Russia and Poland ¹⁹ 33
Foreign born-----	327	Scandinavia ----- 14
Canada-----	109	Scotland----- 14
England and Wales-----	15	Other----- 9
France-----	3	Not reported----- 7

Of the 52 colored mothers, 42 were native born and 10 were foreign born. Twenty of the native-born colored mothers were born in Massachusetts, and 22 in the United States outside New England. The foreign-born colored came chiefly from the West Indies. The Indian mother was born in Massachusetts.

The Health Department of the city of Boston gives in its annual report the distribution of births during the year, according to nativity of mother. Table 15 gives this distribution, together with the distribution of illegitimate births during the year and the distribution of legitimate births obtained by subtracting the illegitimate births from the total.

¹⁸ See Table 15, p. 107.

¹⁹ According to classification of the Health Department of the City of Boston.

TABLE 15.—*Race and country of birth of mothers of infants born in wedlock and born out of wedlock in 1914, per cent distribution, and per cent of births illegitimate.*

Race and country of birth of mothers.	Total live births.		Legitimate live births.		Illegitimate live births.		Per cent of births illegitimate. ^c
	Number. ^a	Per cent distribution.	Number. ^b	Per cent distribution.	Number.	Per cent distribution.	
Total.....	19,462	100.0	18,615	100.0	847	100.0	4.4
White.....	19,087	98.1	18,293	98.3	794	93.8	4.2
United States.....	7,017	36.0	6,561	35.2	^d 456	53.8	6.5
Canada.....	1,610	8.3	1,500	8.1	^e 110	13.0	6.8
England and Wales.....	353	1.8	338	1.8	15	1.8	4.2
Ireland.....	2,526	13.0	2,415	13.0	^d 111	13.1	4.4
Italy.....	3,442	17.7	3,424	18.4	18	2.1	.5
Russia and Poland ^f	2,628	13.5	2,594	13.9	34	4.0	1.3
Scandinavia ^f	321	1.6	307	1.7	14	1.7	4.4
Scotland.....	206	1.1	192	1.0	14	1.7	6.8
Foreign, other, and country of birth not reported.....	984	5.1	962	5.2	22	2.6	2.2
Negro.....	356	1.8	304	1.6	52	6.1	14.6
Other.....	19	.1	18	.1	1	.1	(^g)

^a Forty-third Annual Report of the Health Department of the City of Boston for the Year 1914. Boston, 1915. P. 108.

^b Obtained by subtracting number of illegitimate live births from total.

^c Obtained by dividing the number of illegitimate live births of each nativity group by total live births of each group.

^d Includes 3 pairs of twins.

^e Includes 1 pair of twins.

^f Classification of the Health Department of the City of Boston.

^g Rate not computed because of small base.

Of the total births, 98.1 per cent were to white mothers, 1.8 per cent to colored mothers, and 0.1 per cent to mothers belonging to other races. Births to white mothers comprised 98.3 per cent of the legitimate and 93.8 per cent of the illegitimate births, while births to colored mothers comprised 1.6 per cent of the legitimate and 6.1 per cent of the illegitimate. The illegitimacy rate for births to white mothers—that is, the percentage which illegitimate births to white mothers constituted of all births to white mothers—was 4.2, while the rate for births to colored mothers was more than three times as large, 14.6. The very small proportion of colored in the population of the city accounts for the fact that the general illegitimacy rate was only 4.4, as compared with the rate of 4.2 for births to white mothers.

One of the questions of interest in connection with illegitimate birth rates is the influence of the customs and ideals of various nationality groups. Very little reliable evidence as to anthropological factors can be obtained from a statement of comparative numbers of births, especially in view of the complications due to the influence of the new environment upon the various foreign groups. In many cases the situation appears to be the opposite of that found in the

native country, probably because of reactions to the new conditions of life. In order to gain an answer to the question as to the part Americanization plays in the problem of illegitimacy it would be necessary to make an intensive study which would include special consideration of mothers who are the children of foreign-born parents. Without such a study no conclusions can be reached as to the effect of the raising of economic standards, the increased freedom, and the lessening of parental restraint.

It was found that 35.2 per cent of the legitimate births were to white mothers born in the United States, while 53.8 per cent of the illegitimate births were to native white mothers. Illegitimate births to white mothers born in the United States constituted 6.5 per cent of all births to native white mothers. This illegitimacy rate is strikingly high as compared with the general illegitimacy rate of 4.4, and suggests that the problem of illegitimacy is more serious among the native born than among the foreign born. However, the factor of immigration from country to city for the purpose of securing maternity care may account in part for the higher rate among the native born.

The percentage of illegitimate births to mothers born in Canada may be considered disproportionately high, because of the number of women coming to Boston from Canada for confinement. Of the legitimate births, 8.1 per cent were to Canadian mothers, while of the illegitimate births, 13 per cent were to natives of Canada. The illegitimacy rate for births to Canadian mothers was 6.8, as compared with 6.5 for births to native white mothers, and 4.4 for all births.

Births to foreign-born white mothers other than Canadian comprised 55 per cent of all legitimate births, while they were only 27 per cent of the illegitimate births. Illegitimate births to white mothers born in the European countries specified in Table 15 constituted 2.2 per cent of all births to white mothers who were natives of these countries. This percentage of 2.2 is strikingly low in comparison with the percentages of 6.5 for illegitimate births to native white mothers and 6.8 for births to Canadian mothers, and it controverts much of the general opinion in regard to the influence of the foreign born upon this social problem.

The illegitimacy rates for births to mothers who were natives of England and Wales, Ireland, and the Scandinavian countries were very similar, ranging from 4.2 to 4.4. The lowest rate was for births to Italian mothers, 0.5. The illegitimacy rate for births to mothers born in Russia and Poland was 1.3. The rate for births to natives of Scotland was 6.8.

Little information was available as to the length of time the foreign-born mothers had been in the United States at the time of the birth of the child. It was known that of the 337 foreign-born

mothers, including the colored, 23 were pregnant on arrival in this country. Of these, 14 were Canadians, 5 were Russians, and 4 were from other countries. Eleven were known to have been in this country less than two years, and 63 others less than five years, when their children were born. It is interesting to note that of the 23 mothers pregnant on arrival 4 were under 18 years of age at the time of the child's birth.

Residence.

The proportion of mothers who were not residents of Boston was very much higher in the case of illegitimate than of legitimate births. A large number of women came from neighboring towns and cities, from other States, and from Canada to secure maternity care. The term "residence" as used in this section means usual place of residence at the time of the child's birth. In a number of cases the mother changed her residence during the first months of pregnancy in order to conceal her condition or for other reasons. In these cases her new residence was considered as her residence at the time of the child's birth. If, however, the mother had come to Boston shortly before confinement, and simply for the purpose of securing maternity care, her residence was taken to be the place in which she had last maintained a residence.

The following list gives the residence of the mother:

Total mothers	840
Boston	482
Metropolitan district outside Boston	154
Massachusetts outside metropolitan district	142
Other New England States	38
Other parts of the United States	6
Canada ²⁰	14
Other countries	2
Not reported	2

The percentage resident in Boston was 57 and the percentage non-resident 43. According to the report of the health department 7 per cent of all births were to nonresident mothers.²¹ Three-fourths of the mothers of infants of illegitimate birth—76 per cent—were residents of Boston proper or of the metropolitan district. Residents of Massachusetts outside the metropolitan district comprised 17 per cent of all the mothers, making a total of 93 per cent who were residents of the State.

Age.

The age of the mother at the time of the child's birth was reported on the birth certificates in 684 of the 840 cases. In 393 of these

²⁰ Includes 10 who were pregnant on arrival in this country, 1 of whom was a resident but not a native of Canada; 2 not pregnant on arrival; and 2 for whom time in the United States was not reported. Of the last 2, one was a resident but not a native of Canada. Five Canadian mothers who were pregnant on arrival were considered to have established residence in the United States.

²¹ Forty-third Annual Report of the Health Department of the City of Boston for the Year 1914. Boston, 1915. P. 108.

cases and in 108 other instances records of social agencies stated the age of the mother at the birth of the child. The sources from which information as to age of mother was obtained are summarized as follows:

Total mothers	840
Birth certificates only	291
Birth certificates and agency records	393
Agency records only	108
Age not reported	48

In cases in which the reports on age as secured from the two sources did not agree, the age given on the agency records was used in the tabulations.²² In the cases in which the agency record did not state the age of the mother but the birth certificate gave this information, the age given on the birth certificate was used.

Following are the ages of the mothers as secured by the above process:

Total reported	792
Less than 15 years	6
15 years	12
16 years	36
17 years	54
18-20 years	236
21-24 years	261
25-29 years	114
30-34 years	50
35-39 years	22
41 years	1

These figures indicate that the youth of the mother is a fact of very great importance in a consideration of the problem of illegitimacy. A larger number of mothers were but children themselves, 13 per cent of the total reported being under 18 years of age when their babies were born. An additional 30 per cent were between 18 and 20, thus making a total of 43 per cent who were under 21 years of age. One-third—33 per cent—of all the mothers whose ages were reported were between 21 and 24 years of age; 21 per cent were 25 to 34 years of age, and 3 per cent were 35 years of age and over.

In the 18 cases—2 per cent of the total reported—in which the mother was under 16 years of age, action might have been taken against the father under the law making unlawful intercourse with a female child under 16 years of age a felony punishable by life imprisonment.²³ Another law makes it an offense punishable by three years' imprisonment or by fine, or by both, to induce any person under the age of 18 years of chaste life to have unlawful sexual intercourse.²⁴ In 3 cases the man was prosecuted on a charge of rape. In the other cases no legal actions under these provisions were reported,

²² Of the 393 cases, in which information in regard to age of mother was secured both from birth certificates and from agency records, the reports coincided in 76 per cent, differed by one year in 16 per cent, and by more than one year in 8 per cent. The percentage coinciding was higher for the age groups under 21 than for the older age groups.

²³ R. L. 1902, ch. 207, sec. 23.

²⁴ R. L. 1902, ch. 212, sec. 2, as amended by 1910, ch. 424, sec. 4.

though it is possible that such action was taken in some of the cases concerning which little information was obtained.

Civil condition.

Information in regard to the mother's civil condition at the time the child was born was secured for 718 of the 840 mothers. The distribution was as follows:

Total reported	-----	718
Single	667	Divorced, separated, deserting, de- serted ----- 23
Married	12	
Widowed	16	

The mothers who were single constituted 93 per cent of the total for whom this information was secured. Those who were married and presumably living with their husbands comprised 2 per cent of the total, while 5 per cent were widowed, divorced, separated, deserting, or deserted.

One of the single mothers and one of those separated or deserted were illegally married. A total of 15 mothers were living as married with the fathers of their children. Ten of these mothers were single, four were widowed, divorced, separated, or deserted, and the civil condition of one was not reported.

The histories of the mothers were followed so far as possible through agency records for the first year of the child's life. Information in regard to marriage of the mother after the child's birth is, therefore, limited to the one year. A total of 73—9 per cent of all the mothers—were reported as having married within a year after the child's birth. Considering the fact that there was a large number of cases in which it was not known whether or not the mother had married, her subsequent history being unknown to social agencies, the per cent known to have married during the first year of the child's life was high.

Of the 73 mothers known to have married, 31 had married the fathers of the children; 24 were known to have married other men; and in 18 cases the agencies did not report as to whether or not the men whom the women married were the fathers of the children. It is particularly interesting to note that one-third of the mothers who married during the first year were known to have married men other than the fathers of their children.

Physical condition.

It was possible to secure some information as to the physical condition of the mother during the first year after the birth of the child for 473 of the 840 cases. Considerable attention was paid by many of the agencies and institutions to examination for venereal diseases. Since these diseases are of special importance to this study, the fol-

lowing list gives prominence to them, combining all other diseases and disabilities under one general head.

Total mothers.....	840
Total reported.....	473
Physical condition good, so far as known	350
Diagnosis of syphilis.....	14
Diagnosis of gonorrhea.....	17
Diagnosis of syphilis and gonorrhea	8
Diagnosis of gonorrhea and suspected syphilis.....	1
Suspected syphilis.....	9
Suspected gonorrhea	1
Other diseases or disabilities	62
Died during the year.....	2

Hence, poor physical condition was reported for 114 mothers, 24 per cent of those for whom such information was secured, or 14 per cent of all mothers. A total of 40 had been diagnosed as having venereal infection, 8 per cent of those for whom physical condition was reported, or 5 per cent of all the 840 mothers. In 10 cases the mother was suspected of having venereal infection, but diagnoses had not been secured.

Mental condition.

The social histories of 488 mothers—58 per cent of all—were sufficiently complete to justify their classification according to mental condition. Facilities for mental examination are unusually available in Boston, and agencies are aware of the importance of expert diagnosis in all cases in which there is any reason to suspect that the mental condition is not normal.

The following list gives the distribution of the cases according to the mentality of the mothers.

Total mothers.....	480
Total reported.....	488
Normal, so far as known.....	382
Subnormal or abnormal.....	16
Insane.....	6
Feeble-minded (diagnosed) ..	43
Probably subnormal or feeble-minded, but not diagnosed ..	41

The term "subnormal" includes cases diagnosed as high-grade feeble-minded but not committable, or defective or subnormal but not feeble-minded, while the term "abnormal" includes those diagnosed as psychopathic or constitutionally inferior, defective delinquent, or morally defective, and those having mental disorder but not definitely insane. The mothers whose mental condition was diagnosed as subnormal or abnormal constituted 3 per cent of the 488 mothers whose mentality was reported and 2 per cent of the total 840 mothers. Mothers who were insane comprised 1 per cent of those whose mentality was reported. Mothers who had been diagnosed feeble-minded comprised 9 per cent of those whose mentality was reported and 5 per cent of all mothers. In 8 per cent of the reported

cases—5 per cent of all cases—the mothers were probably subnormal or feeble-minded, but mental examination had not been made.

Including only those whose mental condition had been diagnosed, a total of 65 mothers—13 per cent of all whose mental condition was reported, or 8 per cent of the total number of mothers—were subnormal, mentally abnormal, insane, or feeble-minded. That more than one-eighth of the mothers whose mentality was known had been diagnosed as not normal mentally indicates the importance of this factor in the problem of illegitimate maternity.

A comparison of the mother's mentality and age at the time of the child's birth is of interest, as indicating whether defective mentality is more prevalent among the younger or among the older mothers.

TABLE 16.—*Mental condition and age of mothers of infants born out of wedlock in 1914.*

Mental condition.	Total mothers.	Age of mother at birth of child.		
		Under 18 yrs.	18 yrs. and over.	Not reported.
Total.....	840	108	684	48
Normal, so far as known.....	382	59	322	1
Subnormal or abnormal.....	16	5	11	.....
Insane.....	6	.....	6	.....
Feeble-minded (diagnosed).....	43	8	35	.....
Probably subnormal or feeble-minded, but not diagnosed.....	41	6	35	.....
Not reported.....	352	30	275	47

According to the data in Table 16, 12 per cent of the mothers who were under 18 years of age at the birth of the child were diagnosed subnormal, abnormal, feeble-minded, or insane, as against 8 per cent of the 684 mothers 18 years of age and over. The percentages diagnosed feeble-minded were 7 for the younger age group and 5 for the older. Similarly, the proportion probably subnormal or feeble-minded, but not diagnosed, was higher for the mothers under 18 years—6 per cent as compared with 5 per cent for those over 18 years. In the absence of data on the age of the mother at the birth of the first child out of wedlock, in the cases where the child of the study was not the first, no exact statement can be made as to the relation between defective mentality and illegitimate maternity. However, it would seem evident that defective or disordered mentality was more prevalent among the younger age group, even though the proportion should be discounted to some extent by the fact that agencies were more likely to insist on mental examinations of the younger mothers. This greater prevalence is no doubt partly accounted for by the fact that feeble-minded women who have proved to be in need of custodial care have been removed from the community as far as the capacity of the institutions has permitted.

That the Massachusetts institutions for the care of the feeble-minded are not adequate to the needs is evidenced by the following data showing the dispositions of the mothers diagnosed feeble-minded. This covers treatment during pregnancy or during the child's first year of life.

Of the 43 diagnosed feeble-minded, there were—

- 6 admitted to an institution for the feeble-minded.
- 13 applications made for admission to an institution for the feeble-minded.
- 1 admitted to a hospital for the insane.
- 7 provided for in public infirmary (including 4 so provided for pending admission to an institution for the feeble-minded to which application had been made).
- 1 placed at housework, under supervision of agency (and 1 other for whom application to an institution was made).
- 3 otherwise provided for by agencies.
- 12 for whom treatment was not reported.

Hence, one-sixth of the feeble-minded mothers were given permanent custodial care and another one-sixth were provided for temporarily in an institution. In almost one-third of the cases application had been made for admission to an institution; but the crowded condition of the Massachusetts schools for the feeble-minded made it impossible for these women to be given care, and they remained in the community. Of the remaining third, a few were supervised by agencies; and the provision made for the others, if any assistance had been given, was not reported.

Of the 6 insane mothers 3 were admitted to a hospital for the insane during the months of pregnancy or before the child was a year old. Thus, a total of 17 of the 840 mothers became inmates of institutions for the feeble-minded or insane before the end of the child's first year of life, or were temporarily cared for in a public infirmary, and 13 others were placed on the waiting lists of institutions for the feeble-minded.

Character.

The social histories of 495 of the 840 mothers were sufficiently complete to justify their classification according to character. Of these, 285 were reported as good so far as known. Detrimental characteristics were reported as follows:

Total reported as having detrimental characteristics-----			210
Alcoholism-----	5	Immorality and other de-	
Immorality-----	140	linquencies-----	10
Other delinquencies-----	6	Otherwise poor character----	42
Alcoholism and immorality-----	5		
Alcoholism, immorality, and other			
delinquencies-----	2		

Under "immorality" were included only sex irregularities other than those connected with the cases of illegitimate maternity included in the study. The number for whom immorality was reported—157,

or 32 per cent of those whose character was reported and 19 per cent of all the mothers—implies a high percentage of cases in which there had been infractions of the moral code before the mother became pregnant with this child. Eleven mothers so reported were known to have been professional prostitutes. It is probable that only a minimum of the cases of immorality were reported in the histories of the mothers.

Twelve mothers were stated to be alcoholic, 7 of them also being immoral. In 18 cases other delinquencies were reported; in 12 of these cases the mother was also reported as alcoholic or immoral, or both. In 42 cases no definite delinquencies were reported, but the mother's character was stated to be bad. The histories of a total of 25 per cent of the 840 mothers—42 per cent of those for whom information on this point was obtained—gave evidence of immorality, alcoholism, or otherwise bad character.

The proportion of the mothers under 18 years of age who were reported as being of poor character was greater than the proportion among the women 18 years of age and over, 34 per cent of the younger mothers being so reported, as against 25 per cent of those 18 years of age and over. Alcoholism was negligible among the younger mothers. Immorality, on the other hand, appeared to be as prevalent among the mothers under 18 years of age as among the older women. It is especially significant that 4 of the 11 reported as being professional prostitutes were not yet 18 years of age.

Other children.

The histories of 730 of the 840 mothers gave data, shown in Table 17, in regard to other children or were sufficiently complete to warrant the assumption that absence of information as to other children indicated that there had been none. The proportion of these mothers known to have had other children is a minimum statement.

Seventy-two mothers—10 per cent of those for whom this information was available, or 9 per cent of all the mothers—were known to have had previous illegitimate births.

TABLE 17.—*Age and previous record as to illegitimate births to mothers of infants born out of wedlock in 1914.*

Age at birth of child.	Mothers of infants born out of wedlock in Boston during year.			
	Total.	Who had previous illegitimate births.	Who had no previous illegitimate births, so far as known.	No report as to previous illegitimate births.
Total.....	840	72	658	110
Under 18 years.....	108	4	95	9
18 years and over.....	684	65	539	80
Not reported.....	48	3	24	21

Four of the 72 mothers having had previous illegitimate births were less than 18 years of age at the time the child of the study was born. These constituted 4 per cent of the mothers under 18 years of age. Each of the 4 mothers had had one previous illegitimate birth.

The 65 mothers 18 years of age or over who were known to have had previous illegitimate births comprised 11 per cent of the mothers of this age group for whom there were reports, or 10 per cent of all the mothers 18 years of age or over.

The number of previous illegitimate births the mothers had were as follows:

Total mothers.....	840
Total reported.....	730
None	658
One	51
Two	18
Four	1
Six	1
Seven	1

Table 18 gives the civil condition of the mother at the time of the birth of the child of the study, and whether or not there had been previous illegitimate births.

TABLE 18.—*Civil condition and previous record as to illegitimate births to mothers of infants born out of wedlock in 1914.*

Civil condition of mother at time of birth of child.	Mothers of infants born out of wedlock in Boston during year.			
	Total.	Who had previous illegitimate births.	Who had no previous illegitimate births, so far as known.	No report as to previous illegitimate births.
Total.....	840	72	658	110
Single.....	667	63	592	12
Married, widowed, divorced, deserting, deserted.....	51	8	41	2
Not reported.....	122	1	a 25	96

a Includes 2 whose civil condition at time of birth of child was not known, but who had had children of legitimate birth.

A total of 63 of the single mothers, or 10 per cent of the 655 whose previous record as to illegitimate births was reported, were known to have been the mothers of children born out of wedlock before the year of the study. Eight of the 51 mothers who were married, widowed, divorced, separated, or deserted were known to have had previous illegitimate births. Of these 51 mothers who had been married, 32 were known to have had children born in wedlock before this child was born, 10 of them having had one; 8, two; 5, three; 5, four; and 4, five or more children of legitimate birth.

The proportion of mothers known to have had previous illegitimate births (see Table 19) was considerably larger among those below

normal mentally (including those probably subnormal or feeble-minded, but not diagnosed) than among mothers of normal mentality, so far as known. Although this may be partly accounted for by the fact that agencies are more likely to arrange for mental examinations in the case of mothers illegitimately pregnant for the second time than in other cases, yet the figures are of considerable significance. Twenty-six per cent of the 106 mothers below normal mentally had had previous illegitimate births, while only 10 per cent of the 382 mothers whose mentality was normal so far as known had previously been illegitimately pregnant. Of the 43 mothers diagnosed feeble-minded almost two-fifths had records of previous illegitimate births.

There were 322 mothers 18 years of age and over whose mentality was normal, so far as known. Of these, 37—11 per cent—were known to have had previous illegitimate births. Twenty-five of the 87 mothers of the same age group who were mentally below normal—29 per cent—had had previous illegitimate pregnancies.

To state in other terms the relation between mentality and previous illegitimate births, not quite one-eighth of the 658 mothers who had had no previous illegitimate births so far as known were below normal mentally, while more than three-eighths of the 72 who had been illegitimately pregnant previously were mentally below normal. As before stated, these figures are subject to some qualification because of the greater frequency with which mental examinations are given mothers illegitimately pregnant for the second time.

TABLE 19.—*Mentality and previous record as to illegitimate births to mothers of infants born out of wedlock in 1914.*

Mentality of mother.	Mothers of infants born out of wedlock in Boston during year.			
	Total.	Who had previous illegitimate births.	Who had no previous illegitimate births, so far as known.	No report as to previous illegitimate births.
Total.....	840	72	658	110
Normal, so far as known.....	382	39	341	2
Subnormal or abnormal.....	16	5	11	.....
Insane.....	6	.....	6	.....
Feeble-minded (diagnosed).....	43	17	26	.....
Probably subnormal or feeble-minded, but not diagnosed.....	41	6	34	1
Not reported.....	332	5	240	107

The four maternity homes in Boston and at least two of the hospitals included in the study make it a practice to refuse admission to women pregnant out of wedlock for a second or subsequent confinement. It is felt that the girls who have not had previous illegitimate births are the more promising and warrant the greater amount of

constructive effort. It is also believed that the presence in the same institution of girls pregnant for the first time and of repeated offenders against the moral code is demoralizing to the former. The figures as to mentality show that a larger percentage of women illegitimately pregnant for the first time than of women having had previous illegitimate pregnancies are of normal mentality and are therefore capable of benefiting by the type of training given in maternity homes. However, the number of illegitimate pregnancies is not necessarily a test of character, as shown by the fact that 15 per cent of the mothers illegitimately pregnant for the first time were known to have been immoral, alcoholic, or otherwise delinquent, 13 per cent having been immoral. (See Table 20.)

TABLE 20.—*Character and previous record as to illegitimate births to mothers of infants born out of wedlock in 1914.*

Character of mother.	Mothers of infants born out of wedlock in Boston during year.			
	Total.	Who had previous illegitimate births.	Who had no previous illegitimate births, so far as known.	No report as to previous illegitimate births.
Total.....	840	a 72	658	110
Good, so far as known.....	285	.....	282	3
Alcoholic.....	5	.....	5	.....
Immoral.....	140	64	75	1
Otherwise delinquent.....	6	.....	6	.....
Alcoholic and immoral.....	5	2	3	.....
Immoral and otherwise delinquent.....	10	3	7	.....
Alcoholic, immoral, and otherwise delinquent.....	2	2	.....	.....
Otherwise poor.....	42	.....	42	.....
Not reported.....	345	1	238	106

a By definition, all those who had previous illegitimate births, and whose social histories were sufficiently complete to justify their classification as to character, were classed as immoral.

Because only a year elapsed between the birth of the child of the study and the end of the period covered, information in regard to subsequent children of these mothers is limited to reports of illegitimate pregnancies that occurred before this child was 1 year old. Sixteen of the 840 mothers—2 per cent—were known to have become illegitimately pregnant before the end of the year. Two of these mothers were under 18 years of age. Of the 14 who were 18 years of age and over or whose ages were not reported, 5 were known also to have had previous illegitimate births. It is interesting to note that 13 of the 16 mothers were single women, 2 were separated, and the civil condition of 1 was not reported. Only one was living as married with the father of the child included in the study. That 2 per cent of the mothers were known to have again become illegitimately pregnant before one year had elapsed after the birth of the

infant studied indicates the need for constructive social work in such cases.

Mode of living.

The place in which the mother made her home before the birth of the child was reported for 533 of the 840 mothers. Of these mothers, 193—36 per cent of those reported—were living in their parental homes. The 26 who had been married and were living in homes of their own comprised 5 per cent. A total of 46, or 9 per cent, were living in the homes of relatives or friends, and 21, or 4 per cent, were boarding. One of the mothers had been placed in an institution before the birth of her child. The largest number, 246, or 46 per cent of all whose mode of living was known, were living in their places of employment previous to the birth of the child, 233 of them being employed at housework.

As was to be expected, the largest proportion living in their parental homes or with relatives or friends was in the age group under 18 years. But even among these very young mothers, only 81 per cent of the total reported were living in homes from which they could expect help before the birth of their children and assistance in providing homes for them. Of the mothers 18 to 20 years of age whose mode of living was known, 59 per cent were living in the homes of their parents or with relatives or friends. Of those 21 years of age and over, 28 per cent were living in their parental homes or in the homes of relatives or friends.

Conversely, the proportion living in the place of employment was highest among those 21 years of age and over. Only 16 per cent of the mothers under 18 years of age whose mode of living was reported were living in their places of employment; of those 18 to 20 years, 36 per cent were thus living; while 58 per cent of the mothers 21 years of age and over were living at their places of employment.

Only 1 of the mothers under 18 years of age was living in her own home, and 1 was boarding. Two of the mothers between 18 and 20 years were in their own homes, and 5 were boarding. Among the older women, 22 were in their own homes, 15 were boarding, and 1 was in an institution.

Character of parental home.

The data here given upon the character of the mother's parental home are of interest mainly from the point of view of the possibilities of assistance in the care of the child by the mother's family. Because of the necessary limitations of this study, the facts presented are understatements of the true conditions—to how great an extent can not be determined.

Information in regard to the mother's parental home was available in only a small proportion of cases. It was known that 8

of the mothers were themselves of illegitimate birth. Two of these and 8 others were known to have been brought up by foster parents.

It was known that before the birth of the child both parents of 37 of the 840 mothers had died. In 153 cases, one of the parents had died. In 27 of the cases in which one or both parents were dead, and in 50 others, the mother's parents had never been in the United States. The parents of 21 mothers were divorced or separated. Hence, in a total of 261 cases—31 per cent of the 840 mothers—it was reported that one or both of the mother's parents were dead, were not in this country, or were divorced or separated. Since this information was known only for those mothers who had come to the attention of social agencies, this proportion of almost one-third is a minimum statement.

Reports as to the character of the mother's parents were secured for only 229 mothers. The parents of 122 were of good character so far as known. One or both parents of 107 of the mothers were reported to be alcoholic, immoral, or of otherwise poor character. The probability is that the proportion of cases in which the parents were of bad character was much greater among those known to social agencies than among others. It was, therefore, considered more fair to compare the number of cases in which the character of the parents was reported as poor with the total number of mothers, rather than with the number for whom reports were secured.

The 107 mothers, one or both of whose parents were reported to be of poor character, comprised 13 per cent of the total 840 mothers. In 21 of these 107 cases, one or both parents were reported to be immoral; in 47 cases, alcoholic; in 10 cases, immoral and alcoholic; and in 29 cases the parents were reported as of otherwise poor character.

Almost one-third of the mothers were known to have lost one or both parents, or to lack normal homes because the parents were not in the United States, or were divorced or separated, and at least one-eighth of the mothers had suffered from bad home conditions due to alcoholism, immorality, or otherwise poor character of the parents. These figures indicate how impossible it is in many cases for the mother to rely upon the most natural source of help in the care of the child.

Relation to social agencies.

Through checking with the records of social agencies, it was found that in 112 cases the mother herself, her parents, or her children had been under the prolonged care of social agencies before the birth of the infant born during the year of the study. This number, which excluded cases in which the only care given was on account of the mother's pregnancy, represented 13 per cent of all the 840

mothers. The mother herself had been under care in 58 of the 112 cases. In 11 of these instances the mother's parents had been under care, in 9 cases her children, and in 2 instances care had been given both to the mother's parents and to her children.

The mother's parents had received care in 38 instances, including 15 cases in which the mother or her children had also received care.

The children of 29 mothers, who had not themselves received care and whose parents had not been aided, had been cared for by agencies. In 13 other cases the mother's children had been under agency care, hence there was a total of 42 cases in which the children had received such assistance.

The following is a summary of the cases in which agency care was given before the birth of the child of study:

Mother given care	36
Mother's parents given care	23
Mother's children given care	29
Mother and her parents given care	11
Mother and her children given care	9
Mother, her parents, and her children given care	2
Mother's parents and her children given care	2

Total cases in which previous agency care was given..... 112

The agencies that had given care to the 58 mothers were as follows:

Total cases in which the mother was given care-----			58
Child-caring agency -----	23	Child-caring agency and other_	1
Correctional institution or court__	15	Correctional institution or	
Other-----	12	court and other-----	2
Child-caring agency and correc-			
tional institution or court-----	5		

A total of 29 mothers—3.5 per cent of all the mothers—were known to have been wards of child-caring agencies. Twenty-two mothers—2.6 per cent—had been in correctional institutions or had been before the courts.

Occupation previous to birth of child.

As in respect to age, data in regard to the occupation of the mother previous to the child's birth were obtained from two sources—birth certificates and records of social agencies. The numbers of cases in which reports were obtained from these sources were as follows:

Total mothers-----	840		
Birth certificates only-----	205	Agency records only-----	136
Birth certificates and agency rec-		Occupation not reported-----	149
ords-----	350		

The occupation of the mother was reported on the birth certificate in 555 of the 840 cases. In 350 of these, records of social agencies also

stated the mother's occupation. In 136 other cases the birth certificate did not give the occupation, but this information was reported in the records of social agencies. Hence, agency records gave information on the occupations of 486 of the 840 mothers.

In cases in which the occupation of the mother was reported both on the birth certificate of the child and on agency records, and in which the reports did not agree, the occupation given on the agency records was used in the tabulations.²⁵ "Occupation" refers to the mother's usual occupation previous to the child's birth.

Table 21 gives the occupation of the mother as reported by agencies or, in cases in which agency reports did not give information, as stated on the birth certificate.

TABLE 21.—*Occupation and age of mothers of infants born out of wedlock in 1914.*

Occupation previous to birth of child. ^a	Total mothers whose occupations were reported.	Age at birth of child.		
		Under 18 yrs.	18 yrs. and over.	Not reported.
Total	691	92	583	16
Not gainfully employed	98	30	66	2
No occupation	38	^b 7	^b 30	1
Attending school	25	20	5	.....
Housewives	35	3	31	1
Professional persons	5	.....	5	.....
Clerks and kindred workers	68	9	59	.....
Bookkeepers, cashiers, stenographers, typewriters	17	2	15	.....
Clerks (except clerks in stores)	5	.....	5	.....
Clerks in stores and saleswomen	32	3	29	.....
Messenger, bundle and office girls	5	4	1	.....
Telephone and telegraph operators	9	.....	9	.....
Semiskilled workers	192	31	158	3
Dressmakers and seamstresses (not in factory)	9	.....	9	.....
Laundry operatives	13	.....	12	1
Nurses (not trained)	8	.....	8	.....
Semiskilled factory operatives	159	31	126	2
Other	3	.....	3	.....
Servants	326	22	293	11
Charwomen, cleaners, laundresses	11	1	10	.....
Waitresses	50	4	^c 43	3
Domestic servants	246	16	^c 222	8
Other	19	1	18	.....
Other	2	.....	2	.....

^a Classification is based on that followed by Alba M. Edwards in "Social-economic groups of the United States." Quarterly publications of the American Statistical Association, Vol. XV (June, 1917), pp. 643-661.

^b Includes 1 prostitute.

^c Includes 1 also a prostitute.

²⁵ Of the 350 cases in which information in regard to occupation of mother was secured, both from birth certificates and from agency records, the reports coincided in 74 per cent. The greatest discrepancies between the two reports were in the "no occupation" and the "housewife" groups.

Occupation was reported either by social agencies or on the child's birth certificate for a total of 691 of the 840 mothers. In 98 cases, or 14 per cent of the total reported, the mother was not gainfully employed. Thirty-eight of these mothers—5 per cent of the total—were reported as having no occupation. In 25 cases—4 per cent—the mother was attending school. Mothers who were housewives numbered 35—5 per cent of all reported.

Five mothers were engaged in professional pursuits. Three of these were teachers, 1 was a trained nurse, and 1 an actress. In 68 cases, or 10 per cent, the mother was engaged in clerical or kindred work. A total of 192 mothers—28 per cent of all reported—were semiskilled workers; most of these (159) were employed in factories.

Almost half the mothers reported—326, or 47 per cent—were employed in domestic or personal service. Eleven were charwomen, cleaners, and laundresses; 50 were waitresses in hotels or restaurants; 246 were servants in private families; and 19 were employed in other kinds of personal service. Two mothers were engaged in occupations not specified in Table 21; 1 was a lodging-house keeper, and 1 an agricultural laborer.

The data given in Table 22 shows that a total of 593 mothers—86 per cent of those whose occupations were reported—had been gainfully employed before the birth of the child. This percentage was twice that among all women in the general population aged 14 to 44 years. It would have been more significant to compare the percentage of mothers gainfully employed with the percentage of single, widowed, and divorced women aged 14 to 44 years who were gainfully employed, but these figures could not be obtained. Of the 224 mothers 16 to 20 years of age at the time of the child's birth whose occupations were reported, 83 per cent were engaged in gainful occupations. Only 60 per cent of the women 16 to 20 years of age in the general population were gainfully employed. The percentage of mothers 21 to 44 years of age gainfully employed was 89, as against 41 per cent among all women of this age group in Boston.

TABLE 22.—*Per cent gainfully employed of mothers of infants born out of wedlock in 1914, and of all women of childbearing age, by age periods.*

Age.	Mothers of infants born out of wedlock.						Women in Boston 14 to 44 years of age.		
	Total.	Occupation previous to child's birth reported.				Occupation not reported.	Total. ^a	Gainfully employed.	
		Total.	Gainfully employed.		Not gainfully employed.			Num-ber. ^b	Per cent.
			Num-ber.	Per cent.					
Total.....	840	691	593	85.8	98	149	187,398	80,388	42.9
14-15 years.....	18	16	7	43.7	9	2	10,850	1,985	18.3
16-20 years.....	326	270	224	83.0	46	56	30,325	18,317	60.4
21-44 years.....	448	389	348	89.5	41	59	146,223	60,086	41.1
Not reported.....	48	16	14	.....	2	32	.....	.....	.....

^a The number of women in Boston in 1910 aged 15 to 19 years was 28,792, and the number aged 20 to 44 years was 153,031. (Thirteenth Census of the United States, 1910: Vol. II, Population, p. 869.) Unpublished census figures give the number aged 14 as 5,575, and the number 15 years of age as 5,275. In the figures for school population (Vol. I, p. 1160) the 1910 census gives the number of women in Boston 15 to 20 years of age as 35,600. Subtracting from this the number aged 15 to 19, it was found that the number of women 20 years of age was 6,808. Subtracting the number aged 15 from the 15 to 19 age group, and adding the number aged 20, the number of women aged 16 to 20 was secured. The number aged 21 to 44 was similarly obtained.

^b Thirteenth Census of the United States, 1910: Vol. IV, Population, pp. 540-541.

It is impossible to evaluate occupation as a possible causative factor in illegitimate maternity without comparing the occupational distribution of the mothers with the occupational distribution of all the women in the locality studied. Table 23 makes this comparison for women gainfully employed. It must be remembered that the occupations of the mothers refer to occupations previous to the time when the children were born.

TABLE 23.—*Occupational distribution of mothers of infants born out of wedlock in 1914, and of gainfully employed women in 1910.*

Occupation.	Gainfully employed mothers of infants born out of wedlock.		Gainfully employed women in Boston, 1910. ^a	
	Number.	Per cent distribution.	Number.	Per cent distribution.
Total.....	593	100.0	96,326	100.0
Proprietors, officials, managers.....	1	.2	5,008	5.2
Clerks and kindred workers.....	68	11.4	24,588	25.5
Bookkeepers, cashiers, stenographers, typewriters.....	17	2.9	10,760	11.2
Clerks (except clerks in stores).....	5	.8	2,911	3.0
Clerks in stores and saleswomen.....	32	5.4	8,138	8.4
Messenger, bundle, and office girls.....	5	.8	635	.7
Telephone and telegraph operators.....	9	1.5	1,685	1.7
Other.....			459	.5

^a Total women 10 years of age and over engaged in each specified occupation in Boston, 1910. Thirteenth Census of the United States, 1910: Vol. IV, Population, pp. 152-164.

TABLE 23.—Occupational distribution of mothers of infants born out of wedlock in 1914, and of gainfully employed women in 1910—Continued.

Occupation.	Gainfully employed mothers of infants born out of wedlock.		Gainfully employed women in Boston, 1910. ^a	
	Number	Per cent distribution.	Number	Per cent distribution.
Skilled workers.....			1,896	2.0
Semiskilled workers.....	192	32.4	31,137	32.3
Dressmakers and seamstresses (not in factory).....	9	1.5	6,568	6.8
Laundry operatives.....	13	2.2	1,370	1.4
Milliners and millinery dealers.....	2	.3	1,840	1.9
Midwives and nurses (not trained).....	8	1.4	1,797	1.9
Semiskilled factory operatives.....	159	26.8	15,504	16.1
Other.....	1	.2	4,058	4.2
Laborers.....	1	.2	730	.8
Servants.....	326	55.0	24,319	25.2
Charwomen, cleaners, janitors, laundresses.....	11	1.9	3,967	4.1
Waitresses.....	50	8.4	3,239	3.3
Servants (domestic).....	246	41.5	17,113	17.8
Other servants.....	19	3.2		
Public officials.....			68	.1
Semiofficial public employees.....			5	(^b)
Professional persons.....	5	.8	8,575	8.9

^b Less than one-tenth of 1 per cent.

Of mothers of children born out of wedlock the percentage engaged in clerical occupations previous to the birth of their children was less than half the percentage of all women so employed in Boston. Only 3 per cent of the gainfully employed mothers were bookkeepers, cashiers, stenographers, or typewriters, as against 11 per cent of all women wage earners who were so employed. Similarly the clerks in stores and saleswomen represented only 5 per cent of the mothers, while 8 per cent of all women wage earners were so employed.

Almost one-third of the gainfully employed women in the city were classed as semiskilled workers. The percentage of mothers in this group previous to the birth of their children was the same as the percentage of all women. Within this group the most significant comparison is that for factory operatives, 27 per cent of the mothers being so employed, while only 16 per cent of the wage-earning women were reported as engaged in this occupation.

The most striking discrepancy in the percentages of gainfully employed mothers and of all women engaged in gainful occupations occurs in the domestic and personal service group of occupations. More than half the mothers—55 per cent—were so employed before the birth of the children studied, while only one-fourth of all wage-earning women in the city—25 per cent—were engaged in occupa-

tions so classified. Within this group the percentage of mothers who were waitresses was 8, as against 3 per cent of all gainfully employed women. The census reports do not classify separately servants in private families. However, only 18 per cent of the gainfully employed women in Boston were employed as servants, exclusive of charwomen, cleaners, janitors, laundresses, and waitresses, while 42 per cent of the gainfully employed mothers were employed in domestic service in private families, a total of 45 per cent being employed as domestics or other servants.

The mother's occupation has great significance in connection with the care of the child. That 86 per cent of those whose occupations were reported had been wage earners before the child's birth, indicates a degree of economic independence which might be considered encouraging from the point of view of the possibilities of providing for the child's support. However, practically all of them had been engaged in occupations paying wages which, at the time the study was made, were at best barely sufficient for the support of the girl herself. The resources of few of the mothers were sufficient to meet the added financial burden of the care of the infant, coupled with the necessity of nursing him. The fact that so large a proportion of mothers were wage earners indicates, too, that they came from families of small or moderate incomes, unable in many cases to provide substantial aid for the mothers.

The Father

Race and nativity.

Because of the absence of any information regarding the father on the birth certificates for children born out of wedlock, definite reports as to race and nativity of father were available in only a small proportion of cases—those in which records of social agencies contained this information. However, in regard to race, it was assumed that both parents were white if the child was white. In 794 of the 840 cases the father was white, in 23 cases the father was known to be colored, and the race of 23 fathers was not known.

Table 24 compares the race of the father and the race of the mother.

TABLE 24.—*Race of fathers and mothers of infants born out of wedlock in 1914.*

Race of mother.	Total fathers.	Race of father.		
		White.	Negro.	Not reported.
Total.....	840	794	23	23
White.....	787	786	1	.....
Negro.....	52	8	22	22
American Indian.....	1	.....	.....	1

In 786 of the 840 cases both parents were known to be white; in 22 cases both were colored. In 9 instances it was known that one parent was white and the other colored, there being 1 case of a white mother and colored father, and 8 in which the mother was colored and the father white. The race of the father was not reported in 22 cases in which the mother was colored, and in the 1 case in which she was an Indian.

The records of social agencies gave information in regard to the nativity of only 234 of the 840 fathers. Of these 234, 110 were born in the United States, 28 in Canada, and 96 in other countries. Table 25 compares the nativity of the father with that of the mother for the cases in which the birthplaces of both were known.

TABLE 25.—*Nativity of fathers and mothers of infants born out of wedlock in 1914.*

Nativity of mother.	Total fathers whose nativity was reported.	Nativity of father.		
		United States.	Canada.	Other.
Total.....	234	110	28	96
United States.....	116	86	11	19
Canada.....	34	11	15	8
Other.....	84	13	2	a 69

a In 56 of the 69 cases the nativity of the father and the mother was the same.

In 157 cases, or 67 per cent of the 234 in which the nativity of both parents was reported, the father and the mother were born in the same country. In 86 instances—over one-third of the known cases—both parents were natives of the United States. Besides these, there were 54 cases in which one parent was born in the United States. Both parents were born in Canada in 15 cases, and one parent in 32 cases. Of those born in other foreign countries, both parents were natives of the same country in 56 cases, and in 13 cases they were from different countries.

Age.

The records of social agencies gave the ages of 285 of the fathers. More than half the fathers whose ages were known—54 per cent—were under 25 years of age. One-fifth of them—21 per cent, were minors, being less than 21 years of age at the time the child was born. In 11 instances—4 per cent—the father was under 18 years of age. The youth of so large a proportion of the fathers of these children

is of especial significance in connection with the question of the father's assumption of his duties toward the child.

It is of interest to compare the age of the father and the age of the mother, as shown in Table 26.

TABLE 26.—*Ages of fathers and mothers of infants born out of wedlock in 1914.*

Age of mother.	Total fathers whose ages were reported.	Age of father.							
		Under 18 yrs.	18-20 yrs.	21-24 yrs.	25-29 yrs.	30-34 yrs.	35-39 yrs.	40-49 yrs.	60-69 yrs.
Total.....	285	11	49	94	71	31	16	11	2
Under 18 years.....	42	7	13	15	5	1	.....	.....	1
18-20 years.....	87	3	30	33	15	4	2	.....	.....
21-24 years.....	98	.....	4	40	32	13	5	3	1
25-29 years.....	35	1	2	5	16	5	4	2	.....
30-34 years.....	13	.....	.....	.....	1	6	3	3	.....
35-39 years.....	7	.....	.....	1	.....	2	1	3	.....
40 years and over.....	1	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	1	.....	.....
Not reported.....	2	.....	.....	.....	2	.....	.....	.....	.....

The age of the father was known in 42 of the cases in which the mother was less than 18 years old. In 7 of these cases the father also was under 18, and in 13 he was between 18 and 20 years of age; hence, in 7 per cent of all cases in which the father's age was known the mother was under the age of 18 and the father was under the age of 21 years. In 20 of the 42 cases in which the mother was under 18 the father was between 21 and 29 years of age. In one case the mother was less than 18 and the father between 30 and 34, and in another case of a child mother the father was over 60 years old.

Among the cases of older mothers it is interesting to note 1 in which the mother was between 25 and 29 years of age and the father under 18, and 2 in which the mother was between 25 and 29 years of age and the father between 18 and 20.

In a total of 100 of the 285 reported cases—25 per cent—mother and father belonged in the same age group. In 89 cases—31 per cent—the father was in the age group next higher than that of the mother. Hence, in two-thirds of the reported cases the father and mother were in the same age group or the father was within the group next higher than that of the mother. There were 74 cases—26 per cent—in which the father belonged in a higher age group more than once removed from the mother's age group. The father was in a younger age group than the mother in 20 of 285 reported cases—7 per cent; in some of these cases there was considerable difference in the ages of the parents.

Civil condition of father and social relationship of father and mother.

Civil condition was reported for only 237 of the fathers. Of these 165 were single, 49 married, and 23 widowed, divorced, or separated.

It is probable that the proportion of men in the last two groups would be found to be an overstatement if the civil condition of all the 840 fathers were known. These 72, the majority of whom presumably had other families legally dependent upon them, constituted 30 per cent of those whose civil condition was reported, or 9 per cent of all the fathers. Twenty-one per cent of those reported, or 6 per cent of all, were married. It is a commentary on the general absence of interest in the father that, even in the records of social agencies, there should be so low a percentage of reports on civil condition. The importance of knowledge of the father's status is evidenced by the proportion presumably having legitimate families dependent upon them.

Of especial interest in connection with the causative side of the problem and also as throwing some light upon the probability of future legal marriage, is the social relationship that existed between the mother and the father before the child's birth. Information on this subject was available in only 137 cases. This fact is another illustration of the absence in agency records of information essential to proper understanding of the situation and of the greatest importance in work for the assistance of the mother and child. Following is the distribution of the 137 cases according to the social relationship of the father and mother.

Total reported-----		137	
Illegally married-----	2	Schoolmates-----	3
Living as married-----	15	Father a friend of the	
Mother the mistress of the father--	12	mother's family-----	4
"Keeping company"-----	27	Members of the same house-	
Chance acquaintances-----	19	hold-----	13
Mother a prostitute-----	3	Relatives (1 brother, 2 uncles,	
Father the employer of the		4 cousins, 3 brothers-in-	
mother-----	8	law)-----	10
Fellow employees-----	12	Other-----	9

Occupation.

The occupations of 311 fathers as reported on the records of social agencies are summarized in Table 27. The occupational classification was based upon that used by the Bureau of the Census, so rearranged that occupations of about the same economic status would fall, as far as possible, into the same group.²⁶ An occupation was not listed separately unless the number reported engaged therein was at least 5.

²⁶ Rearrangement according to the method followed by Alba M. Edwards in "Social-economic groups of the United States." Quarterly Publications of the American Statistical Association, Vol. XV (June, 1917), pp. 643-661.

TABLE 27.—*Occupation of fathers of infants born out of wedlock in 1914.*

Occupation of father. ^a	Fathers of infants born out of wedlock, whose occupations were reported.	
	Number.	Per cent distribution.
Total.....	311	100.0
Proprietors, officials, managers.....	24	7.7
Professional persons.....	13	4.2
Clerks and kindred workers.....	47	15.1
Commercial travelers.....	11	
Salesmen and clerks in stores.....	17	
Other.....	19	
Skilled workers.....	65	20.9
Carpenters.....	8	
Electricians.....	6	
Machinists.....	10	
Painters and paperhangers.....	7	
Plumbers and steamfitters.....	6	
Printers and pressmen.....	5	
Other.....	23	
Semiskilled workers.....	78	25.1
Chauffeurs.....	19	
Conductors (street railroad).....	9	
Factory or mill operatives.....	23	
Other.....	27	
Laborers.....	39	12.5
Draymen, teamsters, expressmen.....	9	
Other.....	30	
Servants.....	26	8.4
Cooks.....	8	
Janitors and housemen.....	5	
Waiters.....	5	
Other.....	8	
Semiofficial public employees.....	11	3.5
Soldiers, sailors, marines.....	10	
Other.....	1	
Not gainfully employed.....	8	2.6
Students.....	5	
Others.....	3	

^a According to Dr. Edward's classification. (See note, p. 129.)

Proprietors, officials, and managers included mainly small dealers, storekeepers, and farmers. In 8 per cent of the reported cases, the father's occupation was so classified; in only a few cases did the information indicate that the income was large. Classifying together proprietors, officials, and managers and professional persons, a total of 12 per cent of the fathers were engaged in an independent business or profession. A total of 36 per cent were clerks or kindred workers or skilled workers in various industries. In 46 per cent of the cases the father was a semiskilled worker, laborer, or servant. The soldiers, sailors, and marines, and those not gainfully employed were

probably the least able to assume their responsibilities toward the mother and child. These two groups comprised 6 per cent of the fathers whose occupations were reported.

Very little information as to earnings was available. In only 67 cases was the weekly income reported. Fourteen of these fathers earned from \$5 to \$9 a week; 27, from \$10 to \$14; 17, from \$15 to \$19; 7, from \$20 to \$29; and only 2 earned \$30 or more weekly. This distribution of earnings is not representative of the entire group, for the reason that reports in regard to the larger incomes were probably not secured so frequently as in respect to the smaller. However, both the occupational distribution and the wage data indicate that in most of the instances where the father's occupation was reported he was a man of small income.

Contributions to the support of the child.

As a part of the study of infants born out of wedlock in Boston during the year, the court records were searched in order to secure information in regard to the cases involving the support of these infants. Data were secured from the nine district courts of Boston and from the superior court. A full account of the law under which these cases were brought, the practice in the Boston courts, and the method of obtaining the data is given in the chapter on legal action for the support of children born out of wedlock.²⁷

Cases involving 99 of the 847 infants born out of wedlock included in this study were initiated in the Boston courts before the end of their first year of life. In addition, agency records reported 9 other cases in which court action for support had been brought in other places. Hence, for 108 infants, 13 per cent of all infants of illegitimate birth born during the year, court cases for securing support from the father were known to have been initiated before the children had reached 1 year of age. Although there may have been a few court cases outside Boston concerning which information was not obtained, it is probable that this percentage is not a great understatement. That legal steps were known to have been taken to insure the assumption of the father's responsibility for only one-eighth of the infants born during the year shows that the comparatively liberal and advanced Massachusetts law for the support of children of illegitimate birth was directly used only in a minority of cases. Undoubtedly there are a number of cases in which the indirect influence of the law and the fear of its consequences are efficacious without recourse to the court.

As a consequence of court action, some provision for support was arranged before the end of the child's first year of life in 60 of the

²⁷ See pp. 228-264.

108 cases—56 per cent of those brought before the courts. In 3 of these instances the child was adopted; in 4 the parents were married. In the remaining 53 cases cash payments or periodic contributions to the child's support were made by the fathers. In 2 of the adoption cases and in 2 of those in which the parents were married after court action had been initiated cash payments were also made by the father.

The amounts secured from the father during the child's first year of life were known in 40 of the 60 cases in which arrangements for the child's support were made. The total amount of money secured for these 40 children was \$5,736.87. The average amount per child was \$143.42. This per capita is not large in view of the fact that in some cases the amounts were lump-sum payments, which represented all that was likely to be secured for the support of the child during the years of dependence.

The 60 children for whose support arrangements were made through court action during the first year of life constituted only 7 per cent of all the children born out of wedlock in Boston during the year of the study. In 1 of the 60 cases the father contributed nothing to the support of the child, the child having been adopted by some one else.

In addition to the 59 children for whom arrangements for support by the father were made through court action, there were 59 whose fathers were known to have contributed something to the support of the mother or the child. The manner in which the fathers aided in the support of these 59 children not involved in court cases was as follows:

Total children-----			59
Parents married each other-----	9	Irregular contributions-----	9
Parents living as married-----	2	Payment toward pregnancy	
Settlement by payment of lump		and confinement expenses	
sum-----	22	only-----	8
Regular contributions-----	9		

The fathers of a total of 118 children—14 per cent of the 847 born out of wedlock during the year—were known to have given more or less financial assistance as a result of court action or otherwise. This is, of course, an understatement, since many of the infants not known to social agencies or courts may have been supported, in part at least, by their fathers.

THE CARE OF THE CHILD.

Extent of Information Secured.

Through data obtained from agencies and from court records and death certificates it was possible to secure some information as to the histories of 796 children born out of wedlock during the year.

In only 51 cases was it impossible to obtain any data. The records of 275 of the 847 infants—32 per cent—showed that the child had survived the first year of life. Agency or death records showed that 230 infants—27 per cent—had died. In 213 of these 230 cases death certificates were found; for 17 the deaths were reported in agency records only, death certificates not having been found because of change of name or because the death had occurred outside the area covered by the study. The histories of 342 infants—40 per cent—did not cover the first year of life, the information being limited to that given on the birth certificate in 51 instances, and extending over a period of less than one year in 291 cases.

Age at Death or at Last Date Known.

The ages at death of the 230 infants known to have died, and the ages of the 617 others at the last record obtained, are given in Table 28.

TABLE 28.—*Age at death, or at last record obtained, of infants born out of wedlock in 1914.*

Age at death or at last record obtained.	Infants born out of wedlock.		
	Total.	At last record obtained.	
		Living.	Dead.
Total.....	847	617	230
Less than 1 month.....	^a 242	^a 165	77
1 month.....	72	27	45
2 months.....	40	15	25
3 months.....	40	17	23
4 months.....	30	18	12
5 months.....	20	9	11
6 months.....	24	15	9
7 months.....	27	18	9
8 months.....	26	20	6
9 months.....	12	9	3
10 months.....	23	18	5
11 months.....	16	11	5
1 year.....	275	275	.....

^a Including 51 concerning whose histories nothing was known.

One-third of the children were followed to the end of the first year of life and were known to have survived. Not quite half were followed through the first six months and were known to be surviving at the end of that time. The histories of almost three-fifths of the children covered a period of three months or more after birth.

Per cent of Deaths According to Place of Birth.

Although the percentage of infants known to have died before they had completed one year of life is an understatement, for the reason that it was impossible to obtain information concerning all

the children, nevertheless a comparative analysis of percentages of deaths according to place of birth is fairly representative. From the information available (see Table 29), it was known that 230 infants,²⁸ or 27 per cent of all, died during the first year of life. The births of 193 children occurred in private homes; of these children, 46, or 24 per cent, died in infancy. There were 410 infants born in hospitals, of whom 144, or 35 per cent, died during the first year of life. Of the 241 children born in maternity homes or in the public infirmary, 40, or 17 per cent, were known to have died before the end of the first year. The percentage of deaths among infants born in hospitals was considerably higher for the 209 born in one large maternity hospital and children's institution than for the 201 born in other hospitals—45 per cent for the former as compared with 25 per cent for the latter.

TABLE 29.—*Per cent of infants born out of wedlock in 1914, who died during their first year of life, by place of birth.*

Place of birth.	Infants born out of wedlock, 1914.	Deaths known to have occurred in first year of life.	
		Number.	Per cent.
Total.....	847	230	27.2
Private home.....	193	46	23.8
Hospital.....	410	144	35.1
Large maternity hospital and children's institution.....	209	94	45.0
Other hospital.....	201	50	24.9
Maternity home or public infirmary.....	241	40	16.6
Not reported.....	3		

The highest percentage of deaths occurred among infants born in hospitals, and the lowest among those born in maternity homes or the public infirmary. The large number of deaths among those born in hospitals is probably due to the fact that hospitals usually keep mother and child for only a short period following the child's birth, and that after discharge from the hospital the infant often is separated from the mother. The proportion of mothers who do not keep their infants is probably larger among those who are confined in hospitals than among those confined in the homes of relatives or friends. However, the percentage of deaths among infants born in hospitals other than the large maternity hospital and children's institution specified was very little higher than the percentage among infants born in private homes—25 as compared with 24. The comparatively small number of deaths among infants born in the

²⁸ Total deaths reported from all sources; figures given in discussion of infant mortality, pp. 97-101, based on the 213 cases for which death certificates were found.

maternity homes and the infirmary is a striking proof of the saving of infant life which results from keeping mother and child together under proper conditions during part of or all the nursing period. (See Chart IV, p. 138.)

Physical Condition.

Information as to physical condition was obtained from agency records and from the statements of cause of death on the death certificates. The data thus obtained are incomplete and are of value only as giving an indication of the serious physical disabilities which exist in many cases.

In addition to the 230 infants known to have died, there were 54 reported to be in poor physical condition. This is, undoubtedly, very much of an understatement. The disabilities reported were as follows:

Total reported as having died or as in poor physical condition-----		284	
Deformity -----	3	Syphilis and gonorrhea-----	1
Tuberculosis -----	5	Ophthalmia neonatorum-----	7
Syphilis -----	²⁹ 22	Rachitis -----	1
Gonorrhea -----	3	Otherwise poor condition-----	242

Agency Care.

Number receiving prolonged care from agencies of various types.

Prolonged care was known to have been given 522 of the 847 children—62 per cent—by the agencies studied. Four other children were known to have received such care from agencies not included in the study, and undoubtedly there were others who received care outside Boston and for whom information was not available. The term "prolonged care" signifies the definite assumption by the agency of supervision or provision for the child and does not include care given over a short time or to meet a temporary situation. Hospitals were not considered as giving prolonged care unless the case was followed up and supervised for an extended period. That more than three-fifths of all the children born out of wedlock during the year received prolonged care during their first year of life indicates the extent to which illegitimate birth forecasts dependency.

Most of the children receiving prolonged care were under the supervision of child-caring or child-protective agencies, or of the maternity homes and the public infirmary. Following are the numbers receiving care from agencies of various classes:

Total receiving prolonged care from agencies included in the study..		522
Child-caring or child-protective agency.....		208
Maternity home or public infirmary.....		176
Other agencies.....		30

²⁹ Includes one also deformed and rachitic.

Child-caring or child-protective agency and maternity home or public infirmary	64
Child-caring or child-protective agency, maternity home or public infirmary, and other agency	8
Child-caring or child-protective and other agency	18
Maternity home or public infirmary and other agency	18

Child-caring or child-protective agencies cared for a total of 35 per cent of the children born during the year. Maternity homes and the public infirmary cared for 31 per cent of the children, 9 per cent also being in charge of child-caring or child-protective agencies.

Number of agencies giving care.

Three-fourths of the children receiving prolonged care during the first year of life were under the extended supervision of one agency only; one-fourth received prolonged care from more than one agency. The numbers receiving prolonged care from specified numbers of agencies were as follows:

Total receiving prolonged care from agencies included in the study--				522
One agency	396	Four agencies		4
Two agencies	97	Five agencies		1
Three agencies	24			

In the large majority of cases in which more than one agency gave prolonged care the agencies were of different classes. In many instances a child was under the care of a maternity home for the first 5 or 6 months of life and then came under the supervision of a child-caring agency. The fact that 29 children were under the prolonged care of three or more agencies may indicate some duplication of effort in these cases.

Age at application.

Most of the cases cared for by maternity homes or the public infirmary came under the care of these agencies before the birth of the child. The only group of cases in which an analysis of age at application is significant is the child-caring and child-protective group. A total of 298 children received prolonged care from these agencies during the first year of life. The ages at which they came to the attention of child-caring and child-protective agencies giving prolonged care were as follows:

Total receiving prolonged care from child-caring and child-protective agencies				298
Unborn	48	3-5 months		24
Less than 1 month	115	6-8 months		8
1 month	43	9-11 months		8
2 months	9	Not reported		43

The age at application was known in 255 cases. The application was made before the child's birth in 19 per cent of these instances. In almost half the cases—45 per cent—the infant was under 1 month of age; in 30 per cent, between 1 and 5 months old; in only 6 per cent of the cases had the child reached the age of 6 months at the time of application for agency care. Thus, in the majority of cases the supervision of the child-caring and child-protective agencies was begun in the early infancy of the child.

Time under prolonged care.

An attempt was made to estimate for the children who had received prolonged care the proportion of time during the first year of life that they had been under such supervision. Of the 847 infants born during the year, there were 522 given prolonged care by the agencies studied and 4 others known to have been under the care of other agencies. No information as to time under care was available for 48 of these 526 cases. In 478 cases it was possible to approximate the proportion of time under the supervision of social agencies. The method of estimating proportionate time under prolonged care was to divide the number of weeks under care by the age of the child at death or at the last record obtained. Table 30 gives the resultant proportions for children of various ages.

TABLE 30.—*Proportion of lifetime spent under prolonged care of agencies, infants born out of wedlock in 1914.*

Age of infant at death or at last record obtained.	Infants born out of wedlock who received prolonged care of known duration at some time during first year of life.						
	Total.	Proportion of time under prolonged care of agencies during first year of life.					
		Entire time.	Four-fifths.	Three-fifths.	Two-fifths.	One-fifth.	Less than one-fifth.
Total.....	478	255	123	24	30	28	18
Less than 3 months.....	93	59	12	2	11	9	.....
3-5 months.....	54	27	16	6	2	1	2
6-8 months.....	54	29	15	3	2	3	2
9-11 months.....	38	19	10	1	4	3	1
1 year.....	239	121	70	12	11	12	13

More than half—53 per cent—of the 478 children receiving prolonged care of known duration were under such supervision for the entire period during which the history of the child was known. Care was given for four-fifths of the period to 26 per cent of the children. Hence, 79 per cent were under care at least four-fifths of the time in the first year of life during which their history was known to social agencies.

The histories of 239 children receiving prolonged care covered the entire first year of life. Of these, 51 per cent were under care the whole year and 29 per cent four-fifths of the year.

The 121 children under care the entire first year of life represented 14 per cent of the 847 infants born out of wedlock. These figures indicate that about one-seventh of the children born out of wedlock in a year are agency problems during the entire period of infancy. The extent to which such infants are dependent upon social agencies may be further shown by the fact that the 121 infants receiving care during the entire year constituted 20 per cent of the 617 not known to have died before they were a year old.

Born in maternity homes		Per cent 16.6
Born in private homes		23.8
Born in hospitals, other than the large maternity hospital and children's institution		24.9
Born in the large maternity hospital and children's institution		45.0

CHART IV.—Per cent of infants born out of wedlock, 1914, who died during first year of life, by place of birth. (See pp. 131-135.)

Care at various ages.

An analysis of the care given the children at various ages is given in Table 31. The earliest age used in this connection was 1 month. At this age hospital care given during the mother's confinement would in most cases have ceased. At the next age period considered—3 months—the mother's living conditions would in many cases have been readjusted and more or less permanent arrangements made for the care of the child. The care given the children at 6 months, at 9 months, and at 1 year is also included. In each case the care reported was that given the child on the date when he attained the age specified. If agencies of more than one type were giving care at the same time, the one most directly concerned with the child's supervision was entered.

TABLE 31.—*Kind of care received at specified ages, infants born out of wedlock in 1914.*

Kind of care.	Infants born out of wedlock, surviving, so far as known, at specified ages. ^a									
	At 1 mo.		At 3 mos.		At 6 mos.		At 9 mos.		At 1 yr.	
	Num-ber.	Per cent dis-tribu-tion.	Num-ber.	Per cent dis-tribu-tion.	Num-ber.	Per cent dis-tribu-tion.	Num-ber.	Per cent dis-tribu-tion.	Num-ber.	Per cent dis-tribu-tion.
Total.....	770	100.0	700	100.0	654	100.0	630	100.0	617	100.0
Temporary care only.....	43	5.6	27	3.8	25	3.8	19	3.0	11	1.8
Prolonged care.....	394	51.2	350	50.6	286	43.7	237	37.6	211	34.2
Child-caring or child-protective agency.....	146	19.0	164	23.4	148	22.6	124	19.7	119	19.3
Maternity home or public infirmary.....	222	28.8	154	22.0	111	17.0	88	14.0	72	11.7
Other agency.....	26	3.4	32	4.6	27	4.1	25	3.9	20	3.2
Not known whether alive or dead..	165	21.4	207	29.6	251	38.4	304	48.3	342	55.4
Known to be alive; no agency care, so far as known.....	168	21.8	116	16.6	92	14.1	70	11.1	53	8.6

^a See Table 28, p. 133. Includes those of whom it was not known as to whether they were alive or dead.

Of those surviving, so far as known, at 1 month, 51 per cent were receiving prolonged care from agencies, while 34 per cent of those surviving, so far as known, at 1 year were receiving such care. Under care of child-caring and child-protective agencies were 19 per cent of the children surviving, so far as known, at 1 month; at 3 months, 23 per cent; at 6 months, 23 per cent; at 9 months, 20 per cent; and at 1 year, 19 per cent. The percentages receiving care from maternity homes or the public infirmary were smaller at the older ages, being 29 at 1 month, 22 at 3 months, 17 at 6 months, 14 at 9 months, and 12 at 1 year.

The proportions under care at various ages are minimum statements. Undoubtedly some of those for whom no information as to whether living or dead was obtained had died outside Boston, but it is very probable that others were receiving agency care in other localities. That one-fifth of all the infants not reported to have died were known to be under the prolonged care of child-caring or child-protective agencies, whether the age specified be 1 month or 1 year, is significant of the relation between illegitimate birth and child dependency.

Time with mother.

The most important single factor in the welfare of an infant is the care he receives from his own mother. In the case of a child of illegitimate birth the chances of being separated from the mother during early infancy are great. Lack of maternal care probably accounts in large part for the very high infant mortality rate among such infants.

A comparison of children of various ages living with and away from their mothers is given in Table 32. The proportion of cases in which the mother and child are together is shown to decrease with the age of the child.

TABLE 32.—*Presence with or separation from mother at specified ages, infants born out of wedlock in 1914.*

Presence with or separation from mother.	Infants born out of wedlock, surviving, so far as known, at specified ages. ^a				
	At 1 mo.	At 3 mos.	At 6 mos.	At 9 mos.	At 1 yr.
Total.....	770	700	654	630	617
Reported.....	472	405	335	278	247
With mother.....	321	215	168	131	103
Away from mother.....	151	190	167	147	144
Not reported.....	298	295	319	352	370
Not known whether alive or dead.....	155	207	251	304	342
Known to be alive, but not reported whether with mother or away from mother.....	133	88	68	48	28

^a See Table 28, p. 133. Includes those of whom it was not known as to whether they were alive or dead.

In considering the data given in Table 32, it must be remembered that the cases in which information was obtained were those known to social agencies, and that among those for whom information was not obtained were infants whose mothers found it possible to care for them unaided or with the assistance of relatives. It can not be assumed, however, that in all the "not reported" cases the child and mother were living together. Records of children under 2 years of age reported to the division of State minor wards as cared for in private homes apart from their relatives showed that almost two-fifths of those of illegitimate birth so cared for were under no agency supervision. Most of these children were being privately boarded by relatives or friends.³⁰

Twenty per cent at least of all the infants surviving, so far as known, at the age of 1 month had already been separated from their mothers. That this percentage is far lower than that which would be found were all the information available is indicated by the fact that for 39 per cent of the infants surviving, so far as known, at this age, presence with or separation from the mother was not reported. At least 27 per cent of the infants surviving, so far as known, at 3 months, 26 per cent at 6 months, 23 per cent at 9 months, and 23 per cent at 1 year, were separated from their mothers. These percentages are subject to the same qualifications as the percentage at 1 month, except that the increasing percentage of not reported cases—60 per cent at 1 year—makes the statements of the proportions separated from their mothers still more conservative. The

³⁰ Table 27, Sec. II, p. 320.

slightly lower percentage of infants living apart from their mothers at 9 months and at 1 year than at 3 and 6 months is undoubtedly explained by the increasing percentage of "not reported" cases.

The percentages of the known cases in which the child and mother were together are of interest as indicating the proportion of infants of various ages whom agencies find it possible or practicable to keep with their mothers. At 1 month 68 per cent of the infants whose presence with or separation from their mothers was reported were living with their mothers; at 3 months the percentage was 53; at 6 months, 50; at 9 months, 47; and at 1 year, 42.

The steady decrease in the percentages of children living with their mothers—from 68 per cent at 1 month to 42 per cent at 1 year—indicates the constantly increasing difficulty in keeping mother and child together after the mother is discharged from a hospital or maternity home which has given care during confinement and the first few months of the child's life.

A comparison of the proportion of children surviving at the ages specified who were living away from their mothers with the proportion of the children who died who had been cared for apart from their mothers, based on data given in Table 33, throws some light upon the relation between separation of mother and child and a high infant mortality rate. Deaths under 2 weeks were omitted from the comparison, for the reason that comparatively few infants are separated from their mothers during the first 2 weeks of life.

TABLE 33.—*Comparative percentages living with mother at age specified or prior to death, among survivors and deaths for first 3 months and for first year of life, infants born out of wedlock in 1914.*

	Infants born out of wedlock surviving, so far as known, or dead at specified ages.							
	At 3 mos.—				At 1 yr.—			
	Surviving, so far as known.		Died, aged 2 wks. but under 3 mos.		Surviving, so far as known.		Died, aged 3 mos. but under 1 yr.	
	Number.	Per cent distribution.	Number.	Per cent distribution.	Number.	Per cent distribution.	Number.	Per cent distribution.
Present with or separated from mother at age specified, or immediately prior to death. ^a								
Total.....	700	.....	97	.....	617	.....	83	.....
Not reported.....	^b 295	.....	11	.....	^c 370	.....	16	.....
Total reporting whether or not with mother.....	405	100.0	86	100.0	247	100.0	67	100.0
With mother.....	215	53.1	17	19.8	103	41.7	12	17.9
Separated from mother.....	190	46.9	69	80.2	144	58.3	55	82.1

^a In cases in which the child was removed from the mother and taken to a hospital for temporary medical care, the child was counted as "with mother."

^b Includes 207 of whom it was not known as to whether they were alive or dead, and 88 known to be alive but of whom it was not known as to whether they were present with or separated from the mother.

^c Includes 342 of whom it was not known as to whether they were alive or dead, and 28 known to be alive but of whom it was not known as to whether they were present with or separated from the mother.

Of the 405 children known to be surviving at the age of 3 months whose presence with or separation from the mother was reported by social agencies, 47 per cent were being cared for away from their mothers, while 80 per cent of the 86 infants who had died after reaching the age of 2 weeks but before the age of 3 months, and whose location previous to death was known, had been removed from their mothers. At 1 year, of the 247 known to be surviving whose location was reported, 58 per cent were living apart from their mothers, as compared with 82 per cent of the 67 infants who had died after reaching the age of 3 months but before the age of 1 year and whose location previous to death was reported. The greatest difference between the percentages separated from the mother among those dying and those surviving occurs in the earlier group.

The comparison in favor of infants with their mothers would presumably be strengthened, not weakened, were the facts as to the "not-reported" group known. It is probable that the percentage of children with their mothers would be found to be higher among the "not-reported" group than among the group for which information was obtained, since the latter group comprised cases in which recourse to social agencies was necessary. But assuming, for the present purpose, that half the infants included among those not reported were with their mothers and half were separated from them, the percentages would be changed very little—48 per cent separated from their mothers among those surviving, so far as known, and 76 per cent among those who died. If more than 50 per cent of the "not-reported" group are assumed to be with their mothers, the percentage separated from their mothers among those surviving, so far as known, is decreased, and a still closer relation between separation from mother and high infant mortality demonstrated. At 1 year a theoretical distribution of the "not-reported" group, on the assumption that half or more than half would be with their mothers, would bring substantially the same results as at 3 months.

Table 34 shows the proportion of time spent with the mother during the first year of life, estimated for those children reported by social agencies as having survived at least 6 months and whose histories gave the length of time the child was with the mother. There were 301 such children, of whom 215 were reported as having survived 1 year, 20 as dying between the ages of 6 and 11 months, inclusive, and 66 as having been lost sight of before they had reached 1 year of age.

TABLE 34.—*Proportion of lifetime spent with mother, infants born out of wedlock in 1914 and surviving to specified ages.*

Proportion of time spent with mother during first year of life.	Known to have survived 6 mos.		Known to have survived 1 yr.		Between 6 and 11 mos. of age at death or at last record obtained.	
	Number	Per cent distribution.	Number	Per cent distribution.	Number	Per cent distribution.
Total.....	301	100.0	215	100.0	86	100.0
Entire time.....	121	40.2	83	38.6	38	44.2
Four-fifths.....	27	9.0	18	8.4	9	10.5
Three-fifths.....	7	2.3	5	2.3	2	2.3
Two-fifths.....	14	4.7	9	4.2	5	5.8
One-fifth.....	26	8.6	19	8.8	7	8.2
Less than one-fifth.....	106	35.2	81	37.7	25	29.0

In 121 of the 301 reported cases in which the infant was known to have lived at least six months—40 per cent—the child had been with the mother the entire period during which the history was known. In 106 cases—35 per cent—the child had been with the mother less than one-fifth of the time.

The histories of 215 children known to have survived the first year of life stated the length of time the child was with the mother. In 83 of these cases—39 per cent—the mother and child had been together the entire year. In an almost equal number of cases—81, or 38 per cent—the infant had been under the care of his mother for less than one-fifth of the year. A total of 109 children—51 per cent—had been with the mother less than three-fifths of the year, a period of about seven months. It must be borne in mind that these figures apply only to cases known to social agencies, and that the proportions spending the entire year or a large part of the year with the mother would probably have been higher had infants of illegitimate birth not known to social agencies been included.

Home or Place of Residence at Various Ages.

Children with their mothers.

The provision which should be made for mother and child in order that they may be kept together at least during the nursing period is one of the most difficult problems in connection with the care of the infant born out of wedlock. In some cases the mother's parents or other relatives are able and willing to take mother and baby into their own home, but a large number must be provided for in other ways. Table 35 gives for the children known to be with their mothers at the ages specified the type of home or institution in which they were living.

TABLE 35.—*Home or place of residence of infants born out of wedlock in 1914, who were known to be with their mothers at specified ages.*

Home or place of residence at specified ages.	Infants born out of wedlock who were with their mothers at specified ages, and whose home or place of residence was known.									
	At 1 mo.		At 3 mos.		At 6 mos.		At 9 mos.		At 1 yr.	
	Num-ber.	Per cent distri-bu-tion.	Num-ber.	Per cent distri-bu-tion.	Num-ber.	Per cent distri-bu-tion.	Num-ber.	Per cent distri-bu-tion.	Num-ber.	Per cent distri-bu-tion.
Total.....	288	100.0	190	100.0	149	100.0	119	100.0	92	100.0
Mother's own home.....	16	5.6	13	6.8	12	8.1	10	8.4	12	13.0
Mother's parental home.....	28	9.7	38	20.0	37	24.8	34	28.6	24	26.1
Home of relatives or friends.....	16	5.6	19	10.0	16	10.8	13	10.9	7	7.6
Boarding or free home.....	13	4.5	5	2.6	7	4.7	6	5.0	4	4.4
Mother's place of employment.....	12	4.2	47	24.8	48	32.2	38	31.9	30	32.6
Hospital.....	6	2.1			2	1.3				
Maternity home or public infirmary.....	189	65.6	61	32.1	22	14.8	14	11.8	13	14.1
Other institution.....	3	1.0	4	2.1	2	1.3	2	1.7	2	2.2
Other.....	5	1.7	3	1.6	3	2.0	2	1.7		

The number of infants known to be with their mothers, whose home or place of residence was reported, decreased greatly as the age of the child increased. At 1 month, 16 children were living in their mothers' own homes, and at 1 year 12 were so provided for, yet the percentage of the total known who were in this type of home or place of residence increased from 6 to 13. The percentages are representative of the cases known to social agencies, but they must not be taken as representative of the whole group of infants of illegitimate birth in the community, including those not known to social agencies.

At the age of 1 month a total of 21 per cent of the children who were with their mothers were living in the mother's own home or with her family or friends. At the age of 3 months, a total of 37 per cent were thus provided for; while at the age of 6 months, 44 per cent; at the age of 9 months, 48 per cent; and at 1 year, 47 per cent were living with the mother in her own home, in her parental home, or in the home of relatives or friends. The fact that nearly half the children in the older-age groups who were with their mothers were living in their mothers' own homes, their family homes, or with relatives or friends, indicates a considerable extent of assumption of responsibility by those to whom the mother would naturally look for assistance, even in cases in which recourse to social agencies for more or less help was necessary.

A comparatively small number of infants living with their mothers were provided for in boarding or free homes, the percentages so cared for not exceeding 5 at any age specified.

A type of provision increasingly important in the older-age groups is the mother's place of employment. At 1 month 4 per cent of the

children with their mothers were in this type of home. The percentage is high, considering the age of the child. The mother would hardly be able to be employed at housework and care for her child at the same time so soon after her confinement. At the age of 3 months 25 per cent of the children living with their mothers were in the mother's place of employment. In the older-age groups nearly one-third were so provided for—32 per cent at 6 months and at 9 months, and 33 per cent at 1 year.

Only a few children were in hospitals at the ages specified—2 per cent at 1 month, 1 per cent at 6 months, and none in the other age groups. Two-thirds of the children with their mothers at 1 month—66 per cent—were being cared for in maternity homes or the public infirmary. This high proportion may be explained by the fact that information was obtained as to the dispositions at these ages of practically all the infants born in maternity homes or the public infirmary, while a large number of other infants were lost sight of before the age of 1 month. At 3 months, the percentage cared for in these institutions was reduced to 32 per cent, and at 6 months to 15 per cent. Twelve per cent of the children known to be with their mothers at 9 months were in maternity homes or the public infirmary, and 14 per cent of the children with their mothers at 1 year were so provided for.

Children separated from their mothers.

The types of provision for children living away from their mothers are shown in Table 36. The small number of institution cases is significant as indicating the general practice of Boston agencies.

TABLE 36.—*Home or place of residence of infants born out of wedlock in 1914, who were known to be separated from their mothers at specified ages.*

Home or place of residence at specified ages.	Infants born out of wedlock who were separated from their mothers at specified ages.									
	At 1 mo.		At 3 mos.		At 6 mos.		At 9 mos.		At 1 yr.	
	Num-ber.	Per-cent distribution	Num-ber.	Per-cent distribution.	Num-ber.	Per-cent distribution.	Num-ber.	Per-cent distribution.	Num-ber.	Per-cent distribution.
Total.....	151	100.0	189	100.0	167	100.0	147	100.0	144	100.0
Home of mother's parents, other relatives, or friends.....	1	0.7	3	1.6	5	3.0	4	2.7	6	4.2
Boarding or free home.....	115	76.1	159	84.2	145	86.8	127	86.4	125	86.8
Adoptive or foster home.....	5	3.3	5	2.6	9	5.4	10	6.8	8	5.5
Hospital.....	9	6.0	5	2.6	4	2.4	3	2.0	2	1.4
Other institution.....	17	11.3	13	6.9	2	1.2	1	.7	1	.7
Other.....	4	2.6	4	2.1	2	1.2	2	1.4	2	1.4

^a Excluding 1 whose location was not known.

The percentages of children separated from their mothers who were living with their grandparents, other relatives, or friends ranged from 0.7 at 1 month to 4.2 at 1 year. From 3 per cent to 7 per cent were living in adoptive or foster homes. By far the greatest number were living in boarding or free homes. At 1 month 76 per cent of the children were so provided for; at 3 months, 84 per cent; at 6 months, 87 per cent; at 9 months, 86 per cent; and at 1 year, 87 per cent. The system of placing children in boarding or free homes, under careful supervision, has been developed to an unusual extent in Massachusetts, while the social agencies are very conservative in the matter of adoptions.

The number of children away from their mothers who were being cared for in institutions was negligible after the first few months of infancy. At 1 month, 6 per cent were in hospitals and 11 per cent in other institutions; at 3 months, 3 per cent were in hospitals and 7 per cent in other institutions; at 6 months, 2 per cent were in hospitals and 1 per cent in institutions of other types; at 9 months, a total of 3 per cent were cared for in hospitals and other institutions; and at 1 year, 2 per cent were so provided for. These figures illustrate the practice in Massachusetts of using institutions only for special cases or as temporary homes, pending placement or replacement in family homes.

Social agencies reported 151 of the children born during the year as living apart from their mothers at the age of 1 month. About one-sixth were in hospitals or other institutions, while five-sixths were being cared for in private homes, chiefly boarding or free homes. The number cared for in boarding or free homes constituted slightly more than three-fourths of the total. Only a few children had been placed out for adoption or taken permanently by foster families.

At the age of 1 year 144 children were known to be living apart from their mothers. All but 3 of these were being cared for in private homes. Seven-eighths of all these children were living in boarding or free homes. The percentage in adoptive or foster homes was slightly larger than at 1 month, but it was still very small.

CHAPTER 2. CHILDREN OF ILLEGITIMATE BIRTH UNDER CARE OF SOCIAL AGENCIES.

GENERAL.

Statement of Problem.

This study is principally concerned with the environmental conditions surrounding children born out of wedlock. Aside from considerations of heritage, the handicap of their birth is overcome in proportion to the extent to which normal home life can be supplied. There are several means by which a more or less complete adjustment of the child to society may be made.

1. The parents may marry each other and establish a home for the child. If a normal home life results, the greater part of the handicap of illegitimate birth is removed.

2. The mother may marry another man and the child be accepted as a member of the family. Here, so far as physical care is concerned, the conditions under which the child is brought up closely approximate those surrounding children of legitimate birth. Certain detrimental factors may develop, however, in the "stepfather family," such as a jealous or scornful attitude on the part of the half brothers and sisters, or discrimination on the part of the stepfather in favor of his own children.

3. The mother, though not establishing a home as a result of marriage, may keep the child with her, either in the home of her relatives, in her place of employment, or in an independent home which she maintains. The difficulties are often very great, and the result for the child may be fortunate or unfortunate according to the character of the mother and her ability to support the child. Often the mother is obliged to depend upon social agencies for financial and other assistance. In any case the child lacks the advantages of normal family life.

4. The mother may board the child, paying the board from her own earnings or with the assistance of the child's father or of relatives. The difficulties she frequently encounters in finding the right kind of boarding home and in seeing that adequate care is given are serious. Often the mother is lacking in intelligence, is financially unable to meet her responsibilities, or is careless as to the child's welfare, paying board irregularly and seldom visiting the home.

5. The child may be adopted or taken permanently by relatives or foster parents and brought up as their own child. If the foster home

is a favorable one and the child not difficult to control, conditions of normal family life may be approximated.

6. The child may be taken over by a child-caring agency and placed in a boarding or free home under conditions as nearly normal as possible.

7. The child may be brought up in an institution.

Those cases in which early adjustments are made through the marriage of the mother or the assumption of full or partial responsibility by the mother's relatives are not likely to come to the attention of agencies. The children best provided for are fortunately merged with the general population, and the circumstances of their birth lost sight of. It would be practically impossible, even if it were desirable, to secure full and representative information concerning the children thus successfully absorbed into normal homes at an early age.

This chapter is limited to the study of those cases in which it has been impossible to meet the difficult problems of adjustment without recourse to social agencies. The data secured present only the darker side of the picture, but they give an indication of the relationship between illegitimacy and dependency and the seriousness of the situation both for the child and for the public.

Scope of Study and Sources of Information.

A study of illegitimacy based upon records of social agencies is a study of a section of the problem of child dependency. There is some difference of opinion as to whether the dependent child of illegitimate birth presents a problem differing essentially from that presented by the child of legitimate birth who becomes dependent. An attempt has been made in a later section of this study to compare in certain respects children of legitimate and of illegitimate birth under the supervision of a large child-caring agency. Whether or not differences exist to any considerable extent is, however, of minor importance. The significant facts to be determined are the burden of support, care, and supervision of children born out of wedlock which must be assumed by the public; the reasons for their dependency; and the results for the individual children.

This study of children born out of wedlock who were under the care of Boston agencies and institutions during the year 1914 was an attempt to secure a cross-section of the problem during one year. The aim was to determine, so far as possible, what proportion the care of these children bore to the total volume of children's work of the agencies studied, and to secure data regarding the children

born out of wedlock which would show how long they had been in charge of agencies, why they had come to the attention of social agencies, where they were living at the time of application, where they were living at the close of the period studied, what agencies had previously cared for them, the physical condition, mentality, and characteristics of the children, and certain facts regarding the mother and her family and the father, which would have a bearing upon the child's history. All children of illegitimate birth under 21 years of age who were given care during the year by the agencies studied were included in the inquiry.

The study covered the records of municipal and private agencies in the city of Boston whose work included the care of children born out of wedlock and of certain State agencies so far as they dealt with Boston children—that is, children whose residence at the time of application or commitment was Boston. Agencies in the metropolitan district outside the limits of the city proper were not included. The public and private agencies for family relief and rehabilitation were not included, since their work dealt only incidentally with children of illegitimate birth. The agencies studied may be classified as follows:

Public child-caring—2. (Division of State minor wards of the State board of charity, so far as it cared for Boston children; children's institutions department, Boston.)

Private child-caring—11. (Agencies dealing with the supervision and placing of children and with their care in institutions.)

Child-protective—1. (Main office, Boston, of the Massachusetts Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Children.)

Public infirmary—2. (Boston children at the State Infirmary, Tewksbury, cared for by the social service committee, division of State adult poor; Boston Infirmary Department, Long Island Hospital.)

Maternity homes—4.

Health agencies—2. (Baby Hygiene Association; Instructive District Nursing Association.)

Medical agencies—7. (Hospitals reporting illegitimate births during the year.)

Legal aid—1.

Juvenile court—1.

Correctional institutions—3. (Two Massachusetts training schools and the reformatory for women, so far as they cared for Boston children. A third State training school, the Industrial School for Boys, cared for no Boston children of illegitimate birth during the year. The Suffolk School for Boys, under the control of the children's institutions department, was considered as part of that "child-caring agency.")

Institutions or hospitals for the feeble-minded or for the first care and observation of mental patients—3. (Psychopathic department of the Boston State Hospital and two State institutions for the feeble-minded, so far as they cared for Boston children.)

Many children were under the care of several agencies and several groups of agencies during the year. Records from all agencies caring for a child were combined, in order to make a unified presentation of the child's history and treatment.

The kinds of care given the children were grouped into two main divisions—prolonged care and temporary care. Under "prolonged care" are included all cases in which the problem of supervision or provision for the child had been definitely assumed by the agency. Under "temporary care" are included cases handled by departments of investigation or advice, but not assumed by the agencies; cases in which the care was of a special type to meet a temporary need—such as medical or health care or legal aid, if meeting an emergency situation only, and court care unless the child was put on probation or kept under extended supervision.

EXTENT AND DISTRIBUTION OF THE PROBLEM OF ILLEGITIMACY IN THE
WORK OF THE AGENCIES STUDIED.

Number of Cases Dealt With.

During the year covered by this inquiry there were under care of the agencies studied 2,863 children who were known to have been born out of wedlock. Four-fifths of these children had received more or less prolonged treatment from the agencies, their care having been definitely assumed. One-fifth had received only temporary care.

Besides the children known to have been born out of wedlock, there were under care 78 foundlings and 26 pseudo-foundlings. By the term "foundling" is meant a deserted child, concerning whose parentage nothing is known, who was abandoned without any provision having been made for his care. "Pseudo-foundlings" include children of unknown parentage abandoned at board or elsewhere after some arrangement had been made for their care. All but 3 of the 104 foundlings and pseudo-foundlings were under the care of public child-caring agencies; these 3 were cared for by private child-caring agencies. All were receiving prolonged care. It is probable that all the foundlings and pseudo-foundlings under the care of the agencies studied had been born out of wedlock, but it was thought best to limit this study to children known to have been of illegitimate birth.

One-fifth of the 2,863 children known to have been born out of wedlock received care from more than one agency during the year. (See Table 37.) A number of them were under the care of three or four agencies, and one child was cared for by six agencies in one year, three giving prolonged and three temporary care.

TABLE 37.—*Kind of care received, by number of agencies giving care during the year.*

Number of agencies from which care was received.	Children born out of wedlock, under care, in 1914.			
	Total.	Receiving specified care.		
		Prolonged.	Prolonged and temporary.	Temporary.
Total.....	2,863	1,996	323	544
One agency.....	2,268	1,824	.....	444
Two agencies.....	498	162	251	85
Three agencies.....	78	9	57	12
Four agencies.....	14	1	10	3
Five agencies.....	4	.....	4	.....
Six agencies.....	1	.....	1	.....

The great majority of these 2,863 children were under the care of city or private agencies. Seven State agencies included in this section of the study cared for 606 children whose residence was Boston, 125 of whom had also been under the care of city or private agencies during the year. An eighth State agency whose field of work was Boston dealt with 29 children. City and private agencies alone cared for 2,228 children.

About half the children (1,447) had been under care before the year covered by the study, their cases having been continued into the year studied. The remaining 1,416 cases were begun during the year. Children who ceased being under care during the year numbered 1,168. Thus, there were remaining under care at the end of the year 1,695 children of illegitimate birth.

Proportion of All Children's Cases under Care.

It was impossible in this study to determine accurately what proportions these 2,863 children born out of wedlock represented of the total number of children cared for by the 37 agencies whose records were studied. With a few exceptions, the total number of children was secured for each separate agency, but it was not practicable to check the cases concerned with children of legitimate birth in order to eliminate duplications between different agencies and avoid counting a child more than once if under care of two or more agencies. However, by adding together the total number of children under care of each agency in a group, and the number of children of illegitimate birth cared for by each, without eliminating duplications, an estimate may be made of the proportionate amount of work devoted by agencies of various types to the care of children born out of wedlock.

Excluding Boston cases handled by State agencies, since the total numbers of Boston cases under care of these agencies were not ob-

tained, a comparison of total and of illegitimacy cases is made in Table 38.

TABLE 38.—*Per cent of cases involving children born out of wedlock, by type of agency.*

Type of agency.	Agencies. ^a	Children's cases under care in 1914.		
		Total. ^b	Involving children born out of wedlock.	
			Number.	Per cent.
Child caring and child protective.....	13	16,475	2,145	13.0
Public child caring, city.....	1	c 1,821	e 206	11.3
Private child caring.....	11	8,102	1,368	16.9
Child protective.....	1	6,552	571	8.7
Juvenile court.....	1	d 1,120	d 10	.9
Public infirmary (children under 16 years of age).....	1	93	50	53.8
Maternity homes (infants under care).....	4	e 267	f 250	93.6
Health agencies.....	2	16,200	46	.3
Hospitals (births during year).....	g 11	5,327	389	7.3

^a Excluding the legal aid society and the hospital for the first care and observation of mental patients, since the number of cases involving children could not be secured. Also excluding State agencies. The total number of children under care of the division of State minor wards during 1914 was 7,526, of whom 1,721, or 22.9 per cent, were of illegitimate birth.

^b Sources of information were agency reports and, in some cases, estimates made at the time of the study. The totals were not always for the calendar year 1914, but were, in some instances, for the fiscal year of the agency concerned which nearest approximated the calendar year.

The term "case" as here used represents a unit of work—the care given an individual child by an agency. If two agencies gave care to the same child there would be two cases. Hence the totals do not represent the number of children under care of the agencies in a given group, but the sums of the numbers under care of each constituent agency.

^c Includes boys (5 of whom were of illegitimate birth) cared for by the Suffolk School for Boys, since this institution is under the management of the children's institutions department, and boys on parole are supervised by the placing-out division.

^d Delinquency cases begun in 1914. Neglect cases were included under "child protective," since that agency does the investigation and follow-up work for all neglect cases brought before the juvenile court.

^e Includes 17 cases in which the parents married before the birth of the child, the child, therefore, being of legitimate birth. Does not include those outside the home under supervision if they had not been in the home during the year.

^f Includes 29 cases under care at the beginning of the year which were not included in the subsequent analysis, but does not include those outside the home under supervision if they had not been in the home during the year.

^g Of the 11, only 6 were included in the later analysis, since no illegitimate births occurred in the other 5. The 11 hospitals mentioned in the table are exclusive of small private hospitals, 1 of which was included in the study but excluded from the table, since total figures could not be secured.

The percentages of cases involving children born out of wedlock varied greatly with the agency groups, according to the class of cases dealt with. The maternity home group naturally showed the highest percentage, since practically all the work of these institutions is concerned with the illegitimacy problem. The public infirmary also showed a high percentage of children of illegitimate birth among all children under 16 years of age given care. The child-caring agencies gave the next highest percentages, 11 for the public and 17 for the private agencies. Had the Boston cases under care of the division of State minor wards been included in the public child-caring group, the percentage of illegitimacy cases would have been considerably

higher, since 23 per cent of all the children under care of this agency were of illegitimate birth. The percentage of illegitimacy cases under care of the child-protective agency was considerably lower than in the case of the child-caring agencies. This is probably due to the fact that the former was concerned mainly with family problems involving neglect. The percentage for child-caring and child-protective agencies combined was 13. Of all the births in hospitals exclusive of small private hospitals, 7 per cent were illegitimate.

TABLE 39.—*Estimated expenditures of specified agencies, for children born out of wedlock.*

Type of agency.	Number of agencies.	Total expenditures, 1914. ^a	Percentage of cases involving children of illegitimate birth.	Estimated expenditures for children of illegitimate birth.
Total.....	12			\$123,511.01
Public child caring, city.....	1	\$185,424.34	11.3	20,952.95
Public child caring, State.....	1	(b)	(b)	52,078.40
Private child caring.....	c9	267,479.55	16.9	45,202.52
Child protective.....	1	60,656.74	8.7	5,277.14

^a Derived from annual reports of the agencies and, in some instances, from reports of the Massachusetts State Board of Charity, 1914 and 1915, Pt. II, "Charitable Corporations." Boston, 1915, 1916. The expenditures of each agency were those for the fiscal year which nearest approximated the calendar year 1914.

^b The total expenditures of this division in 1914 were \$693,343.27. The percentage of illegitimacy cases was 22.9, hence the approximate expenditure for illegitimacy cases was \$158,775.62. Of the 1,721 children of illegitimate birth under care, 475, or 27.6 per cent, were Boston children included in the Boston study, and 89, or 5.2 per cent, whose residence was not Boston were given care by Boston agencies in 1914, and hence were also included in the Boston study. Thus, 32.8 per cent of the children of illegitimate birth under care of the division of State minor wards were included in the Boston study. The approximate amount expended by the division of State minor wards for the care of these 564 children was \$52,078.40.

^c No report was secured for the expenditures of one agency, and because of the impossibility in another case of separating the expenditures of a maternity hospital and a children's institution under the same management, the expenditures for this institution were also excluded.

Approximate expenditures during the year for the care of children born out of wedlock were estimated for the child-caring and child-protective agencies. (See Table 39.) The estimates were based on the percentages of cases involving children of illegitimate birth. The approximate amount spent during the year for the care of children born out of wedlock by the Boston child-caring and child-protective agencies and for Boston children of illegitimate birth by the State child-caring agency was \$124,000. It is probable that these children, handicapped by the circumstances of their birth, presented the most difficult problems of adjustment and required the most prolonged and expensive care, and that in consequence the estimate here given is an understatement of the actual expenditure chargeable to illegitimacy.

Racial Distribution.

According to the United States Census of 1910,¹ only 2 per cent of the total population of the city were Negroes. The proportion of

¹Thirteenth Census of the United States, 1910: Vol. II, Population, p. 880.

Negroes among children of illegitimate birth—7 per cent—was more than three times that in the general population. Of the 2,863 children born out of wedlock under the care of social agencies, 2,650 were white; 205 were Negro; 7 were American Indians; and 1 was Chinese.

Proportion of Problem Chargeable to Boston.

In Massachusetts the question of legal settlement is an important factor in the kind of public relief granted, cases of dependency in which settlement can be determined being chargeable to the town of settlement, and other cases being chargeable to the State. No attempt has been made in this study to classify the cases according to settlement. The place of birth and the residence of the child have been taken as indications of what proportion of the problem may properly be considered as belonging to Boston. For this purpose, residence has been defined as the mother's usual residence if the mother had the child with her at the time of application or had the responsibility for his care, and as the child's usual residence if the child was not under the mother's immediate care or supervision.

TABLE 40.—*Residence at application, and place of birth of children under care.*

Residence at time of application for care.	Children born out of wedlock under care in 1914.			
	Total.	Place of birth.		
		Boston.	Elsewhere.	Not reported.
Total.....	2,863	1,878	759	226
Boston.....	1,785	1,296	369	120
Metropolitan district outside Boston.....	479	274	180	25
Other Massachusetts.....	386	216	162	8
Other New England.....	74	49	24	1
Other United States.....	7	6	1	.....
Other.....	16	15	1	.....
Not reported.....	116	22	22	72

The following list shows the distribution according to nativity:

Boston.....	1,878
Metropolitan district outside Boston.....	221
Massachusetts outside metropolitan district.....	361
New England outside Massachusetts.....	79
Other United States.....	61
Canada.....	19
Other foreign.....	18
Not reported.....	226
Total children.....	2,863

Four-fifths of the children whose nativity was reported (see Table 40) were born within the metropolitan district. The children

born in Massachusetts outside this district included 158 born in the State Infirmity, to which institution are sent from all parts of the State persons who have no legal settlement and who must be given hospital care at public expense. The figures indicate a very small proportion coming from outside the United States, only 1 per cent coming from Canada and other foreign countries.

The figures for residence show a greater percentage of the children living within the metropolitan district at the time of application. The children had become Boston problems, and many of them had been under the care of Boston agencies before coming to the agencies giving care during the year studied. However, one-sixth of the children lived outside the metropolitan district at the time of application for agency care. This is due partly to the fact that a number of the Boston agencies cover territory outside the metropolitan district, and partly to the fact that the mothers came into Boston to secure agency care.

THE DEPENDENT CHILD OF ILLEGITIMATE BIRTH.

Status at Time of Application for Agency Care.

Age.

The age of the child at the time of application to the first agency giving care extending into the year studied is significant as indicating the character of the problems which had to be met in providing care for the children, and the time when the care given during the year was first required. However, this does not represent the age at which recourse to the assistance of agencies was first necessary, since the child might have been previously under the care of agencies that did not continue the case into the year studied. Data concerning age and sex at time of application for care are given in Table 41.

More than one-fourth of the 2,863 children had been under care from birth. Almost three-fifths of the children had come under care of the agencies studied before they had completed their first year of life.

TABLE 41.—*Age at application, and sex.*

Age at application.	Children born out of wedlock, under care in 1914.			
	Total.	Boys.	Girls.	Sex not reported.
Total.....	2,863	1,459	1,387	17
Under care from birth.....	766	378	384	4
Less than 1 year.....	919	463	447	9
1 year.....	222	127	92	3
2-5 years.....	503	288	214	1
6-9 years.....	240	115	125	.....
10-13 years.....	119	56	63	.....
14 years and over.....	74	22	52	.....
Not reported.....	20	10	10	.....

Of the 2,863 children, 1,459 were boys and 1,387 were girls—72 more boys than girls. Under 1 year the numbers of boys and girls were practically the same, there being 841 boys and 831 girls. From 1 to 5 years the greatest discrepancy between the sexes occurred, there being 415 boys and 306 girls in these age groups. After this age girls predominated.

During the year a total of 1,416 children came under the care of the agencies studied. More than half these children (725) came under the care of child-caring or child-protective agencies. The ages of the children under care of these agencies are of greater significance than the age distribution of all the children under care during the year. Most of the children cared for by maternity homes and hospitals had been under care from birth, and those under care of health agencies were usually infants, hence age distribution would not be of particular interest in these cases. The ages of the children coming under the care of institutions for the delinquent or the mentally defective were relatively high, but the numbers involved were too small to make analysis significant. Following are the ages at time of application of the children coming under the temporary or prolonged care of child-caring or child-protective agencies during the year:

Total coming under the care of child-caring or child-protective agencies during the year ² -----				725
Under care from birth-----	63	6-9 years-----		67
Less than 1 year of age-----	308	10-13 years-----		29
1 year-----	65	14 years and over-----		25
2-3 years-----	104	Not reported-----		13
4-5 years-----	51			

More than half the children whose ages were reported—52 per cent—were less than 1 year of age at the time of application. Three-fourths—76 per cent—were less than 4 years old.

Presence with or separation from mother.

Excluding those under care from birth, there were 2,097 children under care of the agencies studied. Presence with or separation from the mother at the time of application was reported for 1,786 of these children. Only 55 per cent were living with their mothers when they came to the attention of the agencies. The percentage was considerably higher for the 1,131 who, previous to application, had not received prolonged care from agencies than for the 655 who were known to have received prolonged care previously—61 per cent as against 45 per cent. Table 42 gives for the former group the propor-

²Including only cases in which the first application during the year to an agency studied was to a child-caring or child-protective agency.

tions of children of various ages who were living with their mothers at the time of application.

TABLE 42.—*Per cent of children separated from mother previous to application by age—children who had not received prolonged care previously.*

Age at application.	Children born out of wedlock, under care in 1914, who had not received previous prolonged care.						
	Total. ^a	Whose presence with or separation from mother at application was reported.				Whose presence with or separation from mother was not reported.	
		Total.	With mother.		Separated from mother.		
			Number.	Per cent.	Number.		Per cent.
Total.....	1,382	1,131	687	60.7	444	39.3	251
Less than 1 year.....	716	550	408	74.2	142	25.8	166
1 year.....	131	113	52	46.0	61	54.0	18
2-3 years.....	180	156	69	44.2	87	55.8	24
4-5 years.....	101	88	44	50.0	44	50.0	13
6-9 years.....	139	126	67	53.2	59	46.8	13
10-13 years.....	68	64	30	46.9	34	53.1	4
14 years and over.....	32	31	15	48.4	16	51.6	1
Not reported.....	15	3	2	(b)	1	(b)	12

^a Excluding 766 who had been under care from birth.

^b Less than one-tenth of 1 per cent.

One-fourth of the children under 1 year of age whose presence with or separation from the mother was reported, and who had not been under care previously, had already been separated from their mothers at the time of application to the agencies studied. More than half the children from 1 to 3 years of age, inclusive, had been separated from their mothers. It is interesting to note that the largest proportion living apart from their mothers was found among those 2 and 3 years of age, and that the proportion separated was less for the 6-to-9-year age group than for any other group except that under 1 year. The smaller proportion of children 2 to 3 years of age and the larger proportions of children in the higher age groups who were with their mothers may indicate that if the mother has succeeded in keeping her child with her during his infancy she is able to do so for several years. By the time the child is 4 or 5 years old, however, her resources, either in the form of help from her family or from the child's father, fail her, or the struggle to support the child becomes too difficult and she is forced to apply for help from agencies.

Table 43 gives, for the children who had been under prolonged agency care at some time previous to application, the proportions with their mothers and separated from them.

TABLE 43.—*Per cent of children separated from mother previous to application, by age—children who had received prolonged care previously.*

Age at application.	Children born out of wedlock, under care in 1914, who had received previous prolonged care.						
	Total.	Whose presence with or separation from mother at application was reported.				Whose presence with or separation from mother was not reported.	
		Total.	With mother.		Separated from mother.		
			Number.	Per cent.	Number.		Per cent.
Total.....	715	655	292	44.6	363	55.4	60
Less than 1 year.....	203	190	124	65.3	66	34.7	13
1 year.....	91	85	39	45.9	46	54.1	6
2-3 years.....	144	129	41	31.8	88	68.2	15
4-5 years.....	78	68	24	35.3	44	64.7	10
6-9 years.....	101	93	40	43.0	53	57.0	8
10-13 years.....	51	47	17	36.2	30	63.8	4
14 years and over.....	42	40	6	15.0	34	85.0	2
Not reported.....	5	3	1	(a)	2	(a)	2

^a Less than one-tenth of 1 per cent.

For the children who had previously been under prolonged care the percentages separated from their mothers were consistently larger than in the case of the children who had not been under the prolonged care of agencies previous to application. According to age distribution, however, the figures show the same general tendency in both cases. The highest percentage of children under 14 years who were separated from their mothers at the time of application was found among the children 2 and 3 years of age, while the lowest percentages were found among infants, children 1 year of age, and children 6 to 9 years of age.

Home or place of residence.

Of the children whose homes or places of residence at the time of application were known (excluding those under care from birth), 44 per cent were, at the time of coming to the attention of the agencies, in the homes of their mothers, grandparents, other relatives, or friends. Table 44 gives the type of home or place of residence of the child at the time application was made for agency care.

TABLE 44.—*Home or place of residence of children of specified ages at application.*

Home or place of residence of child at application.	Children born out of wedlock, under care in 1914.								
	Total. ^a	Age at application.							
		Less than 1 yr.	1 yr.	2-3 yrs.	4-5 yrs.	6-9 yrs.	10-13 yrs.	14 yrs. and over.	Not reported.
Total.....	2,097	919	222	324	179	240	119	74	20
Mother's own home.....	320	<i>b</i> 62	37	58	<i>b</i> 48	67	34	13	1
Mother's other establishment.....	42	3	8	3	6	13	6	3	.....
Mother's place of employment.....	51	26	11	9	3	2	.....	.....	.....
Mother's parental home.....	157	69	18	24	11	20	8	7	.....
Other maternal relative's home.....	73	34	7	7	5	12	7	1	.....
Paternal relative's home.....	31	5	1	5	3	7	4	5	1
Friend's home.....	30	14	3	4	1	3	2	2	1
Adoptive or foster home.....	47	2	4	3	4	8	15	11	.....
Boarding or free home.....	403	153	61	82	31	40	23	12	1
Public infirmary or maternity home.....	97	78	6	8	2	1	.....	2	.....
Hospital.....	152	146	2	1	2	.....	1	.....	.....
Other institution.....	72	10	12	23	10	9	3	5	.....
Other.....	10	8	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	2	.....
Not reported.....	612	309	52	97	53	58	16	11	16

^a Excluding 766 who had been under care from birth.^b In 1 case the mother was not present in the home.

One of the striking facts brought out by Table 44 is the number of children who were in their mothers' own homes. Twenty-two per cent (320) of the 1,485 children whose homes or places of residence were reported were living in homes of this type at the time of application. By the mother's "own home" is meant a home maintained by the mother and her husband or consort, or a home which had been thus established but which a widowed or deserted mother was maintaining alone. It is interesting to note that half the children living in their mothers' own homes were 4 years of age or over; the mothers who had married or who were living as married had been able in many cases to keep the children a number of years. Some unfortunate crisis in the family, or the discovery of bad conditions in the home, was responsible for the children at last coming to the agencies.

The 42 children—3 per cent of the total reported—living in the mother's "other establishment" included children living with mothers who were proprietors of lodging houses or who were living in lodgings, if the mothers were not married or living as married. A few of the mothers of children included in this group were keepers of disorderly houses. Two-thirds of these children were 4 years of age and over, 9 of them being 10 years of age and over. The conditions under which many of them were living involved extreme moral danger.

A surprisingly small number of children—only 51, or 3 per cent—were living with the mother in her place of employment. In 46 of these cases the mothers were at housework and 5 were in occupa-

tions of other kinds. Half the children living under these conditions were less than 1 year of age.

A considerable number—157, or 11 per cent—of the children who came to the attention of agencies and whose homes or places of residence were reported were living in the homes of their mother's parents, either with or away from the mothers. The age distribution shows that more than two-fifths were less than 1 year of age; more than two-thirds were less than 4 years of age. The grandparents had met the situation for a time, but were unwilling or unable to continue care, or the homes were reported unfit. The responsibility for some of these children had been maintained by the grandparents for a considerable number of years.

Besides the children cared for in the homes of their mothers or maternal grandparents, 104, or 7 per cent of the total reported, had been cared for by other relatives previous to application. More than one-third of these were infants under 1 year of age. Of especial interest is the fact that 31 children were in the homes of their fathers' relatives. Most of these children were 4 years of age and over, while in the case of the children who had been cared for by their maternal relatives, the greater number were under 4 years of age. An additional 30 children—2 per cent—had been provided for in the homes of friends.

An interesting group is composed of the children who had been taken over permanently by foster parents, either through legal adoption or otherwise. Of the children who came to the attention of agencies and whose homes or places of residence were reported, 47, or 3 per cent, were under care of foster parents who had found themselves unable to continue caring for these children, or whose homes were reported unfit. As might be expected, more than half these children were 10 years of age and over. That 2 infants had been taken by foster parents whose homes were reported to agencies as unfit before the children were a year old, indicates the necessity for thorough investigations in these cases.

The largest number in any one group were in boarding or free homes, these 403 children representing 27 per cent of the total reported. In some cases the children had been boarded privately by their mothers, who were unable longer to carry the burden of their support. In other cases they had been boarded by agencies, either with or away from their mothers, and their care was transferred from one agency to another. Three-eighths of the children in boarding homes were less than 1 year of age when the applications were made to the agencies studied. Almost three-fourths of them were under 4 years of age. The fact that a change had been made in their care may be partly accounted for by the fact that some of the agencies

care only for young children, while others specialize in the care of older children.

A total of 249 children—17 per cent of the total reported—were in public infirmaries, maternity homes, or hospitals previous to application. With the exception of a small number of older children who were receiving medical care, all were under 1 year of age, most of them having been born in these institutions.

Seventy-two children—5 per cent—were living in other institutions, chiefly institutions for children. In many cases these were temporary homes maintained as a part of the work of child-caring societies. Ten children—less than 1 per cent—were living in homes of other types than those specified. The large number of cases in which home or place of residence at application was not reported is due to the fact that the records of some of the agencies did not afford complete information on such points.

The home or place of residence of the 979 children who were with their mothers at the time of application indicates (see Table 45) the ways in which the mother and child had been provided for up to the time of application.

TABLE 45.—*Home or place of residence of children of specified ages, who were with their mothers at application.*

Home or place of residence of child.	Children born out of wedlock, under care in 1914, who were with their mothers at application.					
	Total.	Age at application.				
		Less than 1 yr.	1-3 yrs.	4-9 yrs.	10 yrs. and over.	Not reported.
Total.....	979	532	201	175	68	3
Mother's own home.....	318	61	95	114	47	1
Mother's other establishment.....	42	3	11	19	9	.....
Mother's parental home.....	109	61	24	16	8	.....
Home of relatives or friends.....	54	37	9	6	1	1
Mother's place of employment.....	51	26	20	5	.....	.....
Boarding home.....	53	37	12	3	1	.....
Public infirmary or maternity home.....	71	63	6	2	.....	.....
Hospital.....	125	124	1	.....	.....	.....
Other institution.....	6	5	1	.....	.....	.....
Other.....	1	1	.....	.....	.....	.....
Not reported.....	149	114	22	10	2	1

At the time when it was found necessary to apply for care for these children nearly two-thirds—523 of the 830 with their mothers whose home or place of residence was reported—were living in their mothers' homes or in the homes of relatives or friends. Almost one-fourth (196) were in hospitals, maternity homes, or the public infirmary, most of them being under 1 year of age. Only 51 were in the mothers' places of employment and 53 were in boarding homes. Seven children were provided for in other ways than those specified.

Almost two-fifths of the 418 children less than 1 year of age who were with their mothers and whose homes or places of residence were reported were living in their mothers' homes or in the homes of relatives or friends. More than two-fifths were in hospitals, maternity homes, or the public infirmary.

The proportions of children with their mothers who were cared for in their mothers' own homes or by relatives or friends increased in the older age groups. More than three-fourths of those 1 to 3 years of age, and more than nine-tenths of those 4 years of age and over were so cared for.

The percentage of children living in their mothers' places of employment was highest among the children 1 to 3 years of age, 11 per cent of those of this age who were with their mothers being provided for in this way. Six per cent of the children less than 1 year of age were with the mother at her place of employment, the proportion decreasing to 2 per cent among the children 4 years of age and over.

The home or place of residence was known for 650 of the 807 children who were separated from their mothers at the time application was made for agency care. Although deprived of their mothers' care, one-fifth of these children had been provided for in the homes of their maternal grandparents or with other relatives or friends. Over half the children who were away from their mothers were in boarding, free, or wage homes. The homes or places of residence of the children who were away from their mothers were as follows:

Total away from their mothers.....		807
Total whose home or place of residence was reported.....		650
Mother's parental home.....	47	Hospital, maternity home, or public infirmary 49 Other institution..... 66 Other 11
Home of relatives or friends.....	80	
Adoptive or foster home.....	47	
Boarding, free, or wage home.....	350	

These figures represent a group of children four-fifths of whom had been provided for by other than their natural guardians and who were in need of some other type of care than that which they were receiving. That 47 were in adoptive or foster homes indicates the need for care in the matter of adoptions.

Previous agency care.

Before coming to the attention of agencies giving care extending into the year studied, many of these children had been known to social agencies. Of the 1,625 children (excluding those under care from birth) under the care of agencies giving information on previous history, 595, or more than one-third, had previously received prolonged care from agencies. Many of these had been under the care of more than one agency. Prolonged care does not include hospital care unless it extended over a long period of time. The amount

of previous prolonged care known to have been received by the children is shown in Table 46.

TABLE 46.—*Prolonged care received previous to application, by age.*

Age at application.	Children born out of wedlock, under care in 1914.							
	Total. ^a	Who had received no previous prolonged care.	Who had received previous prolonged care.					
			Total.	From specified number of agencies.				
				One.	Two.	Three.	Four.	Five.
Total.....	1,625	1,030	595	448	118	20	8	1
Less than 1 year.....	671	483	188	169	19	.....	.....	.....
1 year.....	200	117	83	59	19	5	.....	.....
2-5 years.....	362	211	151	107	35	6	3	.....
6 years and over.....	385	214	171	111	45	9	5	1
Not reported.....	7	5	2	2	.....	.....	.....	.....

^a Excluding 766 who had been from birth under care of the agencies studied, and 472 under care of agencies not giving complete information.

Naturally, the proportion who had received previous agency care was larger among the older children than among the younger. Somewhat more than one-fourth of the children under 1 year of age had received previous care. More than two-fifths of the older children had received such care; the percentages for the various age groups above the first year ranging from 42 to 44.

The majority of the children who had been under care previously had been under the supervision of other than child-caring agencies. These other agencies included principally maternity homes, public infirmaries, and the child-protective agency. One reason for the large amount of previous care is that all neglect cases before the courts in Boston are handled by the protective society. Table 47 gives information concerning previous prolonged care by child-caring and by other agencies.

TABLE 47.—*Type of prolonged care received previous to application, by age.*

Age at application.	Children born out of wedlock, under care in 1914.				
	Total. ^a	Who had received no previous prolonged care.	Who had received previous prolonged care.		
			Total.	From child-caring agencies.	From other agencies.
Total.....	1,625	1,030	595	b 208	387
Less than 1 year.....	671	483	188	32	156
1 year.....	200	117	83	24	59
2-5 years.....	362	211	151	60	91
6 years and over.....	385	214	171	91	80
Not reported.....	7	5	2	1	1

^a Excluding 766 who had been from birth under care of the agencies studied, and 472 under care of agencies not giving complete information.

^b Including 83 children under care both of child-caring and of other agencies.

It is significant that 208 children—one-eighth of all whose previous histories were known—had been wards of child-caring agencies before applications were made to the agencies giving care during the year covered by the study. In some of these cases the children had merely been transferred from one child-caring agency to another. In most cases they had been discharged from care because relatives or friends had assumed the responsibility for them, or because they had been adopted. These plans for the care of the children had proved not to be permanent solutions, and it had again been necessary for applications to be made for agency help. Only 6 per cent of the children under 2 years of age had been wards of child-caring agencies. The percentage increased with the age of the child, until almost one-fourth of those 6 years of age and over had been under care of such agencies.

A study of the previous histories of these children suggests three things:

First. The fact that a child born out of wedlock is received for prolonged care by a child-caring agency does not indicate that he will always be dependent upon social agencies. Efforts are made by the agencies to secure the assumption of care by those legally responsible as soon as they are able to assume the burden. The histories of many dependent children born out of wedlock show intervals of care by relatives.

Second. In the locality studied there are several agencies engaged in most of the fields of children's work. The same child may have been under the care of two or three agencies of the same type. This does not, however, necessarily imply a criticism of the agencies involved. There is a constantly increasing specialization of work, both territorially and according to types of cases, and a close cooperation among the agencies. The fact that a child has been known to several agencies may imply an effort to secure treatment best adapted to his needs.

Third. Whether or not the shiftings of a child from one type of care to another are unavoidable, or seem to be the best that can be done in the child's interests, the fact remains that change of environment or of supervision, at least in the case of an older child, requires adjustments which are difficult. The severing of old ties and the frequent new situations that he must meet may have a bad effect upon the child's development.

Source of application.

The source of application refers to the person or agency making application for the care of the child to the first agency giving care that extended into the year covered by the study. For the 2,219

children for whom this information was known, the sources of application were as follows:

Total reported-----		2,219	
Court-----	183	Paternal relative-----	21
Public agency-----	408	Friend-----	379
Private agency-----	614	Boarding woman-----	45
Mother-----	377	Other-----	77
Maternal relative-----	115		

In about one-fourth of these cases—27 per cent—the source of application or commitment was a court or other public agency. Applications from public agencies were usually from the overseers of the poor or from the public infirmary.

A slightly larger number of applications—28 per cent—were from private agencies. In some of these cases the applications were made to public agencies, the cases being considered of such a nature as to require public care. In other cases the applications were from one agency which had cared for the child to an agency giving a different type of care, the treatment given by the first agency no longer being appropriate. In a large number of cases the fact that the application came from one agency to another indicated that the mother or other person originally applying for aid had not known which agency was best suited to the needs of the child or which organization would accept the particular type of case.

Seventeen per cent of the applications were made by the mothers and 23 per cent by other relatives or by friends. A small number of applications were made by boarding women. In most of these instances relatives had failed to pay the child's board. In almost all the remaining cases the mother or her family had been under care before the child's birth for other reasons than the mother's need for care during pregnancy.

Reason for application.

It is difficult to classify the social causes which brought these children to the attention of social agencies. The fact of birth out of wedlock usually implies the lack of normal home care and of adequate financial support. The assumption of responsibility by the mother and her family often requires unusual strength of character and willingness to brave public opinion, as well as resources sufficient to bear the burden of support and care. At the same time the background of illegitimacy frequently includes poverty, mental incapacity, moral weakness, and delinquency on the part of the mother or her family. These various factors are so interwoven that no attempt was made to assign to a given case any one cause. The immediate reasons for applications, as distinguished from underlying causes, do, however, throw considerable light upon the types of situa-

tions in which recourse to agencies is necessary. These have been classified for the child-caring and child-protective group. For the other agency groups the immediate reasons are self-evident (i. e., maternity homes—maternity care needed; health agencies—nursing care or medical advice needed; correctional agency—child delinquent). In 2,068 instances the first applications were to child-caring or child-protective agencies. The reasons for application were reported for 1,815 of these children, as follows:

	Number.	Per cent distribu- tion.
Total reported.....	1,815	100.0
Maternity care needed	64	3.5
Mother dead	39	2.1
Mother unfit to care for child or mother's home unfit.....	486	26.8
Mother feeble-minded or insane.....	47	
Mother committed to an institution for delinquents.....	37	
Mother otherwise unfit.....	166	
Mother's home unfit.....	236	
Mother unable to care for child.....	663	36.6
Mother's husband unwilling.....	16	
Mother physically unable.....	68	
Mother otherwise unable	579	
Child abandoned or deserted.....	289	15.9
Board unpaid	24	
Abandoned at board.....	69	
Otherwise deserted	196	
Child in unfit home (other than mother's).....	79	4.4
Boarding home unfit	21	
Custodian's home unfit.....	58	
Other	195	10.7
Custodian unable or unwilling to care for child.....	24	
Child neglected, not otherwise specified.....	51	
Child delinquent or unmanageable.....	29	
Child sick.....	29	
Not otherwise specified	62	

In a small number of cases—4 per cent of the total reported—the applications were made before the children were born, because maternity care was needed. In only 2 per cent of the cases did the death of the mother make agency care necessary. More than one-fourth of the applications—27 per cent—were made because the mother was unfit to care for the child, or was living in a home in which there existed conditions detrimental to the child's welfare. This group of 486 cases, because of its size and the nature of the problems involved, represented the most serious condition both for the child and for society. Many of these children had been subjected to abuse and neglect or had lived in homes in which immorality and drunkenness were common. The majority would probably remain under agency care during childhood, and in many cases painstaking and intensive work would be needed to counteract the effect of their early neglect.

In 250 of the 486 cases in which the unfitness of the mother or of her home was the reason for application, the mother herself was mentally incapacitated, delinquent, or immoral. In 236 cases the home conditions under which the mother and child were living were so bad that agency intervention was necessary. In many of these cases, also, the mother was delinquent or immoral. Of the 250 mothers whose unfitness was the immediate reason for the application, 47 were feeble-minded or insane, 37 were committed to institutions for delinquents at the time the applications for the children were received, and 166 were otherwise unfit because of delinquency, immorality, or intemperance.

The largest single group of applications came because of the mother's inability to care for the child. This group constituted 37 per cent of the total reported. In 16 of these 663 cases the mother's husband was unwilling to receive the child into his home. In 68 cases the mother's poor health made it impossible for her to retain the responsibility for the child. In the other 579 cases the incompetence of the mother, insufficient means, inability to find employment where she might keep the child with her, and, in a few cases, her unwillingness to make any effort to care for the child, constituted the reasons for application.

In 16 per cent of all the cases in which the cause of application was known, the board of the children had not been paid, they had been definitely abandoned at board, or they had been otherwise deserted; and these were the reasons for the application. Since foundlings, concerning whose parentage nothing was known, were not included in this study, this group of 289 cases is surprisingly large. In the 24 "board unpaid" cases, the boarding women wished to be relieved of the care of the children, as they had received no pay for their services for considerable periods; the mothers or relatives were, however, retaining some connection with the children. In the 69 "abandoned at board" cases the whereabouts of the mothers or relatives was unknown; they had promised to pay for the board of the children and had paid, perhaps, for a time but had then abandoned them. This group of cases is a considerable underestimate of the number of children born out of wedlock received by agencies because they have been abandoned at board. A large number of other cases were found, but the information about parentage was too scant to warrant classifying the children as of illegitimate birth, though the majority of them were probably born out of wedlock. The large group of "otherwise deserted" cases (196) includes foundlings whose parentage was later established by investigation, children who were known to be of illegitimate birth and who were abandoned at other places than at board, and children who were

reported as having been deserted but in regard to whose abandonment the details were not given.

Four per cent of the children came to the attention of child-caring or child-protective agencies because of bad conditions in the homes in which they were boarding or in the homes of relatives (other than their mothers) or guardians. Eleven per cent came for miscellaneous reasons, including the inability or unwillingness of the custodian, other than the mother, to retain the care of the child; the neglect of the child, the circumstances of which were not stated; the child's delinquency; the child's illness; the need for aid in securing support from the father; and other unclassified reasons.

In 1,360 cases—66 per cent of the 2,068 in which the first applications were to child-caring or child-protective agencies—the aid requested was that the agency assume full responsibility for the care of the child. In some of those instances the mothers were willing or could be persuaded to contribute something for the support of the children, though they did not wish to keep the children with them or to retain the burden of providing for their welfare. In the remaining 34 per cent of the cases other kinds of aid were requested, such as provision for the care of mother and child, the mother wishing to keep the child with her; assistance in finding the mother employment where she could keep the child; maternity care; assistance in prosecuting the father; investigation and supervision of children who were complained of as neglected; investigation of proposed adoptions; help in settling questions of disputed guardianship; and other assistance of like character.

Following are illustrations of some of the circumstances leading to the application for agency care:

A private child-caring agency in another city asked one of the Boston child-caring agencies to find a place at service for an unmarried mother who wished to keep her child with her. The child had been born in a maternity home and was a little over a year old at the time of application. The mother, a foreign-born colored woman 22 years of age, was described as untidy, sullen, violent tempered, and somewhat abusive, and was said to be of low mentality. The child's father had disappeared. None of the mother's relatives was in this country. The mother was placed, with the child, at service, but did not remain long in any position. After eight months she and the baby went to another city, and the case was referred to an agency there. (Case V 106.)

It was reported to a private agency during the year of the study that a week-old infant was being neglected. On investigation it was found that the mother, 22 years old, and the maternal grandmother had come from Canada three months before the child's birth for the purpose of concealing the situation from the grandfather and from friends. The child was born in a private house. He was very weak and was not properly nourished. The chief concern of the mother and the grandmother was to find a boarding place for the baby that they might return to Canada. The agency secured the cooperation of an infant-welfare society and the baby improved greatly. The grandmother

applied to several agencies for help in finding a boarding place for the baby; but she was refused assistance, since all were cooperating with the first agency in impressing upon her and the mother their responsibility for the child. In this the societies were so successful that when the baby was 5 weeks old the mother and grandmother returned to Canada with the child, planning to board him with friends there. (Case V 60.)

During the year of the study complaint was made to a protective agency that two adopted children of illegitimate birth were being neglected by their foster parents. The older child, 3 years old, and the younger, an infant 10 months old, had been legally adopted by the same family, though the children were not related to each other. The foster mother had been very immoral; at the time the complaint was made she was living apart from her husband, who had instituted divorce proceedings. The children were boarded part of the time with a friend of the foster mother. The foster mother died while the children were under supervision and the woman with whom the children had been boarded adopted both the children. A sister of the older child, also of illegitimate birth, was under the care of a child-caring agency. (Case V 576.)

The year previous to the period covered by this study a private agency requested the State child-caring agency to assume the care of a month-old infant. The child had been born in a maternity home in Boston, where the mother and baby were still being cared for. The agency making the application had known the family for a number of years. The child's maternal grandmother was irresponsible and probably feeble-minded and had no control over her children. The home conditions were bad, the grandparents quarrelsome and shiftless. Two of their children were feeble-minded, two were mothers of children of illegitimate birth, and one was an inmate of a reformatory. The family had been under the care of a child-protective society and of the juvenile court.

The child's mother was 19 years of age. She had been given a mental examination and was pronounced a "defective delinquent." Having been promiscuously immoral, she lost her case against the alleged father. The man was colored; the mother, white. He was said to have been married three or four times. The mother had been employed by him in a clerical capacity.

The State child-caring agency investigated the case but refused to assume the care of the child because there was a local settlement. Application was then made to the public child-caring agency of the city of Boston. No definite action was taken for some time by this agency, since the child was being boarded in a near-by town, the maternal grandfather paying the board. When the baby was nearly a year old, the relatives failed to keep up the payments and application was again made to the State child-caring agency. However, a private individual became interested in the case and took mother and baby into his home, the mother doing housework. The man soon became discouraged in his attempts to reform the mother and came to the conclusion that in any case the mother and child should not be kept together, the former being white and the latter colored. He therefore applied to a private child-caring agency, asking that they place the child at board. After investigation, this agency decided not to accept the case, since the child had been placed in a family by a hospital social-service worker, board being paid by the mother's former employer. The latter then applied to another private child-caring agency for assistance in securing the prosecution of the mother and the acceptance of the child by the public child-caring agency in the city. Shortly after, the mother was taken ill and died, and the care of the child was finally assumed by the

public child-caring agency of the city. The child was placed in a boarding home, and was reported to be doing well. (Case V 997.)

Care Given by the Agencies Studied.

Length of time children were cared for.

The ages of the children at the end of the year or when agency care ceased were as follows:

Total under care.....			2,863
Less than 1 year.....	1,045	10-13 years.....	241
1 year.....	365	14-17 years.....	203
2-3 years.....	319	18 years and over.....	114
4-5 years.....	215	Not reported.....	8
6-9 years.....	353		

The total amount of care given these children by the agencies under whose supervision they were in the year studied could be estimated only for those receiving prolonged care. The time over which the temporary care extended would not have been significant, since the exact amount of work within that time could not have been estimated.

During the year 2,319 children born out of wedlock were under the prolonged care of the agencies included. The amount of care given the children by these agencies by no means represents the total amount of agency care that had been given during their lives. A large number of them had been under agency care before coming to the attention of these agencies; many had received care from agencies not continuing their care until the year studied. The figures given in Table 48 for time under care represent the extent of continuous care from the agencies having charge of the children during the year covered by this study.

TABLE 48.—*Duration of care received by children of specified ages who were under prolonged care.*

Age at end of year or close of care.	Children born out of wedlock, under prolonged care in 1914.							
	Total.	Number of years under care.						
		Less than 1.	1	2-3	4-5	6-9	10-13	14 and over.
Total.....	2,319	1,028	383	307	187	241	83	87
Less than 1 year.....	694	694						
1 year.....	319	101	218					
2-3 years.....	266	82	73	110				
4-5 years.....	194	39	30	78	47			
6-9 years.....	319	53	19	65	68	114		
10-13 years.....	222	33	21	23	41	70	34	
14-17 years.....	188	17	14	22	19	43	31	41
18 years and over.....	110	7	6	8	11	14	18	46
Not reported.....	7	2	2	1	1			

More than half the children receiving prolonged care—56 per cent—had been under care one year or longer. Of the 1,618 children 1 year of age and over at the end of the period, 80 per cent had been under agency supervision for a year or more. Of the 839 children 6

years of age or over, 49 per cent had been under care of these agencies at least 6 years. One-third of the 520 children 10 years of age and over—33 per cent—had been under care for at least 10 years. Eight children had been under care for 18 years, 5 for 19 years, and 2 for 20 years. Most of the children under care for these very long periods were wards of the State.

Considering only the children 1 year of age and over at the end of the period, and excluding 7 children whose ages were not reported and 2 for whom time under care was not reported, a total of 1,616 children received prolonged care during the year from the agencies included in the study. These 1,616 children received care for an average of about 3 years and 9 months per child. More than three-fourths of these children remained under care at the end of the year; hence the time during which they had received care as reported in this study does not represent the total amount of work these agencies will do in their behalf.

TABLE 49.—*Aggregate and average duration of care received by children of specified ages.*

Age at end of year or close of care.	Children born out of wedlock, under prolonged care in 1914.	Number of years under care.	
		Aggregate.	Average.
Total.....	<i>a</i> 1,616	6,169.0	3.8
1 year.....	319	<i>b</i> 268.5	.8
2-3 years.....	265	368.0	1.4
4-5 years.....	194	454.5	2.3
6-9 years.....	319	1,310.5	4.1
10-13 years.....	222	1,158.5	5.2
14-17 years.....	187	1,453.5	7.8
18 years and over.....	110	1,155.5	10.5

a Excluding 694 children under 1 year of age at close of care or at end of period, 7 whose ages were not reported, and 2 for whom time under care was not reported.

b Estimating average for those under care less than 1 year as 6 months—101 children, 50.5 years.

The time under care may be better interpreted in relation to the ages of the children. (See Table 49.) Those between 1 and 2 years of age had been under care an average of 10 months. Those 2 and 3 years of age had spent on an average 1 year and 4 months under the care of agencies. The children 4 and 5 years of age had been under the continuous care of the agencies having charge of them in the year studied for an average of 2 years and 4 months. Those 6 to 9 years of age had been under care for an average of 4 years. Those between the ages of 10 and 13 had been in charge of the societies on an average of five years and two months. The children 14 to 17 years of age had been under supervision for an average of 7 years and 9 months. Those 18 years of age and over had been under the continuous care of these agencies for an average of 10 years and 6 months.

Home or place of residence of children at end of period.

The type of provision made for the child born out of wedlock is of very great interest in considering the kind of care he receives and the degree to which his surroundings approximate those of a child of more fortunate birth. Complete histories of the children would show many expedients adopted for their care and often many shiftings from one disposition to another. The necessary limitations of this report make it impossible to do more than present a cross section of the types of provision made, supplemented by more detailed histories of representative cases. It must be borne in mind that the data here presented refer only to children receiving care from agencies. Those cases in which the most complete adaptation to normal home conditions have been made are not included, since recourse to agency care had not been necessary.

A synopsis is given in Table 50 of data concerning the home or place of residence of the children receiving prolonged care from agencies on the last day of the year studied or, in cases which were closed before that date, immediately previous to the close of care. This furnishes an index of the types of dispositions made by agencies for the children in their care; the ages of the children are significant in this connection.

TABLE 50.—*Home or place of residence, at end of period, of children of specified ages receiving prolonged care.*

Home or place of residence at end of year or immediately preceding close of care.	Children born out of wedlock, under prolonged care in 1914.						
	Total.	Age at end of year or close of care.					
		Less than 1 yr.	1 yr.	2-5 yrs.	6-9 yrs.	10 yrs. and over.	Not reported.
Total.....	^a 2,301	681	316	459	318	520	7
Family home.....	1,875	407	288	426	304	447	3
Mother's own home.....	147	14	17	52	28	35	1
Mother's other establishment.....	21	1	2	6	6	6	.....
Mother's place of employment.....	128	72	28	19	8	1	.....
Mother's parental home.....	121	58	20	21	12	10	.....
Home of other relatives or friends.....	77	27	7	15	11	16	1
Adoptive or foster home.....	68	7	12	28	11	10	.....
Boarding, free, or wage home.....	1,313	228	202	285	228	309	1
Institution.....	379	257	22	28	10	60	2
Hospital, public infirmary, or maternity home.....	199	150	17	18	2	11	1
Institution for the feeble-minded.....	19	.....	.....	.....	3	16	.....
Institutions for delinquents.....	23	6	.....	2	1	14	.....
Other institution.....	138	101	5	8	4	19	1
Not reported.....	47	17	6	5	4	13	2

^a Excluding 18 cases in which the last care received was temporary, though the child had been under prolonged care earlier in the year.

At the end of the year studied or immediately previous to the close of care, family homes were caring for four-fifths—81 per cent—of the 2,301 children received prolonged care at the end of the period. Only 17 per cent were in institutions, and the majority of these children were in infirmaries, hospitals, or maternity homes—institutions not giving permanent care but providing for the children during times of special need. The location of 2 per cent of the children was not reported.

In Massachusetts, perhaps more than in any other State, public and private agencies follow the practice of placing children in family homes rather than caring for them in institutions. Excluding the children who, at the end of the period, were being cared for by relatives, friends, or foster parents and the children receiving special care in hospitals, maternity homes, public infirmaries, or in institutions for the feeble-minded or delinquent, a total of 1,451 children remained. Of these children, 1,313, or 90 per cent, were in boarding, free, or wage homes, while only 138, or 10 per cent, were in institutions. It is probable that most of those 138 children were receiving institutional care only temporarily, pending placement or replacement in family homes.

Although the prolonged care of all the 2,301 children considered had been definitely assumed by the agencies, 168—7 per cent—were living in homes or establishments maintained by their mothers. Advice, supervision, and perhaps financial assistance had to be supplied, but the mothers were succeeding with this aid in keeping their children with them. Only 34 of the children living in homes maintained by their mothers were under 2 years of age. Almost one-fourth of the children cared for in this way were 10 years of age and over. The establishment by the mother of a home of her own in which the child may be brought up seems often to occur a considerable time after the child's birth.

For a mother without means or without relatives able or willing to give shelter to her and the child, placing at domestic service is often the only method by which she can be rendered self-supporting and able to keep the child with her. In some cases employment of other types may be found in which there exist the same possibilities of keeping the child. One of the agencies in Boston placed mothers as wet nurses. Sometimes mothers were employed as institution attendants and allowed to keep their children with them. However, comparatively few children were living at their mothers' places of employment. Only 6 per cent of the children receiving prolonged care were thus provided for at the end of the period. Of the 128 cared for in this manner more than half were under 1 year of age, and more than three-fourths were under 2 years of age; only 9 chil-

dren were 6 years of age and over. The mothers of 25 of the 128 children were in employments other than housework.

Considering only the children receiving prolonged care from child-caring or child-protective agencies at the end of the period, the distribution according to home or place of residence was as follows:

	Number.	Per cent distribution.
Total receiving prolonged care from child-caring or child-protective agencies at end of period.....	1,913	100.0
In family homes	1,694	88.6
Mother's own home	139	7.3
Mother's other establishment	20	1.0
Mother's place of employment	82	4.3
Mother's parental home	78	4.1
Home of other relatives or friends.....	49	2.6
Adoptive or foster home.....	63	3.3
Boarding, free, or wage ² home.....	1,263	66.0
In institutions.....	189	9.9
Hospital, public infirmary, or maternity home.....	46	2.4
Institution for the feeble-minded.....	4	.2
Institution for delinquents.....	5	.3
Other institution.....	134	7.0
Not reported.....	30	1.5

Nearly nine-tenths of these children were in family homes at the end of the period. One-tenth were cared for in institutions. The percentage cared for in family homes was somewhat higher than the percentage of all children studied thus cared for. This is accounted for by the fact that most of the children in charge of other than child-caring or child-protective agencies were cared for by maternity homes and public infirmaries, which gave, in the main, institutional care.

Slightly more than one-fifth of the children under care of child-caring or child-protective agencies were being cared for in the homes of their mothers, in their mothers' places of employment, or in the homes of relatives, friends, or foster parents. Two-thirds of the children were in boarding, free, or wage homes. Child-caring and child-protective agencies had placed nearly seven times as many children in boarding, free, or wage homes as in institutions.

Most of the Boston agencies are very conservative in the matter of adoption. High standards are required, both in the kinds of homes into which children are adopted and in the class of children given for adoption. The adoption of wards of these agencies is not permitted until the homes have been tried for six months or a year and the agencies are convinced that the adoptive homes will be successful. The small number of children—3 per cent of the total—reported to

² A home in which the child receives wages in return for services.

be in homes into which they had been adopted, or in which they had been placed on trial for adoption, indicates the policy of the agencies in this respect. In Massachusetts the boarding or the free home, in which the child remains under agency supervision, is the preferred method of caring for children who can not remain with relatives.

It had not been necessary to remove from their mothers all the 1,913 children assumed for prolonged care by child-caring or child-protective agencies. In Table 51 are given the facts regarding this phase of the question. Public child-caring agencies had been able in only 1 per cent of their cases to keep mother and child together, but private child-caring agencies had been able to avoid separation in 14 per cent. The most difficult cases, presenting the least possibilities of assumption of care by the mothers, are usually referred to public agencies, while private agencies in accepting applications prefer cases in which there exists the possibility of the mother's cooperation and of constructive work with both mother and child. The child-protective agency deals very largely with neglected children, and in many cases it supervises the children in their own homes, pending final disposition or during a period when constructive work is attempted which will make the removal of the child from his home unnecessary. Therefore, a great many of the children under care of this agency are with their mothers.

TABLE 51.—*Presence with or separation from mother, at end of period—children of specified ages receiving prolonged care—by type of agency.*

Agency caring for child and whether child was present with or separated from mother.	Children born out of wedlock, under prolonged care of child-caring or child-protective agencies in 1914.					
	Total.	Age at end of year or close of care.				
		Less than 1 yr.	1 yr.	2-5 yrs.	6-9 yrs.	10 yrs. and over.
Total.....	1,913	399	279	442	313	476
Public child-caring agency.....	538	18	31	162	145	182
With mother.....	7		1	2	3	1
Separated from mother.....	529	18	30	160	142	179
Not reported whether present with or separated from mother.....	2					2
Private child-caring agency.....	1,003	338	204	172	93	193
With mother.....	136	69	27	26	12	2
Separated from mother.....	864	267	176	146	81	191
Not reported whether present with or separated from mother.....	3	2	1			
Child-protective agency.....	372	43	44	108	75	101
With mother.....	214	31	29	72	44	37
Separated from mother.....	149	11	13	35	31	59
Not reported whether present with or separated from mother.....	9	1	2	1		5

The detailed histories of the children, the amount of time spent with their mothers, the shiftings from one type of care to another and from boarding home to boarding home, can be shown only for individual cases. A few of these histories are given below, the first two illustrating the very frequent shifting from home to home which sometimes occurs:

Application was made to a private child-caring agency for the care of a 2-weeks-old infant. The mother was living in her parental home, but the maternal grandmother was dead, the mother was obliged to go to work, and there was no one to care for the child. The case was referred to another child-caring agency which had known the family for eight years—having been called in originally by a family-care agency to care for the children, the grandmother being dead and the grandfather in jail. The mother was 19 years of age at the time of the child's birth, and had been earning \$6 a week.

The child was placed at board by the second agency mentioned, the mother promising to pay what she could. When the child was 7 months old the case was referred to the agency to which application had first been made, since he was delicate and needed special care. After a few weeks in a hospital he was discharged to the mother, who placed the child at board, but at the end of three weeks hospital care was again necessary. A little later the child was placed at board by the first agency mentioned and remained at board under supervision throughout the year covered by the study. During a period of 15 months the child was in eight different boarding homes. (Case V 1694.)

A little more than a year previous to this study application was made to a private child-caring agency on behalf of a mother who was doing housework in a neighboring city and her child who was being boarded in another State. The friend making the application wished the baby boarded nearer the mother. The mother was of good character, and her employers had stood by her in her trouble. The father, employed by the same family, had disappeared when he learned of the mother's condition. The baby, born in a hospital in another State, was boarded with the mother for two months and then boarded away from the mother under the supervision of a children's agency. She was 3 months old at the time the application was made to the Boston agency. No action was taken for some time, but when the baby was nearly 8 months old she was brought to Boston and boarded near the mother under the supervision of the child-caring agency first mentioned. During the nine months following the child was boarded with seven different families and was placed nine different times, three times in the same family. At the end of that time the mother assumed full responsibility, and the child was discharged from the care of the agency. (Case V 1535.)

Three months before the birth of a child out of wedlock application was made to a private child-caring agency by a medical agency for the care of the mother, a girl of 20 who had no work and no money. The girl's mother had been dead for nine years, and her father had deserted the family five years before the application was made. The girl had worked in a factory, earning \$6 a week. From the age of 16 she had been wayward and stubborn. She had lived with the father of her child—a carpenter, earning fair wages—for five or six months; but he had deserted when he discovered her condition. The agency made arrangements for the mother to return to a family with whom she had lived as a young girl. After the baby's birth in a hospital the agency boarded the mother and

baby together for six or seven months, and then placed them in a home where the mother did housework. The mother was very fond of the child, and improved wonderfully under agency supervision. She again got in touch with the alleged father, and when the child was nearly 2 years old the parents were married and established a home. The agency helped the mother with the preparations for her marriage. The outlook for the child and the parents seemed very favorable. (Case V 1012.)

Eighteen years before this study was made a child was born out of wedlock in a Boston hospital. The mother, a woman of 28, had been engaged to the father, but refused to marry him because she had found that he was worthless. She was described as very ignorant, but very anxious to support herself and the child. She felt deeply disgraced by the situation. Her occupation was domestic service, and she earned about \$6 a week.

When the mother and baby left the hospital the care of the child was assumed by a private child-caring agency. This agency cared only for children under 2 years of age, so when the child reached the age of 2 application was made to another child-caring agency. The mother was paying board regularly, but the child needed supervision. The second agency assumed the care of the child and retained it throughout the period covered by the study. The mother paid part of the child's board, the agency supplementing the amount and paying also a debt of the mother's. When the child was 17 years old she began to work for her board and a few months later was placed in a wage home. She had completed grammar school, but was not very bright, and, after a mental examination, was pronounced probably subnormal. She was neurasthenic and during the year of study had chorea. She was placed in a boarding home for care and then in a convalescent home, but later returned to her place at housework, where she was giving satisfaction. (Case V 1878.)

Occupations of children 14 years of age and over.

Of the 239 children 14 years of age and over under the care of agencies whose records contained more or less complete information, 32 were in institutions. The occupations of 109 of the remaining 207 children were reported and are shown in Table 52:

TABLE 52.—Occupations of boys and girls 14 years of age and over.

Occupation at end of period.	Children born out of wedlock, 14 years of age and over, under care in 1914, whose occupations were reported.		
	Total.	Boys.	Girls.
Total.....	109	53	56
Attending school.....	48	24	24
Housework.....	14		^a 14
Farm.....	7	7	
Factory.....	12	6	6
Store.....	10	^b 6	^a 4
Office.....	1		1
Other.....	10	9	1
None.....	7	1	6

^a Includes 1 also attending school.

^b Includes 4 also attending school.

More than two-fifths of the children 14 years of age and over—24 boys and 24 girls—whose occupations were reported were attending school. Some of the children remained in school after the age of 14 because their previous slow progress had made it necessary; others were being given the opportunity of advanced schooling. It is probable that most of the children of this age who were attending school earned at least a part of their board by helping before and after school hours with the housework and on the farm. In addition to the 48 children included above there were 6 also attending school, of whom 4 boys and 1 girl were employed in stores and 1 girl at housework after school hours or during vacations.

Fourteen of the 56 girls were employed at domestic service, and 12 were employed in other gainful occupations. Seven of the 53 boys were employed at farm work and 21 in gainful occupations of other types.

Disposition of children whose cases were closed during year.

A total of 1,168 children born out of wedlock died or were discharged from care during the year. Of those, 465 were receiving temporary care immediately previous to the close of the case, and 703 were receiving prolonged care. In 264 cases the child had died. Of these children, 52 had received temporary care and 212 prolonged care. The care of the 904 children discharged during the year was assumed by the mothers, other relatives, friends, foster parents, or by other agencies or institutions. (See Table 53.) In a few instances the children were of age or were old enough to take care of themselves and had become self-supporting.

TABLE 53.—*Persons or agencies assuming responsibility for children discharged from temporary and from prolonged care during the year.*

Person or agency assuming responsibility for child.	Children born out of wedlock, discharged from care in 1914.		
	Total.	Who had received temporary care.	Who had received prolonged care.
Total.....	904	413	491
Mother.....	453	190	263
Relatives or friends.....	89	29	60
Adoptive or foster parents.....	42	8	34
Private agency or institution.....	98	58	40
Public agency or institution.....	74	34	40
Self.....	22	.....	22
Not reported.....	126	94	32

In 58 per cent of the 778 cases in which the person or agency assuming responsibility for the child was reported the child was discharged to his mother. The proportion of children discharged to

their mothers from prolonged care was greater than those so discharged from temporary care. Relatives or friends assumed the care of 12 per cent of the children. Adoptive or foster parents took only 5 per cent. These figures again indicate the conservative policy of Boston agencies in regard to adoptions. Twenty-two per cent of the children reported were assumed by other agencies or institutions, more often private than public. Three per cent were of age or were in no further need of supervision, being able to provide for themselves.

Of the 459 children discharged from prolonged care whose histories reported the persons or agencies assuming responsibility, 57 per cent were discharged to their mothers, 13 per cent to relatives or friends, 7 per cent to adoptive or foster parents, 18 per cent to agencies or institutions, and 5 per cent were of age or were in no further need of supervision.

The reasons for the termination of the 465 cases in which the children had received temporary care previous to the close of the case, were as follows:

Total receiving temporary care previous to the close of the case.....	465
Child dead.....	52
Mother able to care for child.....	59
Other relatives or friends able to care for child.....	21
Home situation improved.....	46
Care no longer appropriate.....	163
Other disposition made.....	72
Child disappeared and impossible to locate.....	22
Other.....	22
Reason not reported.....	8

In a little more than one-tenth of the cases the child had died. In 59 cases—about an eighth of all the temporary cases closed during the year—the mothers were able to assume the responsibility for the care of their children; in 19 of these cases, the mother's family came to her assistance; in 3 cases the mother married the child's father; in 4 cases the mother's husband, though not the father of the child, was willing to provide for him. Relatives or friends assumed the care of 21 children; in 3 of these cases paternal relatives took the child. The 46 cases closed because of improvement in the home conditions had come in as neglect complaints, the situation proving to be less serious than stated or having changed for the better. All but 6 of the 72 cases in which "other disposition" was made were referred to other agencies for care. The 163 cases in which "care was no longer appropriate" were chiefly hospital cases, the patients being ready for discharge. In 22 instances the child had disappeared, and could not be found. The 22 cases closed for other reasons included 7 children placed in adoptive homes, 3 deported, 3 moved from the city, 3 referred to other agencies because of illness, 2 delinquent and

1 feeble-minded referred to other agencies for special care, and 3 discharged for other reasons.

The reasons for terminating the cases of the 703 children receiving prolonged care were as follows:

Total receiving prolonged care previous to the close of the case-----		703	
Child dead-----	212	Child self-supporting-----	6
Mother able to care for child-----	144	Care no longer appropriate---	9
Other relatives or friends able to		Child disappeared and impos-	
care for child-----	47	sible to locate-----	26
Child placed in adoptive home----	31	Child delinquent, feeble-	
Home situation improved-----	56	minded, or insane-----	12
Child deported-----	18	Other disposition made-----	79
Age limit reached-----	21	Other -----	13
Child of age-----	15	Not reported -----	14

In almost one-third of these cases the child had died. In one-fifth the mothers had become able to assume the care of the children. This proportion is considerably larger than in the case of the children receiving temporary care. In 38 of the 144 cases in which the mother was able to care for the child, the mother's family came to her assistance; in 25 cases the mother married the child's father, and in 3 other cases support was secured from the father; in 17 instances the mother's husband was willing to support the child. In 95 cases—slightly more than one-eighth of all—the child was either deported, reached the age limit set by the agency under whose care he was, became legally of age, was released because he was self-supporting, had disappeared, or the particular kind of care which the agency had been giving was no longer suited to his needs.

Characteristics of the Children.

Physical condition.

Information in regard to the physical condition of the children was limited, since the only sources of information were agency records, and the agencies were not uniform in the completeness of their records. The children's agencies in Boston as a rule make an effort to take the best care of the physical condition of the children in their charge. Physical examinations are given the children on reception. Medical and dental treatment is furnished by consulting physicians and dentists, or by physicians attached to the regular staffs of the agencies. Hospital facilities are excellent and include out-patient and social-service work. The visitors employed by the agencies try to watch carefully the condition of their charges. For infants under 2 years of age some of the agencies have trained nurses as visitors, and visits are made as often as once or twice a day should

the child's condition require such frequent attention. Infants reported as boarded in private homes are visited by nurses of the State board of charity, hence all children of this age boarded by agencies have the supervision of the agency and the State board.

Modern child-caring work puts more and more emphasis upon the adequate physical care of the children. Their charges often come to the agencies in poor physical condition because of the circumstances under which they have been living and the neglect to which they have in many cases been subjected. Some of them have a defective heritage and suffer from constitutional weaknesses. The best medical skill and the utmost care are necessary to make possible their development into strong and healthy children.

The New England Home for Little Wanderers, in their home in Boston, has made especially good provision for the physical care of its wards. Facilities for the most efficient medical diagnosis and also for some treatment are provided. Two children's agencies have entered into a special arrangement with the Boston Dispensary for preventive and medical treatment of the children in their care.

Agencies have, however, hardly begun to realize the need for uniform and exact records, filled out at regular intervals, showing the physical condition and development of their charges. Existing records are, in this respect, often haphazard and unscientific. Only serious physical conditions or acute illnesses are entered. The failure to record regular and scientific observations makes it impossible for agencies to check up their work, to determine what treatment is most conducive to the welfare of the children, what homes are providing healthful surroundings and good care, and how much work should be expected from children in free or wage homes who are trying to keep up with their studies. No criteria for measuring results of child-placing work are possible without this primary record of physical condition.

Infants born out of wedlock die, in Boston, at a rate three times as high as that for infants born in wedlock.⁴ Lack of proper feeding and care appears to be the chief cause. No information is available in this country as to whether or not those who survive the first year are weaker than children of legitimate birth, or whether more of them suffer from diseases such as tuberculosis, syphilis, and rachitis. It is probable that the handicaps to which so many of the children born out of wedlock are subjected have serious effects upon their physical growth and development.

For 2,288 children the agency records were sufficiently complete to permit the assumption that any serious illness or chronic disease

⁴ See p. 89.

would have been mentioned in the records. Those children in whose cases no statements as to physical condition were made were assumed to be in good health. The figures as to those in poor condition represent, therefore, only a minimum of those in poor health. The information relates to the end of the year studied or to the time of discharge.

Total children in whose cases records were sufficiently complete to give a basis for statement on physical condition.....	2,288
Assumed to be in good physical condition.....	1,768
Having very defective vision.....	9
Having very defective hearing.....	8
Crippled or deformed (including 1 also rachitic).....	23
Tubercular (including 2 also rachitic).....	21
Having rachitis.....	24
Having syphilis or gonorrhea (including 2 also having defective vision, 1 also rachitic and having defective vision, 3 also crippled or deformed, and 1 also rachitic and crippled).....	87
Suspected of having syphilis or gonorrhea (including 1 also having defective vision).....	10
Epileptic (including 1 also crippled).....	2
In otherwise poor condition.....	336

Slightly more than three-fourths of the children were assumed to be in good physical condition. Almost one-fourth were in poor condition. Many of the children were very seriously handicapped and required special care.

Mental condition.

As in the case of physical condition, the information concerning mentality is fragmentary. Only such data as appeared on existing records were available. Most of the agencies had examinations for mentality only for such of their wards as they had reason to think were not normal. The figures as to subnormal children must, therefore, be considered as minimum. Even school progress was by no means uniformly recorded. Table 54 shows the information obtained in regard to mental condition.

The children assumed to be of normal mentality, no report to the contrary having been made, constituted 83 per cent of the 656 children 7 years of age and over who were under the care of agencies having fairly complete records. Seventeen per cent of the children were not normal mentally or were very backward in school. The proportion below normal increased with the higher age groups.

Of the 110 children who were very backward or mentally below normal, 41 had been diagnosed feeble-minded; 2 were insane; 17 were probably subnormal or feeble-minded, but mental examinations had

not been made; 15 were designated subnormal or abnormal; and 35 others were extremely backward in school. The "subnormal or abnormal" group included children diagnosed as borderline feeble-minded, or defective delinquent. The percentage of children who had been diagnosed feeble-minded was high—6 per cent.⁵

TABLE 54.—*Mental condition of children 7 years of age and over.*

Age at end of period.	Children born out of wedlock, 7 years of age and over, under care in 1914.						
	Total. ^a	Mental condition.					Insane.
		Normal, so far as known.	Very backward in school.	Probably sub-normal or feeble-minded, but not diagnosed.	Sub-normal or abnormal (diagnosed).	Feeble-minded (diagnosed).	
Total.....	656	546	35	17	15	41	2
7-9 years.....	212	185	12	7	1	7	.....
10-13 years.....	205	171	12	5	5	12	.....
14 years and over.....	239	190	11	5	9	22	2

^a Excluding 148 children under care of agencies not reporting mental condition.

Because of the diversity in the work of the agencies and institutions included in the study, the different classes of children cared for by the various agencies, and the fact that some agencies made more thorough investigations and kept more complete records than others, a separate analysis was made of the mental condition of the children under care of a selected group of private agencies. These comprised five child-caring agencies dealing with children of all ages and the child-protective agency. Table 55 shows the mental condition of the 305 children 7 years of age and over under care of these agencies.

⁵ An investigation in a rural county in Delaware made by the U. S. Public Health Service and the Children's Bureau showed that 0.94 per cent of the white children 5 to 20 years of age, inclusive, were feeble-minded. The percentage found among white school children, exclusive of placed-out children brought into the county from outside was, 0.95—the same as that previously found by the Public Health Service in the rural schools of a county in Indiana. See *Mental Defect in a Rural County*. A study made through the collaboration of the U. S. Public Health Service and the Children's Bureau, by Walter L. Treadway, M. D., and Emma O. Lundberg, U. S. Children's Bureau, Dependent, Defective, and Delinquent Classes Series No. 7, Bureau Publication No. 48. Washington, 1919. Pp. 30, 39.

TABLE 55.—*Mental condition of children 7 years of age and over, under care of five private child-caring agencies and a child-protective agency.*

Age at end of period.	Children born out of wedlock, 7 years of age and over, under care in 1914.					
	Total.	Mental condition.				
		Normal, so far as known.	Very back- ward in school.	Probably subnormal or feeble- minded, but not diagnosed.	Subnormal or abnormal (diag- nosed).	Feeble- minded (diag- nosed).
Total.....	305	272	15	7	7	4
7-9 years.....	97	92	3	1	1	.....
10-13 years.....	112	99	7	4	2	.....
14 years and over.....	96	81	5	2	4	4

Eleven per cent of the children 7 years of age and over under care of the five private child-caring agencies and the child-protective agency were not normal mentally or were very backward in school. This percentage was considerably lower than that found among children under care of all agencies included in the study reporting mental condition—17 per cent. Feeble-minded children formed 1 per cent of those under care of the selected group of agencies, as compared with 6 per cent among children under care of all agencies reporting mental condition. These differences may be largely accounted for by the fact that Boston children under care of institutions for the feeble-minded were included in the larger group. The percentages below normal or very backward but not diagnosed feeble-minded or insane were very nearly the same for the two groups—9.5 for children under care of the five child-caring agencies and the child-protective agency and 10.2 for all the children under care of agencies reporting mental condition.

Conduct.

As reported on the records, the conduct of almost one-fourth of the children 7 years of age and over was considered unsatisfactory. A more thorough analysis by the agencies of the personalities and characteristics of the children in their charge would be of the greatest value, both in determining the kind of treatment needed for the individual child and in testing the results of their work. Especially is thorough understanding of character essential to good case work with those children whose reactions toward society are sometimes affected unfavorably by knowledge of the conditions of their birth or by their early experiences.

Absence of information as to conduct in the case histories of agencies who kept records containing more or less complete informa-

tion concerning the children in their care was assumed to indicate that the child's conduct was satisfactory. It was thought probable that most cases of troublesome behavior would have been recorded. Characteristics were tabulated only for children 7 years of age and over. (See Table 56.)

TABLE 56.—*Conduct of children 7 years of age and over.*

Age at end of period.	Children born out of wedlock, 7 years of age and over, under care in 1914.														
	Boys and girls.						Boys.				Girls.				
	Total.	Conduct good, so far as known.		Conduct poor.		Total.	Conduct good, so far as known.		Conduct poor.		Total.	Conduct good, so far as known.		Conduct poor.	
		Num-ber.	Per-cent.	Num-ber.	Per-cent.		Num-ber.	Per-cent.	Num-ber.	Per-cent.		Num-ber.	Per-cent.	Num-ber.	Per-cent.
Total.....	a656	497	75.8	159	24.2	342	271	79.2	71	20.8	314	226	72.0	88	28.0
7-9 yrs.....	212	188	88.7	24	11.3	111	99	89.2	12	10.8	101	89	88.1	12	11.9
10-13 yrs.....	205	158	77.1	47	22.9	113	83	73.5	30	26.5	92	75	81.5	17	18.5
14 yrs. and over	239	151	63.2	88	36.8	118	89	75.4	b 29	24.6	121	c 62	51.2	d 59	48.8

a Excluding 148 children under care of agencies not reporting conduct.

b Includes 2 committed from Boston to a State institution for delinquents and not under care of Boston agencies during the year.

c Includes 1 committed from Boston to a State institution for delinquents and not under care of Boston agencies during the year.

d Includes 14 committed from Boston to a State institution for delinquents and not under care of Boston agencies during the year.

As might be expected, a larger percentage of the older children than of the younger were reported as unsatisfactory in conduct. Only 11 per cent of the children from 7 to 9 years of age, inclusive, were so reported, while 23 per cent of the children 10 to 13 years of age, and 37 per cent of those 14 years of age and over were reported as having been delinquent, uncontrollable, or not amenable to discipline. The high percentage among the older children is partly due to the fact that Boston children committed to State institutions for delinquents were included in the study. It must be borne in mind that these percentages are based upon children under care of agencies and are not representative of all children born out of wedlock.

The percentage of boys whose conduct was reported as unsatisfactory was lower than the percentage of girls whose conduct was so reported—21 as compared with 28. Analyzed by age groups, the percentages were very nearly the same among children 7 to 9 years of age—11 for the boys and 12 for the girls. In the age group of 10 to 13 years the percentage of boys whose conduct was poor was much higher than the percentage of girls—27 as compared with 19. Of the children 14 years of age and over, 25 per cent of the boys and 49 per cent of the girls were reported as having been delin-

quent, uncontrollable, or not amenable to discipline. It must be remembered that Boston children committed to State institutions for delinquents were included in the study. Excluding from the group 14 years of age and over the 2 boys and 15 girls so committed and not under care of Boston agencies during the year, the percentage of boys whose conduct was unsatisfactory is reduced from 25 to 23 and the percentage of girls from 49 to 42. However, the percentage among the girls remains almost twice that among the boys.

Of the 29 boys and 59 girls 14 years of age and over whose behavior was described as unsatisfactory, 3 boys and 37 girls were known to have been guilty of sex offenses, 13 boys and 6 girls of stealing, stubbornness, or other forms of delinquency, and 13 boys and 16 girls had given serious trouble at home or in school. Twelve of the girls who were sex offenders were mothers of children born out of wedlock.

Following are some examples of satisfactory and of unsatisfactory character development among the children under care:

An 18-year old girl had been under the supervision of a private child-caring agency from the age of 2 years; before that date she had been cared for by another agency specializing in the care of infants. She had been in the same boarding home from the age of 2 years, her mother paying part of her board regularly. The mother, 32 years of age when the child was born, was described as a self-supporting, self-respecting woman who earned her livelihood as a laundress. Nothing was known of the alleged father except that he was a Canadian and a day laborer. The girl was well liked by her companions and proved to be exceptionally bright. Ambitious to become a school-teacher, she was planning to go to college for at least two years in preparation for that profession. (Case V 1720.)

Three children born out of wedlock—a girl of 6 years, a boy of 4, and a boy of 2—were received by a public child-caring agency 7 years before the period covered by this study. Their mother and father had been living together for 6 or 7 years. At the time of application the father had been sent to prison for perjury, having married a girl of 14 whose age he had misrepresented. Subsequently the mother had, by another man, a fourth child out of wedlock.

The children were all placed in boarding homes, where they did very well. At the time of the study the girl was attending high school and was described as "good, bright, capable, and in good health." The boys were strong, active, and bright, and were doing well in school. (Cases V 816, 817, 818.)

A 16-year-old boy of illegitimate birth had been under the care of a private child-caring agency for 14 years; he had lived in the same boarding home for 9 years. Deserted by his mother when only a few months old, he had been cared for by an infant asylum until he was received by the agency already mentioned. In the year of the study the boy went to work, paying his own board and attending night school. He did poor work, however, and found it impossible to support himself. He refused to follow the plans the agency made for him, and was reported to be fretful, fickle, and somewhat dishonest. (Case V 767.)

A girl of 20 and her 18-year-old half sister, both of illegitimate birth, had been under the care of a private child-caring agency for 10 years. Their

mother had been very immoral and had died of tuberculosis before the children were received by the agency. The girls were placed in various family homes. Both sisters were weak and easily influenced, and the elder was intemperate; both were very immoral. The elder had a child born out of wedlock during the year of the study. The baby was taken by the girl's foster mother. The year following, the younger sister had a child born out of wedlock. This girl was given a mental examination and was found to be neither insane nor feeble-minded, but very suggestible. (Cases V 2336, 2337.)

A girl of 16 had been under the care of a private agency for two years, having come under care because of her troublesome conduct in school. She had been born out of wedlock, but her parents had later married each other. Her mother had had by another man a previous child born out of wedlock. The girl was wayward and the mother, who worked away from home all day, found it impossible to control her. At the age of 14 the girl left school and went to work in a factory; she later worked for short periods as a waitress and at housework. Her companions were of bad character, and the girl was very immoral. At the age of 15 she had a child whose paternity it was impossible to determine. The maternity home where the child was born reported the mother untruthful and in need of constant supervision. After leaving this maternity home the mother and baby returned to the home of the mother's parents. The baby died at the age of 3 or 4 months. The girl, though under agency supervision, continued to be a trouble maker in the community. (Case V 1959.)

Nine years previous to this study application was made to a private child-caring agency for the care of a 10-year-old boy of illegitimate birth. The boy's mother died the year after he was born. He had been placed at board when he was 3 days old, the maternal grandparents paying. Later the boarding woman decided to adopt him, but before the adoption was accomplished the woman became ill and made application, through the child's grandmother, to have the care of the boy assumed by the agency. The agency accepted the case but kept the boy in the same home, paying for his board and clothes. A year later the boarding home was changed, since the first woman was unable to keep the child. About this time the boy, who had been apparently a normal child, became nervous, lazy, and troublesome. He was given a mental examination and pronounced mentally subnormal. He was tried in different homes but was unsatisfactory and finally stole a sum of money. He was arrested and sent to a reformatory, where he still was at the end of the period studied. He was reported by the institution as not doing well. (Case V 2285.)

THE CHILD'S HERITAGE AND THE POSSIBILITIES OF THE PARENTS' PROVIDING CARE.

The importance of knowledge of the child's heritage as a necessary preliminary to efficient work is more and more being recognized by child-caring agencies. For children born out of wedlock such information is often difficult to obtain, especially as regards the father and paternal grandparents. Yet from the point of view of heredity, paternal characteristics are of equal importance with maternal. So far as nature is concerned there is no "fatherless child."

The character and capability of the mother and the nature of her relationship to the child are of primary importance in considering the problem of the care of a child born out of wedlock. The fundamental need of childhood is maternal care, no less for children of illegitimate birth than for others. Whether or not the mother can supply this need and what assistance, if any, is necessary depend upon a number of factors, such as her maturity, her physical and mental condition, her ability to earn a livelihood, and the other obligations which she must meet.

The mothers of the children who have come to the attention of social agencies are those whose circumstances are the most pressing—those least able to meet the demands maternity has put upon them. The facts here analyzed are therefore not entirely representative of the whole group of mothers of children born out of wedlock, but only of those most in need of assistance. The purpose of the analysis is to determine the heritage of the children and the conditions surrounding them, and is not intended to be a discussion of the causative factors in the problem of illegitimacy. Therefore, the statistics are based upon the number of children, and not upon the number of mothers. There were 2,863 children included in the study, but in many cases several children in the same family were under care, hence the total number of mothers represented was 2,585. (See Table 57.)

TABLE 57.—*Mothers having specified numbers of children under care.*

Number of mother's children under care.	Mothers of children born out of wedlock, under care in 1914.	Children born out of wedlock, under care in 1914.
Total.....	2,585	2,863
One.....	2,388	2,388
Two.....	140	280
Three.....	40	120
Four.....	11	44
Five.....	5	25
Six.....	1	6

In cases in which a mother had several children under care, she was counted once for each child. This method of analysis must be borne in mind, especially in the discussions of mental condition, character, and home conditions. The data presented indicate the extent to which the children were subjected to various handicaps and are not intended to show the prevalence of certain conditions among women who are mothers of children born out of wedlock.

Little information was available concerning the fathers of the children studied. It is often very difficult to secure information in

regard to the paternity of a child of illegitimate birth because of the natural reticence of the mother. Social agencies have only recently begun to recognize the importance of knowledge of the father's status, not only for the purpose of securing contributions for the support of the child but also as essential to the intelligent handling of the case with justice to all concerned. Social case work is needed with the father as well as with the mother and child, and it must be recognized that he has oftentimes an instinct of affection for his child which may be developed.

The Child's Heritage.

Race and nativity.

Of the 2,863 children under care, 2,650 were white, 205 were colored, and 8 were American Indian or Chinese. (See Table 58.) Miscegenation was known to have occurred in 55 cases in which the children were colored; the mothers of 41 of these children were white and the fathers colored, while in 14 cases the mothers were colored and the fathers white. It is probable that in some cases in which the mother was colored and the paternity was not known the father was white.

TABLE 58.—*Race of children, by race of parents.*

Race of mother and of father.	Children born out of wedlock, under care in 1914.			
	Total.	White.	Negro.	Other.
Total.....	2,863	2,650	205	a 8
Mother white.....	2,691	2,650	41	
Father white.....	2,650	2,650		
Father Negro.....	41		41	
Mother Negro.....	139		139	
Father white.....	14		14	
Father Negro.....	54		54	
Father not reported.....	71		71	
Mother American Indian or Chinese.....	7			7
Father white.....	3			3
Father not reported.....	4			4
Mother not reported.....	26		25	1
Father Negro.....	3		3	
Father not reported.....	23		22	1

a Includes 7 American Indian and 1 Chinese.

Information as to the nativity of both parents was secured for only 587 of the 2,863 children under care. (See Table 59.) The nativity of the mother only was known in 1,626 cases and of the father only in 21, while in 629 cases the nativity of neither parent was reported. The large number of "not reported" cases is due to the inclusion in the study of certain agencies giving practically no social information.

TABLE 59.—*Nativity of parents.*

Nativity of both parents reported or not reported, and nativity of father if reported.	Children born out of wedlock, under care in 1914.				
	Total.	Whose mothers were of specified nativity.			
		United States.	Canada.	Other.	Not reported.
Total.....	2,863	1,227	345	641	650
Nativity of both parents reported	587	234	93	260	.....
Father, United States	200	155	16	29	.....
Father, Canada	79	23	49	7	.....
Father, other foreign	308	56	28	a 224	.....
Nativity of mother only reported.....	1,626	993	252	381	.....
Nativity of father only reported	21	.....	.....	.....	21
United States.....	11	.....	.....	.....	11
Canada.....	1	.....	.....	.....	1
Other foreign.....	9	.....	.....	.....	9
Nativity of neither parent reported.....	629	.....	.....	.....	629

a In 147 of these cases the country of birth of the mother and father was the same; in 77 cases, different.

If the cases in which the nativity of the father was known are representative for all the fathers, it would appear that more of the fathers than of the mothers were foreign born. Children whose mothers were foreign born constituted 45 per cent of all children the nativity of whose mothers was reported, while the fathers were foreign born in 65 per cent of the cases in which the nativity of the father was known. Of the 587 children for whom the nativity of both parents was reported, there were 60 per cent whose mothers were foreign born and 66 per cent whose fathers were foreign born.

In 351 cases, or 60 per cent of all in which the nativity of both parents was known, the mother and father had the same country of birth. In 155 of these cases, both were born in the United States; in 49, both in Canada; and in 147, both in some other foreign country.

The fathers and mothers of 236 children were known to have been born in different countries. Of 79 of these children the mothers were born in the United States and the fathers in Canada (23 cases) or in some other foreign country (56 cases). The mothers of 44 children were born in Canada and the fathers in the United States (16 cases) or in a foreign country other than Canada (28 cases). Of the 113 children whose mothers were born in a foreign country other than Canada, there were 29 whose fathers were born in the United States, 7 whose fathers were born in Canada, and 77 whose fathers were born in a foreign country not that of the mother.

Information as to nativity of the mother was secured for 2,213 children. Children of native-born mothers constituted 55 per cent

of this total. The mothers of 48 per cent of these children were born in Massachusetts, of 6 per cent in other New England States, and of 46 per cent elsewhere in the United States.

Children, the nativity of whose mothers was reported.....		2,213	
Mother, native born.....	1,227	Mother foreign born—Contd.	
Massachusetts	590	Italy	48
Other New England....	74	Norway	3
Other United States....	563	Poland	35
Mother foreign born.....	986	Portugal.....	9
Austria (exclusive of		Russia (exclusive of	
Austrian Poland)....	12	Finland and Russian	
Canada.....	345	Poland)	52
England and Wales....	52	Scotland.....	36
Finland	8	Sweden.....	40
France	5	Switzerland	5
Germany	9	West Indies.....	15
Greece	9	Other	10
Ireland.....	292	Not reported.....	1

In over one-third of the cases in which the mother was not born in the United States, she came from Canada. The greatest number of those coming from overseas were born in Ireland.

In considering the mother's ability to care for her child, it is of importance to know in the case of foreign-born mothers the length of time they had been in the United States when their children were born. Ignorance of language, custom, and conditions constitutes a serious handicap to the woman who must provide for her child with little or no assistance from the father. Although a large number of foreign-born mothers were of English-speaking nationalities, even with them the disadvantage inherent in recent arrival in a new country was present to a greater or less extent. In many of these cases the situation was made more difficult by the fact that the mother had come to this country alone, and hence there was little possibility of assistance by parents and other relatives.

Information as to length of time in the United States at the time of the child's birth was available in only 518 of the 986 cases in which the mother was foreign born. In 5 per cent of these cases the mother had come to this country after the child was born, in 7 per cent she was pregnant when she emigrated. Some of these mothers had left home for the purpose of concealing their condition from family and friends. The Canadian mothers often came in order to secure the assistance of social agencies. Other cases in which the mother had been in this country less than 5 years at the time of the child's birth constituted 37 per cent of the total reported, while the mothers of 51 per cent had lived in the United States more than 5 years. The

place of birth or conception and the length of the mother's residence in the United States are shown below:

Total reported.....	518
Child born or conceived abroad.....	62
Foreign born.....	25
Mother pregnant on arrival.....	37
Child conceived and born in the United States.....	456
Mother in the United States less than 2 years.....	37
Mother in the United States 2 to 4 years.....	157
Mother in the United States 5 years and over.....	262

In 5 per cent of the cases of foreign-born mothers whose ages were reported they had the additional handicap of extreme youth, being under 18 years of age when their children were born. The proportion under 18 was considerably smaller than that among the native-born mothers—17 per cent.

Native-born mothers whose ages were reported.....	961
Native-born mothers under 18 years of age.....	161
Foreign-born mothers whose ages were reported.....	723
Foreign-born mothers under 18 years of age.....	35

To summarize: More than half the cases involving children born out of wedlock dealt with by the agencies studied, in which the nativity of the mother was reported, concerned children of native-American mothers. More than two-fifths of the cases were complicated by the fact that the mother was foreign born and was probably handicapped by unfamiliarity with American conditions and by the absence of family and friends from whom she might otherwise have received assistance. Children of colored mothers comprised a very small percentage of the total.

Physical condition of mother.

Most of the social agencies studied made efforts to obtain medical examinations whenever there was reason to think that the mother was not in good health. Some of the histories, however, were obtained from agencies making no attempt at social investigation. The information here given pertains only to the mothers of about three-fourths of the children studied, and even for these cases it is undoubtedly an understatement of physical disability. In many instances it was obviously impossible for the agencies to secure complete information in regard to the mothers—for instance, when they could not be located at the time the applications for the care of the children were made.

The histories of 2,178 children were obtained from agencies giving more or less complete social information. The mothers of 59, or 3 per cent, of these children were known to have died before the applications were made for the care of the children. The mothers of more

than one-fifth—22 per cent—were known to be physically defective or diseased, or to be in poor physical condition. Following is a statement of the number of cases in which the mothers had disabilities of various types:

Total whose mothers were in poor physical condition.....	489
Having seriously defective vision.....	10
Having serious deafness.....	13
Crippled or deformed.....	23
Epileptic.....	11
Tubercular.....	61
Having syphilis or gonorrhea.....	122

(Exclusive of 19 cases classed under disabilities previously specified; a total of 141 children had mothers diagnosed as syphilitic or as having gonorrheal infection.)

Otherwise in poor condition.....	249
----------------------------------	-----

The mothers of 6 per cent of the 2,178 children had been diagnosed as having syphilis or gonorrhea. The percentage of cases in which the other specified disabilities existed ranged from less than 1 per cent to 3 per cent, with 11 per cent in which the mothers, though not having the disabilities enumerated, were known to be in poor physical condition.

Mental condition of mother, father, and maternal grandparents.

The importance of knowledge of the mentality of the child's parents as requisite to the intelligent care of dependent children is recognized by child-caring agencies. The New York State Conference of Charities and Correction in the Standards of Placing Out, Supervision, and After Care of Dependent Children, approved in 1915, considers the mentality of the child's parents an important factor in determining the type of home in which the child should be placed and the kind of supervision that should be given.⁶ In the case of children born out of wedlock such information is especially difficult to obtain in regard to the father and paternal relatives. Boston agencies caring for unmarried mothers and their children are in general aware of the importance of scientific determination of the mentality of the mother in all cases in which there is a question of abnormal or sub-normal mental condition.

The records of 2,178 of the 2,863 children of illegitimate birth under care gave more or less complete social information. Of these 2,178 children, the mothers of 379 were reported not normal mentally. The fathers of 16 children were reported below normal; in all but 4 of these 16 cases the mother was also below normal.⁷ So far as the

⁶ Report of the Special Committee of the New York State Conference of Charities and Correction on Standards of Placing-Out, Supervision, and After-Care of Dependent Children. Submitted to and approved by the Sixteenth New York State Conference of Charities and Correction, Albany, November 16-18, 1915.

histories stated, the mothers and fathers of 1,795 children were of normal mentality, and the parents of 383 were below normal. The 18 per cent having one or both parents below normal was without doubt a minimum. To a very much smaller extent than in the case of the mothers were the fathers known personally to the agencies caring for the children. The mental condition of the fathers would have been known only in the small number of cases in which defective or abnormal mentality was an outstanding factor. So far as the records gave this information, the mental condition of the mothers and fathers of the 2,178 children whose histories gave more or less complete social data was as follows:

Total reported	2,178
Both parents of normal mentality, so far as known.....	1,795
One parent of normal mentality, so far as known, other parent below normal.....	371
Mother of subnormal or abnormal mentality.....	65
Mother insane.....	31
Mother feeble-minded (diagnosed).....	129
Mother probably subnormal or feeble-minded (not diagnosed).....	142
Father insane.....	3
Father probably subnormal or feeble-minded (not diagnosed).....	1
Both parents below normal mentally.....	12
Mother insane, father probably subnormal or feeble-minded (not diagnosed).....	1
Both feeble-minded (diagnosed).....	4
Both probably subnormal or feeble-minded (not diagnosed).....	7

The mothers of 230 of the 2,178 children, or 11 per cent, were feeble-minded, or mentally subnormal or abnormal as established by mental examination, or were known to have been insane. The mothers of an additional 149, or 7 per cent, were probably subnormal or feeble-minded, but diagnoses had not yet been made.

The cases in which the mother was of subnormal or abnormal mentality, her mental condition having been thus diagnosed, constituted 3 per cent of those in which social information was available, and included 6 cases in which the mother was diagnosed as "high grade feeble-minded, not committable"; 30 in which she was diagnosed as defective or subnormal but not feeble-minded; 3 in which she was diagnosed as "psychopathic" or "constitutionally inferior"; 3 in which the mother had mild mental disorder not amounting to insanity; and 23 in which she was pronounced a "defective delinquent" or "moral defective." In 1 per cent of the cases the mother was insane; in 7 of these 32 cases she had been an inmate of a hospital for the insane previous to her pregnancy, in 4 instances being returned to the institution after the child was born. In addi-

tion to these 4, the mothers of 21 children were committed to hospitals for the insane after the children were born; in 4 cases in which the mother was insane she had not yet been admitted to an institution.

The mothers of 6 per cent of the children had been diagnosed feeble-minded. In only 32 cases—less than one-fourth of those in which the mother had been diagnosed mentally defective—had she been committed to an institution for the feeble-minded by the time this study closed. In 6 other cases the mother had been given temporary care in a public institution pending admission to an institution for the feeble-minded.

A separate analysis was made (see Table 60) of the mentality of mothers of children under care of six private child-caring agencies⁷ and of the child-protective agency. A total of 472 children born out of wedlock were under care of the six child-caring agencies, while 571 were cared for by the child-protective agency, 37 of these also being cared for by the child-caring agencies.

TABLE 60.—*Mental condition of mothers of children under care of six private child-caring agencies and of a child-protective agency.*

Mental condition of mother.	Children born out of wedlock, under care of 6 private child-caring agencies in 1914.	Children born out of wedlock, under care of a child-protective agency in 1914.
Total.....	a 472	b 571
Normal, so far as known.....	383	474
Subnormal or abnormal.....	22	25
Insane.....	6	7
Feeble-minded.....	22	21
Probably subnormal or feeble-minded (not diagnosed).....	39	44

^a Includes 37 also under care of the child-protective agency.

^b Includes 37 also under care of the child-caring agencies.

The mothers of 11 per cent of the children under care of the six private child-caring agencies were feeble-minded, mentally subnormal or abnormal, or were known to have been insane. The mothers of 39, or 8 per cent, were probably subnormal or feeble-minded, but diagnoses had not yet been made. These percentages are almost identical with the findings for the whole group of 2,178 children whose histories contained more or less complete social information. Among the children under care of the child-protective agency the percentage whose mothers were feeble-minded, mentally subnormal or abnormal, or insane, was slightly lower than in the case of the whole group of 2,178 children—9 as compared with 11. The percentage probably subnormal or feeble-minded but not diagnosed was

⁷ The five child-caring agencies included in the group analyzed separately for the mentality of the child, pp. 183-184, and another agency caring for mothers and young children.

8—the same as for the children under care of the child-caring agencies and only slightly higher than the 7 per cent found among the whole group of children.

Little definite information was given as to the mentality of the maternal grandparents. It was known, however, that one or both maternal grandparents of 65 of the children—3 per cent of the 2,178 whose records gave social information—were insane or mentally below normal, the maternal grandmother being thus reported in 44 cases, the maternal grandfather in 13 cases, and both maternal grandparents in 8 cases. Of the 65 cases in which one or both of the maternal grandparents were mentally below normal, there were 25 in which the mother was of normal mentality and 40 in which she was below normal. The mental condition of the maternal grandparents who were known to have been mentally below normal was as follows:

Total children, one or both of whose maternal grandparents were not normal mentally.....	65
Maternal grandmother:	
Subnormal	2
Insane	21
Feeble-minded (diagnosed)	6
Probably subnormal or feeble-minded (not diagnosed)	15
Maternal grandfather:	
Insane	10
Probably subnormal or feeble-minded (not diagnosed)	3
Both maternal grandparents not normal:	
Grandmother insane, grandfather feeble-minded (diagnosed)	1
Grandmother probably subnormal or feeble-minded, grandfather insane	1
Both probably subnormal or feeble-minded	6

A total of 408 children—19 per cent of the 2,178 whose histories gave social information—had a heritage in which there was known to be insanity, feeble-mindedness, or other subnormal or abnormal mental condition, or probable subnormality or feeble-mindedness. In 195 cases—9 per cent of the total reported—there was definite feeble-mindedness or insanity in the family history.

Total children under care whose histories gave social information..	2, 178
Parents and maternal grandparents mentally normal, so far as known	1, 770
Mother or one maternal grandparent mentally subnormal or abnormal	64
One or both parents or maternal grandparents feeble-minded or insane	195
One or both parents or maternal grandparents probably subnormal or feeble-minded (not diagnosed)	149

Character of mother, father, and maternal grandparents.

The information as to the character of the mothers, fathers, and maternal grandparents of the children born out of wedlock under

care of social agencies was by no means complete, even in the case of the mother, and was especially fragmentary in regard to the father and the grandparents. The value of such data to the agencies caring for the children is manifest, both for the sake of a better understanding of the child's characteristics and as a basis for decision as to the kind of care needed. Except in the case of abandoned children whose mothers can not be located, there would seem to be no reason why the facts concerning the mother should not invariably be ascertained and recorded. It should also be possible to obtain information in regard to the father's character in all cases in which paternity can be determined. It is often impracticable to secure information as to the character of the maternal grandparents, especially when the mother has immigrated to this country unaccompanied by her family.

The fact of illegitimate maternity or paternity necessarily implies a violation of generally accepted standards of conduct. However, for the purposes of this discussion the character of the mother or father was described as "good" if the infraction of the moral code resulting in the birth of a child out of wedlock was the only known evidence of antisocial conduct.

So far as shown by the records, the mothers of 993 children, or 46 per cent of the 2,178 concerning whom there was more or less complete social information, were of good character. Repeated violations of the moral code, serious alcoholism, dishonesty, or general worthlessness were reported in the histories of the mothers of 1,185 children—54 per cent.

The mothers of 884 children—41 per cent—were reported to have had other illicit sex experiences, while the mothers of 114 more—5 per cent of the 2,178—had lived as prostitutes. Serious alcoholism was also reported in 190 cases in which the mother was stated to have been immoral, while in 45 cases other delinquencies, and in 31 alcoholism and other delinquencies were reported in addition to sex offenses. Not all the mothers stated to have been prostitutes were engaged in prostitution at the time application was made for the care of the children; some had pursued this occupation for a short period only, while with others it had become their regular business. In the majority of cases in which the mother was a prostitute her history indicated that she had been immoral for gain previous to the child's birth. The data did not indicate that there was any considerable number of cases in which this form of immorality had been entered into because of the difficulties and discouragements and temptations that followed upon illegitimate maternity.

The mothers of 267—12 per cent of all—were reported as alcoholic. All but 46 of these were included above among the sexually

immoral. The large percentage of cases in which the mothers were addicted to drink indicates the degeneracy into which they had fallen either before or after the births of the children studied. Other delinquencies, such as theft or illegal selling of liquor or drugs, were recorded for the mothers of 98 children, 4 per cent of all. In only 22 cases was such delinquency not combined with the types of misconduct previously described. In 119 cases—5 per cent—the mothers were markedly shiftless, stubborn, uninterested in the welfare of their children or unwilling to make any effort to help themselves, though they had not been guilty of the definite offenses specified above.

It must be borne in mind that the facts here stated relate only to cases in which the mother was forced to apply to an agency for assistance in caring for her child. It is clear, however, that the proportion of children whose mothers were repeatedly sex offenders is large, and that the coincidence of sexual misconduct with failure to conform to the mores of society in other respects is frequent.

The records contained more or less information in regard to the character of the fathers of 732 of the children studied. Undoubtedly these represented to a large extent the men who had come to the personal attention of agencies either in connection with court action to compel support for the children or because they had been involved in other trouble that had brought them into conflict with the law. The data must, therefore, be considered as giving the worst side of the picture rather than as being representative of the whole group.

The fathers of 186, or 25 per cent of the children whose histories gave information as to the character of the father, were said to be alcoholic; in 113 of these cases immorality or other forms of delinquency were also reported. Immorality was reported in 314 cases, or 43 per cent. In 131 cases this form of antisocial conduct was associated with alcoholism or other delinquency. In 72 cases—10 per cent—other forms of delinquency were reported, being in combination with alcoholism or immorality in 46 cases. Hence, in a total of 420 cases—57 per cent of the 732 in which there was information—alcoholism, immorality, or other delinquency was reported. The fathers of 64 children—9 per cent—were otherwise of poor character, being reported markedly unreliable, shiftless, or generally worthless. The fathers of 248 were classified as of good character so far as known, though in 152 of these cases the father had absconded in order to escape his responsibilities toward the child.^s

Considering together the characters of the mothers and the fathers, and assuming that character was "good" unless otherwise

^s In addition to 54 cases in which the father had deserted and was also reported as alcoholic, immoral, otherwise delinquent, or of poor character.

reported, both parents of 898 of the 2,178 children concerning whom there was social information were of good character so far as known, and one or both parents of 1,280—59 per cent—were of poor character. (See Table 61.) In 389 of these 1,280 cases both parents were of poor character.

TABLE 61.—*Character of mother and of father.*

Character of mother.	Children born out of wedlock, under care in 1914.									
	Total.	Whose fathers were of specified character.								
		Good so far as known. ^a	Alcoholic.	Immoral.	Otherwise delinquent.	Alcoholic and immoral.	Alcoholic and otherwise delinquent.	Immoral and otherwise delinquent.	Alcoholic, immoral, and otherwise delinquent.	Otherwise poor.
Total.....	2,178	1,694	73	183	26	92	7	25	14	64
Good, so far as known.....	993	898	29	18	11	2	3	1	.....	31
Alcoholic.....	46	37	5	1	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	3
Immoral.....	732	490	11	123	7	49	2	18	11	21
Otherwise delinquent.....	22	18	1	.....	2	.....	.....	.....	.....	1
Alcoholic and immoral.....	190	109	14	20	2	34	2	2	3	4
Immoral and otherwise delinquent.....	45	29	1	11	.....	3	.....	.....	.....	1
Alcoholic, immoral, and otherwise delinquent.....	31	13	5	5	1	4	.....	3	.....	.....
Otherwise poor.....	119	100	7	5	3	.....	.....	1	.....	3

^a Includes 1,446 cases in which there was no report on the character of the father.

Although the records in many instances failed to give information as to the character of the maternal grandparents, particularly when they were not living in the United States, or when they had died before the time of application, the information obtained was significant as indicating the minimum proportion of cases in which there were detrimental factors on that side of the child's heritage. A total of 359 children, or 16 per cent of the 2,178 whose records gave social information, were known to have had maternal grandparents one or both of whom were alcoholic, immoral, otherwise delinquent, or otherwise of poor character. The distribution of these 359 cases was as follows:

Total children, one or both of whose maternal grandparents were of poor character.....	359
Alcoholic.....	124
Immoral.....	95
Other delinquent.....	5
Alcoholic and immoral.....	33
Alcoholic and other delinquent.....	9
Alcoholic, immoral, and other delinquent.....	4
Immoral and other delinquent.....	5
Otherwise of poor character.....	84

Of the 2,178 children concerning whom social information was available, 825—38 per cent—had parents and maternal grandparents

who were of good character, so far as known. The mothers, fathers, or maternal grandparents of 1,353 children—62 per cent—were alcoholic, immoral, otherwise delinquent, or of otherwise poor character. This 62 per cent must be regarded as a minimum, in view of the comparatively small amount of information available concerning the father and maternal grandparents.

Total children under care whose histories gave social information	2,178
Mother, father, and maternal grandparents of good character, so far as known	825
Mother, father, or maternal grandparents reported of poor character	1,353
Mother	595
Father	77
One or both maternal grandparents	73
Mother and father	322
Mother and one or both maternal grandparents	201
Father and one or both maternal grandparents	18
Mother, father, and one or both maternal grandparents	67

The most difficult situation to handle, as well as the most tragic from the possible hereditary or social effect upon the child, is found in the cases in which the father was a relative of the mother, either by blood or by marriage. This condition was known to exist in 40 cases—1.4 per cent of the 2,863 studied. Of these cases 16 were known to be cases of incest within the meaning of the Massachusetts law. Following are the cases of relationship between the father and the mother:

Total_____		40
Father_____	5	Granduncle_____1
Stepfather_____	3	Brother-in-law_____8
Brother_____	3	First cousin_____10
Half brother_____	1	Second cousin_____2
Uncle_____	3	Degree of relationship not
Step-grandfather_____	1	stated_____3

Perhaps the majority of these mothers were the victims of the depraved morals of men who should have been their protectors. In 8 cases the mother was under 18 years of age at the time her child was born; in half the cases she was under 21. With the meager evidence at hand, one can only conjecture as to the vicious circle of low living conditions, abnormal mentality, and moral degeneracy that were the factors. There were 8 cases in which it was reported that the mother was below normal mentally. Situations such as these point the need for preventive and regenerative effort that strikes at the root of such economic conditions, housing, and standards of physical living as are conducive to immorality, as well as at the root of immorality itself.

Illustrations of defective mentality or bad character in the child's heritage.

The following cases are representative of a large number in which the family history indicated defective or degenerate stock or general lack of moral stamina :

Seventeen years before the period covered by this study a child was born to parents who had been married for a very brief period. The child's mother was very immoral, and when the little girl was 3 years old she was placed in charge of a public child-caring agency. After six months, however, she was returned to her home. Five years later her father deserted the family, the record stating that his desertion was due in part, at least, to the mother's misconduct. The mother was later arrested on a sex charge. She had been immoral with several men.

The girl was cared for by various agencies. At the age of 12 she was reported to be running wild and was adjudged neglected and placed in charge of a child-caring agency, the child-protective agency having general oversight of her and her younger brother. She was placed in a home where she said she had to work very hard, and where a man over 80 years of age took advantage of her. Later she and a 17-year-old boy had improper relations, and she was also reported to have been immoral with several others. When she was 15 years old complaint was made that she was a delinquent child, but the case was dismissed for technical reasons. Before her sixteenth birthday she gave birth to a child whose care was assumed by a private child-caring agency. The young mother was placed without the child. Soon she again became illegitimately pregnant. After a mental examination she was diagnosed feeble-minded and was sent to a public infirmary, where her second baby was born during the year covered by the study. The baby had syphilis and was kept at the infirmary with the mother throughout the year. Information subsequent to the period studied showed that the mother had been admitted to an institution for the feeble-minded, the child remaining at the infirmary throughout the first year of life. (Case V 1201.)

At the age of 5 years a little girl, who had been born at the State Infirmary, was abandoned at board by her mother and committed to the care of a public agency. She had been under care about two years at the time covered by the study, and was described as bright and attractive, though very deaf. The agency sent her to a school for the deaf, where she became a good lip reader and tried hard to overcome her handicap.

Both the child's maternal grandparents had been deaf and dumb. The grandmother died of tuberculosis; the grandfather was described as intemperate, a gambler, and a thief. One of the child's aunts had a record for stealing and another was a patient of an institution for the feeble-minded. The child's mother had been committed to the State industrial school at the age of 15 on a charge of stubbornness. At the age of 18 she had a child out of wedlock, who lived only 1 day. After the birth of the child of the study the mother was placed with the baby at housework; later she did home work for a leather factory. Nothing was known of her history subsequent to her abandonment of the child. (Case V 1921.)

During the year covered by the study a child was born out of wedlock to a feeble-minded mother 19 years of age. The mother had been under the guardianship of a private child-caring agency for four years. She had been received by this agency on the application of a family-care agency, because she was morally

wayward and had gonorrheal infection. With her mother—the child's grandmother—the girl had recently come to Boston from another Massachusetts city, where she had worked in a mill. As a child she had been immoral with boys. Later she had been delinquent with several men and was reported to have been a prostitute. She had reached the sixth grade in school. The maternal grandmother was reported to be a woman of bad reputation; she was separated from the grandfather, who was living with a woman not his wife. A maternal aunt had given birth to a child out of wedlock.

The girl was placed in a boarding home by the agency which had undertaken her guardianship, and was later placed in a wage home. After a time she was sent to the State Infirmary for medical care, and was then placed at housework again, where she earned about \$2 a week. She was described as good-natured, easily led, slovenly, untruthful, and slanderous about her employers. Before she had attained the age of 19 she became illegitimately pregnant and was sent to the State Infirmary for maternity care. Meanwhile she had been diagnosed feeble-minded, and application had been made for her admission to an institution for the feeble-minded after the birth of her child. The alleged father of the child, a teamster, was prosecuted and convicted, but the case was appealed and it was reported that a lump-sum payment was finally made.

The child was born at the infirmary, and after a time application was made to the State child-caring agency asking that the child be received, since the mother was awaiting admission to an institution for the feeble-minded. However, the mother grew so fond of her child that she was most unwilling to give it up, and the child and mother were kept together at the infirmary throughout the year covered by the study. Subsequent information showed that the mother was committed to the institution for the feeble-minded, but was so reluctant to give up the baby that they were placed together in a boarding home, and finally a plan was arranged whereby they were both to be sent to a maternal aunt in another State. (Case V 765.)

The information as to the fathers of the children studied was in most cases so meager that it is impossible to present illustrations of defective heritage without overemphasizing maternal traits and giving little mention of paternal. However, the case here presented—that of a 7-year-old boy under care of the child-protective agency—shows bad heredity on both sides of the family.

The boy's maternal grandmother was described as uncertain and rambling in her statements. She owned her own home and had a small canvassing business. She was said to be a disreputable woman, always in trouble. She had divorced her husband years before, the boy's mother having been the only child of this marriage. Subsequently she had had at least one child out of wedlock—according to some statements, three or four. When the mother was 24 years old the grandmother married a man who had worked for her as a hostler for a year. After living with him for two years she found that he had another wife and three children; she left him and petitioned for a divorce, but he had disappeared and could not be found. Before long he induced the woman's daughter—the mother of the child of the record—to live with him in another State as his wife. Four children were born to them, three of whom died; the fourth child was the boy here described. When the boy was nearly 3 years old the father instituted divorce proceedings against the boy's maternal grandmother. He stated that he had lived with the grandmother only because of her money, and that when she transferred some of it to her daughter he had lived with the latter for the same reason. The man went under several different aliases.

The boy lived with his mother until her death, the year before application was made to the child-protective agency. He then was cared for by his father's brother. The maternal grandmother was not satisfied with the arrangement and petitioned for guardianship of the child. She did not succeed in attaining this end, and the child lived for a time with his father and then returned to his paternal uncle, the agency giving supervision. (Case V 2104.)

Shortly before her second birthday a little girl whose mother had just been committed to an institution for the feeble-minded was received for care by the public child-caring agency of the city. The child had been born at the public infirmary, and mother and baby had later been cared for by a private agency. The child was placed at board and died of a contagious disease during the year covered by the study.

The mother's family had been known to social agencies for more than 20 years. The maternal grandmother had a court record for intemperance. She had spent a year in a reformatory for women and had subsequently served a sentence for keeping a disorderly house. She died at a public infirmary when the mother was 17 years old. Her death was said to be due to venereal disease and alcoholism. The maternal grandfather had served several sentences for larceny and intemperance. At the age of 10 the mother had been adjudged neglected and placed in the care of a private agency. From that time on she spent most of her life in institutions. She was tried in many different homes, but her conduct was never satisfactory. She spent six years in an institution for wayward girls, was finally placed out, and became illegitimately pregnant with the child whose history is given above. (Case V 270.)

During the year covered by the study twin sisters of illegitimate birth, 19 years of age, and their children, also born out of wedlock, were under the care of the child-protective agency. The mother of the girls had married after their birth, and the twin sisters had been brought up by their mother and stepfather in a home of very low standard. At the time the girls came under the care of the child-protective agency their mother had been arrested for drunkenness on complaint of their stepfather, who was under the influence of liquor when he appeared in court. The mother had intended to secure a warrant against her husband for assault and battery, when he anticipated this action by securing a warrant against her for drunkenness. Subsequently they were evicted from their home for drunkenness, and later the mother was arrested and placed on probation for six months.

At the age of 16 or 17 one of the twins had a child out of wedlock. The baby was cared for by the maternal grandmother, and was reported to be clean and healthy. Later an aunt took the child for a few months, the grandmother paying board, but within a few months the baby was returned to her grandmother. After the child's birth the mother, who had lived at home all her life, secured a position at housework in a near-by town. She was very immoral, finally becoming a professional prostitute.

The other twin was her sister's companion in wrongdoing and was reported to be intemperate and a frequenter of disreputable places. She had two children out of wedlock—the first when she was 18 years old. The father of both children was a peddler. The mother frequently quarreled with him, and shortly after the birth of the second child he disappeared and did not return. When the first child was 3 months old, the mother abandoned her at board and was arrested for abandonment and neglect. The child was placed under care of a private child-caring agency and died at the age of 8 months. When the second child was 2 months old the mother was arrested for drunkenness and was put

on probation. She had been immoral with several men, and it was reported that she had left the child with neighbors for days at a time. An alienist examined her and pronounced her subnormal mentally, reporting that her chief characteristics were slowness of mental processes and a high degree of suggestibility. The child was only 3 months old at the close of the period studied. She was subsequently abandoned at board by her mother and was placed in the custody of a private child-caring agency. (Cases V 2865, 2866, 2867.)

The Possibilities of Care by the Parents.

Physical and mental condition and character of the parents.

Among the most important considerations that determine the ability of mothers of children out of wedlock to maintain themselves and their children are their physical condition and their mentality, for the mother's mental and physical fitness and ability to care for her child, as well as her earning capacity, are largely dependent upon these factors. They must be taken into account by any social agency in planning what arrangements can best be made for the child's care and in deciding whether the mother and child are to be kept together or separated. During the child's infancy the primary need is for nursing care and, unless the mother's physical condition is such as to menace the child's health, other considerations may be waived for the sake of securing proper nourishment for the infant. Many mothers whose disabilities make them unfit to care for their children as they grow older, may safely be kept with them during the nursing period, if given supervision and financial assistance.

The mothers of 22 per cent of the 2,178 children whose histories gave more or less complete social information were known to be physically defective or diseased or in such poor physical condition as to be handicapped in caring for their children. The mothers of 3 per cent had died before the applications for the care of the children were made. Children whose mothers had been diagnosed as having syphilis or gonorrhea comprised 6 per cent of the total.⁹

The mothers of 379 of the 2,178 children—17 per cent—were below normal mentally. In 7 per cent of the cases the mother was feeble-minded or insane.¹⁰

The physical and mental condition of the father is of interest in connection with the possibility of his contributing to the child's support. However, no information as to his physical condition was available and very little as to mentality. The fathers of 16 children were reported below normal mentally, in 7 cases being feeble-minded or insane.¹¹ The fathers of 51 children—2 per cent—were known to have died before the applications were made.

The mothers of 54 per cent of the children were reported as alcoholic, immoral, dishonest, stubborn, shiftless, lazy, or otherwise of

⁹ See pp. 192-193.

¹⁰ See pp. 193-195.

¹¹ See pp. 192-194.

poor character.¹² The difficulties met with by the social agencies in attempting to secure the mother's cooperation and realization of her responsibilities are manifest. In many cases the character of the mother made it unsafe for the child to be kept with her, at least after the period of infancy.

The fathers of 484 of the 2,178 children—22 per cent—were known to be alcoholic, immoral, otherwise delinquent, or otherwise of poor character. That this is an understatement is indicated by the fact that in two-thirds of the cases in which information as to the father's character was obtained, it was reported as bad. The fathers of 206 children were known to have absconded in order to escape their responsibilities toward their children.¹³

Age of mother and of father.

Reports as to the age of the mother when the child was born were obtained for 1,923 of the 2,863 children under care of agencies in the year studied. The age distribution was as follows:

Total reported	1,923
Less than 16 years	44
16-17 years	174
18-20 years	496
21-24 years	590
25-34 years	505
35 years and over	114

The mothers of 2 per cent of the children were under 16, the age of consent, when the children were born.¹⁴ The mothers of 9 per cent more were under 18 years of age. These young mothers, who were but children themselves, could with the greatest difficulty assume the burdens that maternity laid upon them and were in particular need of assistance in providing care and support for their children. The mothers of 26 per cent were from 18 to 20 years of age, making a total of 37 per cent of the children whose mothers were under the age of 21 years. In almost a third of the cases—31 per cent—the mothers were from 21 to 24 years old.

In 26 per cent of the cases, the mothers were from 25 to 34 years of age, while the mothers of 6 per cent of the children were 35 years of age or over. It is interesting to note that in more than three-fifths of the cases in which the mother was in the last age group, there had been no previous child born out of wedlock.¹⁵

In only 599 cases was the age of the father stated. Whether or not this number can be taken as representative of all the cases can only be conjectured. It is probable that the exact ages of the younger men would have been reported most frequently and that those of middle age would be represented to a lesser degree. The fathers of 275 children—46 per cent of those whose histories gave this information—were under 25 years at the time the child was born. In 19 cases

¹² See p. 221.

¹³ See p. 110.

¹⁴ See p. 198.

¹⁵ See p. 197.

the fathers were under 18 years of age, and in 80 others, between 18 and 20 years; the fathers of 17 per cent of all reported being under the age of legal majority when they became fathers of children out of wedlock.

The age group of 21 to 24 years shows the largest number of fathers, the next largest number being in the age group of 25 to 29 years. The fathers of slightly over half of all whose histories were reported were from 21 to 30 years old. The fathers of 18 children were over 50 years of age, in 7 cases being 60 years of age or over.

A comparison of the age of the mother and the age of the father is of interest in the 578 cases in which the ages of both were reported. Table 62 gives this information.

TABLE 62.—*Age of mother and of father.*

Age of mother at birth of child.	Children born out of wedlock, under care in 1914, with age of mother and of father reported.										
	To- tal. ^a	Whose fathers were of specified ages.									
		Un- der 18 yrs.	18-20 yrs.	21-24 yrs.	25-29 yrs.	30-34 yrs.	35-39 yrs.	40-49 yrs.	50-59 yrs.	60-69 yrs.	70 yrs. or over.
Total.....	578	19	77	170	128	62	52	53	11	5	1
Under 18 years.....	77	11	22	22	9	3	3	1	2	3	1
18-20 years.....	152	4	42	62	23	8	6	6	1	.....	.....
21-24 years.....	190	3	9	70	62	18	11	16	.....	1	.....
25-29 years.....	88	1	4	10	31	14	19	7	2	.....	.....
30-34 years.....	37	.....	.....	1	2	16	7	9	2	.....	.....
35-39 years.....	24	.....	.....	3	.....	3	4	11	2	1	.....
40 years and over.....	10	.....	.....	2	1	.....	2	3	2	.....	.....

^a Excluding 21 cases in which the age of the mother was not reported. In 3 of these cases the father was 18-20 years of age; in 6, 21-24; in 8, 25-29; in 2, 30-34; in 1, 35-39; in 1, 60-69.

In almost three-fifths of the cases in which the fathers were reported as between 21 and 29 years the mothers were also in these age groups. This points to a normal condition, the opposite of that indicated by the cases where there was great disparity of ages. Among the abnormal cases are 4 in which the fathers were under 18 years, 3 of the mothers being between 21 and 24 years, and 1 among those 25 to 29 years of age. In 14 cases the fathers were over 40 and the mothers under 20. The fathers of 5 children were between 21 and 24 years of age, 3 of the mothers being from 35 to 39 years, and 2 being over 40 years. Great disparity of ages occurred in 10 cases in which the mothers were under 18—3 of the fathers were between 35 and 39, 1 between 40 and 49, 2 between 50 and 59, 3 between 60 and 69, and 1 was over 70 years old.

The mothers of 40 per cent of the children whose histories gave this information were under 21 years of age. In 17 per cent of the cases in which this information was available the fathers were under 21. It was unlikely that in any considerable number of cases these mothers and fathers who were under the age of majority would

be able to meet fully the responsibilities of caring for or contributing to the support of the children.

Civil condition of mother and of father and their relation to each other.

The problem of the child of illegitimate birth is by no means confined to the child of the unmarried mother. The histories of 2,352 children gave information concerning the civil status of the mother at the time of the child's birth. In 85 per cent of these cases the mothers were single. The mothers of 4 per cent were widowed, while in 9 per cent of the cases the mothers were divorced, separated from their husbands, had been deserted, or had themselves deserted their families. The mothers of 2 per cent of the children were married women. In many of the cases in which the mother had been married she had children born in wedlock to care for. The civil status of the mothers at the time the children were born was as follows:

Total reported.....	2,352	
Single	2,010	Divorced, separated, de-
Married	39	serting, or deserted.....
Widowed	97	206

The problem of the unmarried mother is not limited to the young woman. The mother's age, reported in 1,595 of the 2,010 cases in which she was single at the time of the child's birth, is summarized in Table 63. In 74 per cent of these cases the mother was under 25 years of age, while in 26 per cent she was 25 or over. On the other hand, in 30 per cent of the 250 cases where the mother was married, widowed, divorced, separated, deserting, or deserted, and her age was reported, she was under 25 years. In 3 per cent of the cases in which the mother was single she was 35 years of age or over, as compared with 25 per cent of the cases in which the mother had been married.

TABLE 63.—*Age and civil status of mother.*

Mother's age at birth of child.	Children born out of wedlock, under care in 1914, with age of mother reported.					
	Total.		Whose mothers were of specified civil status.			
			Single.		Married, widowed, divorced, separated, deserting, deserted.	Not reported.
	Number.	Per cent distribution.	Number.	Per cent distribution.	Number.	Number.
Total.....	1,923	100.0	1,595	100.0	250	78
Under 25 years.....	1,304	67.8	1,186	74.3	74	44
25-34 years.....	505	26.3	360	22.6	113	31
35 years and over.....	114	5.9	49	3.1	6	3

The civil condition of the father was known in only 785 cases. The fathers of 453 children were reported as being single at the time the children were born; in 43 cases the father was widowed, in 99 divorced, separated, deserting, or deserted. In 190 cases the father was living with his legal wife at the time he became the father of a child out of wedlock. Many of these may be presumed to have had children as well as wives dependent upon them for support. Assuming that at least half those in the "widowed, divorced, separated, deserting, deserted" categories also had legal obligations to families, the fathers of about one-third of the children whose histories gave the civil status of the father were presumably responsible for the support of another family in addition to their obligations for the maintenance of their children out of wedlock. However, this proportion might not have held for the total number of cases had the civil condition of all the fathers been reported. Including as single all those whose civil condition was not known, the proportion of children whose fathers had legal families would be about one-tenth of the total. The true proportion of cases in which the fathers had responsibilities for legitimate families, therefore, probably lies somewhere between one-tenth and one-third of the total, 2,863, included in this study. This is an important consideration in connection with the possibility of securing support from the fathers for their children born out of wedlock.

The civil status of the mother and the character of her relations with the father are given in Table 64. The mothers of 251 children—12 per cent of the 2,178 whose histories gave social information—were illegally married to the fathers or had been living with them as married prior to the time when the children were born. In most of the 28 cases in which a marriage ceremony had been illegally performed some impediment to marriage existed, the father having a wife living, or, in a few cases, the mother having a husband from whom she was not divorced. In some instances the ceremony was illegal because performed by a person not authorized under the law.

TABLE 64.—*Civil status of mother and character of relations with father.*

Civil status of mother at birth of child.	Children born out of wedlock, under care in 1914, whose histories gave social information.			
	Total.	The relations of whose mothers with the fathers were of specified character.		
		Illegally married.	Living as married.	Other.
Total.....	2,178	28	223	1,927
Single.....	1,687	22	144	1,521
Married.....	36			36
Widowed.....	94		17	77
Divorced, separated, deserted.....	205	5	60	140
Not reported.....	156	1	2	153

In almost 10 per cent of the cases in which the mother was single, she and the father were living as married or were illegally married previous to the birth of the child. Of the cases in which the mother was widowed, there were 18 per cent in which the parents were living as married. Of the cases in which the mother was divorced, separated, or deserted, there were 32 per cent in which the parents were living as married or were illegally married.

Table 65 shows that the mothers of 391 of the 2,178 children whose histories gave more or less complete social information had married at some time subsequent to the child's birth. The children were of varying ages when the marriage of the mother occurred. In two-fifths of these cases the mother was known to have married the child's father; but this proportion is probably an understatement, because in many cases where paternity was not known it was uncertain whether or not the man whom the mother married was the father of the child. It is certain, however, that a large proportion of the marriages were to men who were not the fathers of the children.

TABLE 65.—*Subsequent marriage of mother, by character of relations with father.*

Character of relations with father of child.	Children born out of wedlock, under care in 1914, whose histories gave social information.			
	Total.	Whose mothers married after birth of child.		Whose mothers were not reported to have married after birth of child.
		Child's father.	Other man.	
Total.....	2, 178	160	231	1, 787
Illegally married.....	28	2	5	21
Living as married.....	223	53	33	137
Other.....	1, 927	105	a193	1, 629

^a Some of these men may have been the fathers, the paternity of the children not being stated on the record.

In one-fourth of the cases in which the parents were illegally married prior to the child's birth, the mother subsequently married legally. In 2 instances she married the father of the child, the obstacles in the way of legal marriage having been removed; in 5 cases she married another man. In almost two-fifths of the cases in which the parents had been living as married, the mother was known to have married after the child was born. Of these 86 cases of subsequent marriage, there were 53 in which the mother married the father of her child and 33 in which she married another man. In only 15 per cent of the cases in which the parents were not known to have been illegally married or living as married was there a record of subsequent marriage of the mother. Of these 298 cases,

there were 105 in which the mother was known to have married the father.

Occupation of mother.

The economic status of the mother is of great importance in connection with the need for assistance by agencies in caring for the children. Occupation as given in the records was the only available index of the mother's economic condition. It is evident that the information here given is only a rough approximation of economic status, because of the failure of the records in most cases to report specific employments within the industries and the wages earned. For instance, the wages vary greatly for different types of employment in factories and stores. The data here analyzed pertain to the occupation at the time of application for agency care and not to the occupation before the child's birth, the purpose here being to show the mother's economic condition at the time recourse to agencies was necessary. In cases in which the mother had temporarily ceased work on account of her condition, her usual occupation was given. It would have been impossible to secure any but fragmentary data on the mother's occupation before the birth of the child, since in many cases several years had elapsed between the time of the child's birth and the time of application.

Reports as to the occupation of the mother were obtained in 1,916 of the 2,863 cases studied. Of the remaining 947 cases, there were 75 in which the mother was dead and 872 in which the occupation was not stated. In the cases of 424 children—22 per cent of those for whom the mother's occupation was reported—it was stated that the mother was not gainfully employed at the time application was made for the care of the child. In 38 of the cases—2 per cent of the total—the mother was still in school, and in 289 cases—15 per cent—she was a housewife. In 97 cases—5 per cent—the mother was reported as having no occupation. In 9 cases in which she was a housewife, and in 36 in which she had no occupation, the mother was reported to be a prostitute.

The mothers of 1,492 children—78 per cent of the total reported—were gainfully employed. Their occupations were as follows:

Total reported.....	1, 492
Proprietors.....	32
Professional persons.....	29
Actresses.....	15
Teachers.....	7
Other.....	7
Clerks and kindred workers.....	125
Bookkeepers, cashiers, stenographers, and typewriters.....	29
Clerks (not in stores).....	9
Saleswomen and clerks in stores.....	61
Messenger, bundle, and office girls.....	13
Telephone and telegraph operators.....	13

Semiskilled workers	419
Dressmakers and seamstresses	24
Laundry operatives	39
Nurses, not trained	16
Semiskilled factory operatives	324
Other	16
Laborer (farm)	1
Servants	886
Charwomen, cleaners, laundresses	150
Waitresses	126
Servants (domestic)	565
Other servants	45

In 2 per cent of the cases in which the mother was gainfully employed she was classified as a proprietor or manager. In most of these cases she kept a lodging house or was the proprietor of a small store. In 2 per cent of the cases the mother was engaged in a professional pursuit. The mothers of 8 per cent of the children were engaged in clerical occupations as office workers, clerks or other employees in stores, or telephone or telegraph operators.

The mothers of 28 per cent of the children were semiskilled workers, chiefly factory operatives. In almost three-fifths of the cases—59 per cent in which the mother's occupation was reported—the mother was engaged in domestic or personal service. In this group domestic servants predominated, though there were considerable numbers of charwomen, cleaners, and laundresses, and of waitresses.

In 34 cases in which the mother was gainfully employed in a legitimate occupation she was also a prostitute. In 7 of these cases the mother was the proprietor of a lodging house or store; in 2, a clerk in a store; in 2, a seamstress; in 6, a semiskilled factory operative; in 1, a semiskilled worker not otherwise specified; in 5, a charwoman, cleaner, or laundress; in 4, a waitress; in 7, a domestic servant. Adding the 45 cases in which the mother was not otherwise employed, a total of 79 mothers were prostitutes at the time application was made for the care of the child.

One of the most significant bearings of occupation is its relation to the mother's ability to keep her child with her. Eliminating the cases in which the child was less than 6 months of age at the time of application, since these mothers would hardly have had time to re-establish themselves, and the cases in which it was not reported whether the child was with or away from the mother at the time of application, there was a total of 819 children 6 months of age and over the occupations of whose mothers were reported. (See Table 66.) It is probable that the occupation of the mother was more generally reported in the cases where the child was living with the mother than where the child was separated from the mother. Hence the percentages of children living apart from their mothers at the time of

application are given, rather than the percentages with their mothers, since the former are very conservative statements. Forty-two per cent of the 819 children 6 months of age and over, the occupations of whose mothers were reported, had been separated from their mothers by the time application for agency care was made.

TABLE 66.—*Occupation of mother at time of application, and child's presence with or separation from mother.*

Occupation of mother at time of application.	Children born out of wedlock, under care in 1914, 6 months of age or over at application, with occupation of mother reported.		
	Total. ^a	At time of application.	
		With mother.	Separated from mother.
Total.....	819	474	345
Not gainfully employed.....	272	176	96
No occupation or attending school.....	53	26	27
Housewife.....	219	150	69
Proprietors, managers, professional persons.....	42	25	17
Clerks and kindred workers.....	27	11	16
Semiskilled workers.....	116	61	55
Factory and laundry operatives.....	97	55	42
Others.....	19	6	13
Servants.....	362	201	161
Charwomen, cleaners, laundresses.....	117	96	21
Waitresses.....	55	26	29
Domestic servants.....	167	69	98
Other servants.....	23	10	13

^a Excluding 311 cases in which it was not reported whether the child was with or away from the mother, 75 cases in which the mother was dead at the time of application, and 1 case in which the child's age was not reported.

In 35 per cent of the cases in which the mother was not gainfully employed the child was living away from the mother at the time of application for care. In 47 per cent of the cases in which the mother was a semiskilled worker the child was separated from the mother. In the domestic and personal service group, 44 per cent of the children were separated from their mothers.

Considering separately the most important occupations, 32 per cent of the children whose mothers were housewives were separated from them; 43 per cent of those whose mothers were factory or laundry operatives; 18 per cent of the children whose mothers were charwomen, cleaners, and laundresses; and 59 per cent of those whose mothers were domestic servants. The children were with the mothers most frequently in the cases in which the mother was a housewife or a day worker employed as a charwoman, cleaner, or laundress. Most of these mothers were maintaining homes, many of them being married, widowed, or separated, or living as married. It is

surprising to find that practically three-fifths of the children whose mothers were domestic servants had been separated from their mothers before the present application for agency care.

Economic status of father.

Occupations were reported for the fathers of 839 children. (See Table 67.) They are of significance mainly as an index of economic status, though in the absence of adequate wage data they are only a rough measure of the father's ability to contribute to the support of his child. An occupation was not listed separately unless the number reported as engaged therein was at least 10. Hence, only a few of the occupations included under each class appear.

TABLE 67.—*Occupation of father.*

Occupation of father.	Children born out of wedlock, under care in 1914, with occupation of father reported.	
	Number.	Per cent distribution.
Total.....	839	100.0
Proprietors, officials, managers.....	80	9.5
Professional persons.....	48	5.7
Clerks and kindred workers.....	87	10.4
Commercial travelers.....	20	.....
Salesmen and clerks in stores.....	37	.....
Others.....	30	.....
Skilled workers.....	180	21.5
Carpenters.....	31	.....
Electricians.....	17	.....
Machinists.....	28	.....
Painters.....	22	.....
Plumbers and steamfitters.....	11	.....
Tailors.....	12	.....
Others.....	59	.....
Semiskilled workers.....	193	23.0
Barbers.....	21	.....
Chauffeurs.....	28	.....
Conductors (street railway).....	19	.....
Factory or mill operatives.....	66	.....
Others.....	59	.....
Laborers.....	110	13.1
Draymen, teamsters, expressmen.....	37	.....
Others.....	73	.....
Servants.....	84	10.0
Cooks.....	26	.....
Janitors and housemen.....	11	.....
Porters (railroad and hotel).....	10	.....
Waiters.....	17	.....
Others.....	20	.....
Semiofficial public employees.....	36	4.3
Soldiers, sailors, marines.....	32	.....
Others.....	4	.....
Not gainfully employed.....	21	2.5
Students.....	20	.....
Others.....	1	.....

In the 10 per cent of the cases in which the father was classified as a "proprietor, official, or manager," he was usually a storekeeper or small dealer, peddler, or farmer. In a few instances the father was a manufacturer or contractor. It is probable that there were only a small number of cases of large incomes.

In 6 per cent of the reported cases, the father was engaged in a professional pursuit. The fathers of one-third of the 48 in this group were engaged in various forms of public entertainment. The fathers of one-fourth were lawyers, doctors, and in 1 case a clergyman. The fathers of the remaining 20 included journalists and newspaper men, teachers, photographers, and other miscellaneous workers.

The fathers of 10 per cent of the total reported were clerks and kindred workers. There were 87 in this group, the fathers of 20 children being commercial travelers. A large number in this class were salesmen and clerks in stores. The remainder included bookkeepers and other office employees, shipping clerks, and miscellaneous workers.

In more than a fifth of the cases—21 per cent—the father was a skilled worker. This class included carpenters, electricians, machinists, plumbers and steamfitters, painters, tailors, and, in smaller numbers, engineers and firemen, printers, bricklayers, upholsterers, and workers in like employments.

The fathers of 23 per cent were semiskilled workers, the greatest number being factory and mill operatives. In a considerable number of cases the fathers were chauffeurs, conductors, and barbers. The remainder were in scattered occupations. The fathers of 13 per cent of the total were classified as laborers. In about one-third of these cases they were draymen, teamsters, or expressmen. The fathers of 10 per cent were classed as servants. In almost one-third of these cases they were cooks; in a considerable number they were waiters in restaurants or hotels; the remainder included janitors and housemen, porters, coachmen, bartenders, and elevator men.

In most of the 4 per cent of the cases in which the father was classed as a "semiofficial public employee" he was a soldier, sailor, or marine. Boston, as an important seaport, has always had a considerable number of men from the Army, Navy, and marine services stationed there. It must be remembered, however, that this study covered a period preceding the war.

In 3 per cent of the cases the father was not gainfully employed; in all but one of these cases he was a student. Although none of these fathers was earning anything at the time, some of them had sufficient training to enable them to earn good salaries in the future.

Combining those classified as "professional" and the "proprietors, officials, and managers," the fathers of 15 per cent of the 839 children were engaged in an independent business or in a profession. The

fathers of 32 per cent were clerks and kindred workers, or skilled workers in various industries. In almost half the cases—46 per cent—the fathers were semiskilled workers, laborers, or servants. The soldiers, sailors, and marines, because of the small pay they received at the time this study was made, would in most cases have been able to contribute little to the support of their children. These fathers and the students, comprising altogether 6 per cent of the cases, probably represented those least able to assume their responsibilities.

Whether or not the earnings reported for the fathers of 209 of the children studied were representative of all can not be determined. It is probable, however, that the data must be considered as stating more completely the lower rather than the higher range. The information would presumably have been more available in the case of the younger men and for those of lower earning capacity than for older men and those commanding larger earnings.

Of the 209 cases in which information as to earnings was given, 29 reported earnings of \$5 to \$9 a week; 72, \$10 to \$14; 62, \$15 to \$19; 34, \$20 to \$29; and 12, \$30 and over. In only 22 per cent of the cases were the fathers earning weekly \$20 or more. In 30 per cent of the total the fathers earned from \$15 to \$19. At the time the study was made such earnings would have permitted a fairly adequate contribution to the child's support, provided that the father had no other dependents. In almost half the cases—48 per cent—the fathers earned less than \$15 a week and were in no position to become responsible for the care of dependents.

Contributions of father to support of child.

In the cases of 758 children—35 per cent of the 2,178 whose histories gave social information—the records indicated that court action for support had been taken or that the father had contributed to the support of the child. Court action had been taken for the support of 241 of these children. In 517 cases no court action had been initiated, so far as known, but the father had made some contributions to the child's support. A discussion of the Massachusetts law relating to the support of children born out of wedlock, and of the cases brought under that law in the Boston courts, occurs in a later chapter.¹⁶ Hence, only a brief summary of the results of court action is given here.

The 241 children whose records gave evidence of court action for support comprised 11 per cent of the 2,178 children for whom social information was available. It must be borne in mind that the present Massachusetts law relating to the support of children born out

¹⁶ Sec. 1 ch. 3.

of wedlock, which is a great advance over the old law, did not go into effect until July 1, 1913. Of the 241 court cases, 39 ended without arrangements having been made for the support of the child. In 50 cases court action was pending at the end of the period. In the remaining 152 cases some provision was made for the child's support. Of the 39 cases in which no arrangement for support was made by the court, there were 5 in which the father had made some contributions to the support of the mother or child before the court action was initiated or after it terminated.

The results of court action were as follows:

Total children for whose benefit court action was initiated.....	241
Parents married.....	21
Certificate of adequate provision filed.....	47
Court order for support.....	74
Sentence imposed.....	7
Payment for pregnancy and confinement expenses.....	3
No arrangement for support.....	39
Case pending at close of period.....	50

The fathers of 517 children made some payments for the child's support or for the mother's expenses, though no court action had been taken so far as known. In many of these cases the parents had been living as married following the child's birth, and it was assumed that the father had contributed to the family expenses. The manner in which the fathers aided in the support of the children was as follows:

Total children to whose support the fathers contributed, though no court action was taken.....	517
Parents married each other.....	122
Parents living as married, or illegally married ¹⁷	185
Father adopted child.....	4
Settlement by payment of lump sum.....	58
Regular contributions.....	43
Irregular contributions.....	85
Payment toward pregnancy and confinement expenses.....	20

In 122 instances the child was provided for by the marriage of the parents; the parents of 51 of these children had previously lived as married, and the fathers of 10 others had made some contributions toward the support of the children or the mothers. In a total of 185 cases the parents had been living as married at some time following the birth of the child, and the father had presumably contributed more or less to the child's support. In 1 of these cases and in 4 others the father legally adopted the child. The fathers of 58 children settled with the mothers by making lump-sum payments. In 43 cases there were regular contributions; and in 85, irregular pay-

¹⁷ In addition there were 51 children whose parents later married, and who were included unde "parents married."

ments to the child's support. In 20 cases no payments were made for the support of the child, but the father assisted the mother in the payment of her expenses during pregnancy or confinement.

Considering together the court and noncourt cases, the fathers of 674 children—31 per cent of the 2,178 whose histories gave social information—were known to have aided in the support of the children or to have assisted the mother in meeting the expenses incurred by her during pregnancy or confinement. It must not be assumed, however, that the amounts contributed were in most cases at all adequate for the care of the child. Frequently, the support covered only a short period of time and amounted to such a small sum as to be practically negligible.

Mother's parental home and present mode of living.

The condition and character of the mother's family are of great importance in considering what arrangements can be made for the care of the child. The mother's parents, though often deeply resenting the humiliation which they considered the mother to have brought upon them, and, as a consequence, sometimes guilty of cruelty and injustice to the mother and her child, in a large number of cases furnished generous help and assistance. Although in only 11 per cent of the cases, in which home or place of residence was reported, were the children living with their maternal grandparents at the time of application,¹⁸ yet it must be remembered that where the grandparents assume full responsibility the children do not usually come to the attention of social agencies.

It is interesting to note that the mothers of 54 children had themselves been born out of wedlock, and that in 8 of these cases the mothers had been brought up by foster parents. The mothers of 26 other children, though themselves of legitimate birth, had been brought up in foster homes.

Both maternal grandparents of 158 children—7 per cent of the 2,178 whose histories gave social information—were known to have died before the time of application for care. The maternal grandparents of 180 children—8 per cent—had never been in the United States. Therefore, in a total of 15 per cent of the cases there was no parental home, or none in this country, to which the mother might turn for assistance.

In 307 other cases—14 per cent—one of the grandparents had died. The maternal grandparents of 52 children, or 2 per cent, had been divorced or separated, or one of them had deserted.¹⁹ Hence, the mothers of 31 per cent of all the children had, in effect, been deprived

¹⁸ See p. 160.

¹⁹ Not including 14 cases in which one of the grandparents was dead, having previously been divorced or separated.

of one or both parents, and consequently lacked the protection and help which might otherwise have been theirs. In addition to the cases in which the whereabouts of the maternal grandparents were definitely reported, there were others in which fragmentary information indicated that normal homes did not exist.

Besides the cases in which the maternal grandparents were dead, never in the United States, or separated or deserted, there were 212—10 per cent—in which the maternal grandparents were alcoholic, immoral, otherwise delinquent, shiftless, abusive or of otherwise poor character; insane, feeble-minded, or otherwise not normal mentally; or entirely or partially dependent upon charitable aid. Hence, in a total of 41 per cent of the cases studied in which social information was given, the child's mother had no normal parental home to which she could turn, or the character of the grandparents made it impossible for them to provide mother and child with a suitable home.

Total cases in which mother's parental home was reported not normal	909
Both maternal grandparents dead	158
Maternal grandparents never in the United States	180
One maternal grandparent dead	307
Maternal grandparents divorced, separated, or deserted	52
One or both maternal grandparents not normal mentally, of poor character, or dependent upon charitable aid	212

Besides the cases in which the maternal grandparents were of low mentality or poor character, there were a number of cases in which the brothers and sisters of the mother were reported as feeble-minded, insane, alcoholic, immoral, otherwise delinquent, or generally unsatisfactory as to conduct. If these members of the family were living in the mother's parental home, the home conditions were thereby rendered more or less unsatisfactory, and the maternal grandparents were less able to assist the mother with the care of her child. Since the information in regard to mother's fraternity was very fragmentary in character, no attempt has been made to present these data in detail.

The conditions under which the mother lived at the time of application for agency care for the child—whether or not she was dependent on her own resources or was living with relatives or friends—had an important bearing upon the amount and kind of assistance which had to be provided. In this study her usual mode of living was considered of more significance than her residence on the day the application was made. In many cases the mother had recently left her ordinary place of abode and had come to the city for the purpose of securing hospital care or other assistance from social agencies. In these cases the home which she had left was considered her mode of living.

Information concerning mode of living was obtained for the mothers of 1,656 children, and this is summarized in Table 68. At the time application was made for the care of the child, the mothers of 389 children—24 per cent—were living in their parental homes, and the mothers of 109, or 7 per cent, were in the homes of relatives or friends. In 486 cases—29 per cent—the mother had been established in a home of her own, having been married or living as married. Other establishments of their own were being maintained by the mothers of 56, or 3 per cent. In most of these cases the mother was doing light housekeeping. In only 83 cases—5 per cent—was the mother boarding. The mothers of 20 children—or 1 per cent—were inmates of institutions at the time of application. In the largest number of cases in any one group—513, or 31 per cent—the mother was living in her place of employment, in 481 cases being employed at housework, and in 32 working in a hotel, a hospital, or a similar place.

TABLE 68.—*Mother's age and mode of living at time of application.*

Mother's mode of living at time of application.	Children born out of wedlock, under care in 1914, with mother's mode of living reported.						
	Total.	Whose mothers were of specified ages at time of application.					
		Under 18 yrs.	18-20 yrs.	21-24 yrs.	25-34 yrs.	35 yrs. and over.	Not re- ported.
Total.....	1,656	122	270	384	416	181	283
Parental home.....	389	84	124	95	44	12	30
Home of relatives or friends.....	109	12	35	26	26	4	6
Own home.....	486	3	15	37	138	118	155
Other establishment a.....	56	.....	2	1	19	16	18
Boarding.....	83	1	15	29	21	5	12
Institution.....	20	3	2	3	8	2	2
At housework.....	481	19	75	160	148	23	56
Place of employment other than at housework.....	32	.....	2	13	12	1	4

^a Includes independent lodging, etc.

At the time application was made for aid the mothers of 122 children were under 18 years of age. In more than two-thirds of these cases the mother was living in her parental home. Adding to this number the 12 cases in which she was living with relatives or friends, in more than three-fourths of the cases in which the mother was under 18 years of age she had the protection of her family or of relatives or friends. In 3 cases the mother was established in a home of her own.

In 159, or almost three-fifths of the 270 cases in which the mother was 18 to 20 years of age, she was living in her parental home or with relatives or friends. In more than a fourth—77 cases—she was living at her place of employment, mostly at housework. In 17

cases the mother was living in a home of her own or in another independent establishment.

In the older age groups the proportions living in their parental homes or with relatives or friends naturally decreased, while the proportionate numbers living in their own homes increased. In the 21-to-24-year group the mothers of about one-third of the children were living with their parents or with other relatives or friends; in the 25-to-34-year group the mothers of about one-sixth were so living; in the age group 35 years and over, less than one-tenth. The proportions living in their own homes or in other independent establishments rose from about one-tenth in the lowest of these age groups to three-fourths in the highest. The proportion in domestic service or living in other places of employment was by far the largest in the age group of 21 to 24 years. In more than two-fifths of these cases the mother was living in this way, while in the age group of 25 to 34 years she was thus living in slightly less than two-fifths of the cases, and in the age group of 35 years and over in slightly more than one-eighth.

Mother's other children.

The problems involved in the care of the child born out of wedlock are greatly complicated if the mother has had more than one child of illegitimate birth. It is more difficult for her to secure the assistance needed for the child if she is known to be a "repeater," since certain types of agencies make it a rule to refuse care to such mothers. It is almost impossible for a mother to keep with her more than one child born out of wedlock, if she is at all dependent upon her own resources. Social agencies in arranging for the care of illegitimate families very rarely find it possible to keep more than one child with the mother.

In 2,178 cases more or less social data, including histories of previous children, were obtained by the agencies at the time application for the care of the child was made. If the child was cared for apart from the mother, the mother was often lost sight of; hence it was impossible to determine whether or not she had had subsequent children. On the other hand, where more than one child of the same mother was under care of the agencies studied, the records of the various children were assembled. In this way it was known that the mother had given birth to more than one child in many cases in which social information was not given. It was, therefore, thought best to use all the information secured, from whatever source, and accept it as an understatement of the number of other children born to the mothers of the children studied. The known data on other children previously born out of wedlock to the mothers of the study are given in Table 69.

In 535 cases—19 per cent of the 2,863 children studied—the mother was known to have had one or more previous illegitimate births.²⁰ In 374 cases—13 per cent—the mother had had such births²¹ after the child of the study was born. In 168 of these cases—6 per cent of the total—the mother had both previous and subsequent births. Hence, the mothers of 741 children, or 26 per cent of all, were known to have had other illegitimate births.

In 341 cases the mother had had one previous illegitimate birth; in 125, two; in 34, three; in 20, four; in 15, five or more. Thus the mothers of 194 children—7 per cent of all—were known to have had more than one other previous birth out of wedlock.

In 4 per cent of the cases in which the mother was under 18 years of age at the birth of the child of the study, there had been a previous illegitimate birth. In the age group of 18 to 20 years the percentage was 11; in the age group of 21 to 24 years, 20; in the age group of 25 to 34 years, 35; and in the age group of 35 years and over the mother had had a previous birth out of wedlock in 38 per cent of the cases.

TABLE 69.—*Age of mother at birth of child, and previous record as to illegitimate births.*

Age of mother at birth of child.	Children born out of wedlock, under care in 1914.						
	Total.	Whose mothers had specified number of previous illegitimate births.					
		None, so far as known.	One.	Two.	Three.	Four.	Five or more.
Total.....	2,863	2,328	341	125	34	20	15
Less than 18 years.....	218	209	9	.....	.....	.....	.....
18-20 years.....	496	443	49	3	1	.....	.....
21-24 years.....	590	470	91	25	3	1	.....
25-34 years.....	505	328	101	50	12	6	8
35 years and over.....	114	71	15	12	5	6	5
Not reported.....	940	807	76	35	13	7	2

In regard to subsequent children the data may be considered still more of an understatement than in the case of previous children, on account of the large number of mothers lost sight of after the care of the children had been assumed by agencies. In a total of 374 cases, there were reported one or more births out of wedlock²² after the one included in this study. The proportion of children whose mothers had had subsequent illegitimate births means little unless

²⁰ Counting twins as 1 and including stillbirths.

²¹ Counting twins as 1; including stillbirths but not including cases in which the mother was illegitimately pregnant in 1914, but a child was not born until 1915.

²² Counting twins as 1; including stillbirths but not including cases in which the mother was illegitimately pregnant in 1914, but a child was not born until 1915.

taken in connection with the age of the child of the record at the end of the period or the close of care. (See Table 70.)

TABLE 70.—*Record of mother as to subsequent illegitimate births, and age of child at end of period.*

Age of child at end of period.	Children born out of wedlock, under care in 1914.					
	Total.	Whose mothers had specified numbers of subsequent illegitimate births.				
		None, so far as known.	One.	Two.	Three.	Four or more.
Total.....	2,863	a2,489	b239	c79	30	d26
Less than 1 year.....	1,045	1,043	2			
1 year.....	365	344	21			
2-3 years.....	319	258	55	6		
4-5 years.....	215	161	37	17		
6 years and over.....	911	675	124	56	30	26
Not reported.....	8	8				

a Including 22 cases in which the mother was illegitimately pregnant before the end of the year or the close of the case, but in which the child had not been yet born.

b Including 5 cases in which the mother was also illegitimately pregnant before the end of the year or the close of the case.

c Including 2 cases in which the mother was also illegitimately pregnant before the end of the year or the close of the case.

d Including 16 cases of 4 subsequent, 7 of 5 subsequent, 2 of 6 subsequent, 1 of 7 subsequent illegitimate births.

In 1,045 cases the child of the study was less than 1 year of age, but even among these cases there were 2 in which there had been a subsequent illegitimate birth. Of the 365 cases in which the child of the study was 1 year of age at the end of the period or the close of care, 1 subsequent birth was reported in 21 cases—6 per cent. Of the 319 cases in which the child of the study was 2 or 3 years of age, 1 subsequent birth was reported in 55, or 17 per cent; and 2 subsequent births in 6, or 2 per cent. Of the 215 cases in which the child was 4 or 5 years of age, 1 subsequent birth was reported in 37, or 17 per cent; and 2 in 17, or 8 per cent. Of the 911 cases in which the child was 6 years of age or over, 1 subsequent birth was reported in 124, or 14 per cent; 2 in 56, or 6 per cent; 3 in 30, or 3 per cent; and 4 or more in 26, or 3 per cent.

In a total of 741 cases the mothers were known to have had other illegitimate births. The paternity was reported in 526 cases. Table 71 gives the data concerning paternity.

TABLE 71.—*Paternity of mother's other children born out of wedlock.*

Number of other children mother had out of wedlock. ^a	Children born out of wedlock, under care of agencies in 1914, whose mothers had other children out of wedlock whose paternity was known.					
	Total.	Paternity of other children same as that of child of record.	Paternity of one or more of other children different from that of child of record.			
			Total.	One other father.	Two other fathers.	Three or more other fathers.
Total.....	526	227	299	235	50	14
One other.....	225	85	140	140	.....	.....
Two others.....	154	73	81	44	37	.....
Three others.....	54	23	31	11	8	12
Four others.....	46	25	21	15	4	2
Five or more others.....	47	21	26	25	1	.....

^a Counting twins as 1, including stillbirths but not including pregnancies not terminating until 1915.

In 227 of the 526 cases in which the paternity was known, the father of the child of record was also the father of the other child or children. In 299 cases there were different fathers. In more than three-fifths of the cases where one other child was known to have been born to the mother out of wedlock, there were different fathers. Where there were two other children, the paternity was different in slightly more than half the cases; in almost one-fourth of these cases each of the three children had a different father. In almost three-fifths of the cases where the mother had had three other children out of wedlock, the paternity of one or more of the children was different from that of the child of the record. In more than one-fifth of these cases there were at least three other fathers.

In over half the cases in which the mother had had four other children, the paternity was the same as that of the child of record; the proportionate number of cases in which there were three or more other fathers was much smaller than in the previous group. There were 47 cases in which the mother had had five or more other children out of wedlock; in 21 of these cases the paternity of all the children was the same; in 25 cases there was one other, and in 1 case there were two other fathers. In most of the cases in which several children had the same father the parents were illegally living as married.

The mothers of 373 of the children under care—13 per cent—had had children born in wedlock.²³ In half these cases there was one such child, in almost one-third there were two or three, and in almost one-fifth four or more children of legitimate birth. In 39 per cent of the cases in which there were children born in wedlock, one or

²³ Counting twins as 2; exclusive of stillbirths and pregnancies not terminating until 1915.

more of these children were under the care of the agencies studied during the year.

The characteristics of the brothers and sisters of the children included in this study are of especial interest as showing the prevalence of abnormal mentality, delinquent tendencies, and neglect or other conditions that made them dependent on agencies for care and support. The mothers of 920 of the children studied were reported to have had other children of legitimate or illegitimate birth.²⁴ In 2 cases one of the other children was insane, in 15 cases one or more had been diagnosed feeble-minded, and in 2 of these cases there was also delinquency among the brothers and sisters. In 30 additional cases one or more had been delinquent.

A considerable amount of dependency and neglect existed among the brothers and sisters of the children studied. In 387 cases dependency was reported; and in 252 neglect, or neglect and dependency. Hence, in a total of 639 cases one or more of the fraternity at one time or another had been dependent upon social agencies by reason of the inability of their relatives to care for them properly.

Mother's agency record.

As a test of the ability of the mothers to meet the difficulties involved in providing for themselves and their children, an analysis was made of the extent to which they themselves had been found in need of care by agencies and institutions before they were brought to the attention of social agencies because of this child. Assistance given to the mother's parents or her family was excluded, as was also care given to other children of the mother. The data secured gave a total of 496 children whose mothers had been under the care of agencies or institutions—23 per cent of the 2,178 whose histories gave social information.

In the greatest number of cases the mother had been an inmate of a correctional institution—198, or 9 per cent of all the cases in which social information was secured. In almost half these cases the mother had also received care from other agencies, in 19 cases having been a ward of a child-caring agency, and in most of the others having been on probation or having had a court record.

The mothers of 86 children—4 per cent—had been on probation. In 41 of these cases the mother had also been an inmate of a correctional institution and in 5 other instances she had received care from agencies of other types. Court records not involving probation or commitment to a correctional institution, though in some instances including short-term commitments to a jail, were reported in 133

²⁴ Counting twins as 2; exclusive of stillbirths and pregnancies not terminating until 1915.

cases—6 per cent. In 80 cases there had been no other type of agency care; in 46 of the court cases there were also probation records or commitments to correctional institutions. In many instances the mother had been before the courts repeatedly. Eliminating duplications involved in more than one type of care being given the same mother, the mothers of 330 children—15 per cent of the cases in which social information was secured—were reported as having court records, some involving commitments or probation and others having different dispositions. This proportion of more than one-seventh is high, considering that no special effort was made to check up the histories of the mothers with court records, and that the sources of the information were the records of agencies dealing with the children.

The mothers of 243 of the children included in the study—11 per cent of the total—had been under care of correctional institutions or on probation from courts; in 84 cases this provision resulted from the offense connected with illegitimate pregnancy. In 13 of these 84 cases the mother had also been under care formerly, and in 6 she subsequently came under care again. In 40 cases the mother had been discharged from correctional care before pregnancy began and had not subsequently come under care. It is interesting to note that in 19 cases the mother became illegitimately pregnant while on probation or parole; in 3 of these 19 cases she had also been under care previously, and in 3 she later came under care again.

The mothers of 89 children had been provided for by child-caring agencies, and of 36 more by child-caring agencies and also by other agencies. Hence the mothers of 6 per cent of the 2,178 children whose histories gave social information had themselves been wards of child-caring societies. By the term "ward" is here meant a child under 21 years receiving prolonged care.

The mothers of 94 children—4 per cent—had been under care of agencies of other types than those specified above. These agencies included almshouses, public infirmaries, and institutions for physical and mental defectives. In 25 of these cases they had also been cared for by the agencies specified above.

In the majority of cases—95 of the 125 in which the mother had been a ward of a child-caring agency—she had been discharged from care previous to the time when she became pregnant with the child of the study. The mothers of 15 children were wards of such societies at the time pregnancy began. In 14 cases the care of the young girl was assumed after pregnancy had begun, in 10 of these instances because of need arising from that situation. In 5 of these 14 cases the mother had also been under care at some former time. In 1

instance the time when the mother had been under care was not reported.

Illustrative cases.

The following cases illustrate some of the conditions making it difficult for the mother to care for the child unaided or to obtain the assistance of relatives:

The youth of the parents and the unwillingness of the mother's family to aid her in caring for the child made it impossible for a baby born during the year covered by the study to be provided for without the assistance of a social agency. The mother was only 16 years old and had recently completed the seventh grade. The father, a schoolboy of 14, was in the sixth grade. Both had good reputations in the community. The mother had always been obedient and truthful and was described as sincere and capable, a reliable worker, and a brave mother. The maternal grandfather was a heavy drinker, abusive, and without affection for his family. The baby—a girl—was born in a hospital, and after six weeks application was made to a private child-caring agency for boarding care for the mother and child. The mother's family was unwilling to keep her at home if she insisted upon caring for her baby. The mother and child were placed in a boarding home and later in a wage home. The maternal grandfather was aided in the prosecution of the baby's father. The boy was adjudged the father and appealed, and the case was pending at the end of the period. When the baby was 5 months old she was found to have syphilis and was admitted to a hospital for treatment. Later the child was boarded apart from the mother, and the mother was placed at housework. (Case V 2602.)

Another type of home conditions is illustrated by the following case:

Although the mother of a baby born during the year covered by the study was only 14 years of age and the maternal grandparents were in very poor circumstances, strong family affection impelled them to assume the care of mother and child after a short period during which a private agency gave supervision and aid. The mother and her family had been in the United States only two years. The mother was bright and attractive and had reached the eighth grade in school. Her teachers were very anxious that she return to school after her baby was born. The alleged father—a peddler, 21 years of age—was the brother of a woman whose children the mother had cared for occasionally. He mistreated her while she was caring for the children. He was prosecuted for rape and given a two-year sentence.

Shortly before the baby was born application was made to a private child-caring agency for supervision and care of the mother. The child was born in a hospital and was soon placed with the mother in a boarding home. When the baby was a little more than 2 months old the private agency giving care applied to a public child-caring agency, asking that the care of the child be assumed on account of the mother's youth and the family's financial inability to carry the burden of providing for the baby. The maternal grandparents, however, decided that they could not give up the child. They thought they could struggle along, and after the father of the baby had served his term they were planning to try to compel him to assist in the child's support. In accordance with this arrangement, the mother and baby went to live with the grandparents, the mother working in a factory and earning \$1.50 a week. The plan worked out successfully, and agency care was no longer necessary. (Case V 1420.)

During the period of the study application was made to a maternity home for the care of a pregnant mother. The mother was 26 years old, earned between \$25 and \$30 a month in a factory, and was helping her younger brothers and sisters to secure an education. The maternal grandfather was dead and the maternal grandmother, a peculiar woman with a violent temper, was a laundress. The mother at first refused to marry the father—a chauffeur—because she felt she must help support her brothers and sisters. Later he declined to marry her, and in consequence she would not accept any help from him. The mother was cared for in the maternity home until the baby was 3½ months old. Mother and child then returned to the home of the maternal grandmother. The mother went to work and the grandmother cared for the child during the day, the maternity home giving supervision. (Case V 556.)

The poverty of the mother's family and the feeble-mindedness of the mother made it impossible for them, unaided, to care for a child born out of wedlock during the year covered by the study. Application had been made to a maternity home nearly three months before the child's birth, asking for confinement care. The family had been under the supervision of a family-care agency for 32 years. The girl's own mother was dead; her stepmother was a well-meaning woman who had tried her best to guard and protect the girl. There had been 11 children in the family, one of whom had been epileptic and feeble-minded. The girl herself, after a mental examination given during the period studied, was diagnosed feeble-minded. She was 28 years old at the time her child was born and had been earning \$6 a week in a factory. She had always been very irresponsible. The maternity home gave care before and after confinement. The child was a weak, sickly baby, and died at the age of 2 months. The burial was at public expense. The mother returned to her home and went back to work. (Case V 2828.)

The year previous to the period covered by this study application was made to a private child-caring agency for the care of a 3-day-old infant. The child had been born in the maternal grandparents' home, and was being kept concealed in an upper room, some members of the family not knowing of its existence. The maternal grandparents were honest, self-respecting persons in poor financial circumstances and with six other children besides the mother. They stated that it was all they could do to support their own children, and that they could not assume the care of their grandchild. They felt deeply disgraced by their daughter's trouble.

The baby's mother, 22 years old, had been very sick as a child and was still in poor physical condition. She had been unable to finish grammar school because of weak eyes. She had been employed in a shoe shop. Sixteen months before the birth of the child of the record she had had a child born out of wedlock, whose father was not the father of the second child. The first baby died. The father of the child of the study was the same age as the mother. He had the reputation of being a common street loafer, failed to support his widowed mother, and could scarcely support himself. He was never told of the child's existence, because the mother's family was sure he would not be able to render any assistance.

The baby remained in the home of her grandparents, under agency supervision, until the age of 5 months. She was then boarded by the agency, the mother paying \$3 a week. When the child was a little over a year old the mother—whose physical condition had been much improved through the medical care secured by the agency—married and took the child into her own home. (Case V 126.)

CHAPTER 3. LEGAL ACTION FOR THE SUPPORT OF CHILDREN BORN OUT OF WEDLOCK.

INTRODUCTION.

Of great importance in connection with a study of children born out of wedlock is consideration of the extent to which the State is demanding the assumption of parental responsibility by their natural parents. Society has borne a heavy burden in providing for such children not only support but also nurture and training. The responsibilities and privileges of the mother, largely because so closely related to the physical well-being of her child, have been more generally recognized than have those of the father. Other parts of this study have shown how few facts about the father appear to have been known to those who assumed the care of the children. In many instances there was no serious consideration of the father's status and the possibility of securing from him voluntary or forced contributions. Public opinion permits many fathers to shirk their duties; and often from a desire to protect the mothers from publicity and from further association with the man, agencies and individuals ignore the results for the child—and also for the father—of letting the matter lapse.

In order to ascertain what support Massachusetts is expecting from the fathers of children born out of wedlock and how this is being enforced through the courts, an analysis was made of the 1913 act relating to children of illegitimate birth and their maintenance, and of its administration, including a study of all court cases under the act initiated in Boston during 1914, carrying them through 1915. The law had been in operation for a comparatively short period at the time the study was made. A statement of changes in administration since the period covered by the study, based upon figures obtained from court officials, is included in this chapter.

ANALYSIS OF THE MASSACHUSETTS LAW FOR THE SUPPORT OF CHILDREN OF ILLEGITIMATE BIRTH.¹

General Provisions.

Massachusetts set an advanced standard of parental responsibility for the support of children born out of wedlock through the

¹ The analysis of the Massachusetts law and of its administration in the Boston courts in 1914-1915 was prepared by Miss Evelina Belden.

passage of the 1913 act, which came into operation July 1 of that year.² Previous to this date, cases had been tried under a civil law which resulted largely in commitments to jail if the defendants were unable to give the sureties required, or in securing inadequate lump-sum settlements.

The new law makes the father "liable to contribute reasonably to the support of the child during minority," and gives the same protection against the lack of such contribution as that provided for failure to support children of legitimate birth under the uniform desertion and nonsupport act.³ It states that the defendant shall be subject "to all the penalties and all the orders for the support and maintenance of the child provided in the case of a parent who is found guilty of unreasonably neglecting to provide for the support and maintenance of a minor child."

Offense, Jurisdiction, Process.

The present law makes it a misdemeanor to get a woman with child illegitimately, or to fail to support such child reasonably during minority, and subjects the defendant to arrest, trial, and judgment under the criminal law. Jurisdiction is given the police, municipal, or district courts in the locality in which either the man or the woman lives; or if there are none of these courts in that locality, to such courts in the county or to courts presided over by trial justices. This provision permits the choice of a locality in which the case may be tried with the least possible publicity to those concerned. The mother herself or some one else representing the child's interests may make the complaint. If the court deems it wise, especially in cases in which there is no danger of the man's absconding, the man may be summoned to appear to answer this complaint; in other cases he is arrested on a warrant.

Age of Child at Initiation and at Close of Case.

Complaints under section 1 of the act—that making the begetting of a child out of wedlock a misdemeanor—may be entered at any time before or after the child's birth. Complaints under section 7—the nonsupport section—may be entered at any time after the child's birth. In the course of the study of court cases, complaints were found to have been made for 6-year-old children and also for unborn children as early as the third month of pregnancy. Under section 1, if the man pleads guilty, an adjudication may be made as early

² Acts 1913 ch. 563, an act relative to illegitimate children and their maintenance, as amended by 1918 ch. 199.

³ Acts 1911 ch. 456, as amended by 1912 chs. 264 and 310, 1914 ch. 520, and 1918 ch. 257 secs. 453-454.

as the court is convinced that a child is to be born. If the man pleads not guilty and objects to a trial, the case must be held over for trial until the mother is at least six months advanced in pregnancy.

Adjudication of Paternity.

A distinct gain over preceding laws is made by the Massachusetts law in its provisions for establishing paternity. The adjudication of paternity, which results from every convicted case, not appealed, under the begetting section of the law, is determined for all time, no matter what the disposition made. The fact of parentage is thus established for all subsequent cases of nonsupport which may be initiated. This type of permanent adjudication follows also a sentence under the nonsupport section of the act, though cases brought in under the nonsupport section do not establish the fact of paternity unless the man is sentenced. If an appeal to an adjudication is taken, it can be granted only if made immediately. Thus, a court completes at the time when evidence can be most easily secured the most difficult part of the trial—that of showing that the defendant is the father of the child and, consequently, is liable for its support.

Section 7—the nonsupport section of the act—was intended to be used for cases in which the child was begotten outside the State or before the act went into effect, or in which an adjudication of paternity had been made in some prior proceeding, disposed of before the new complaint was entered. If a case can be brought under section 1, this proceeding is preferable because of the provision as to adjudication of paternity and also because an order for confinement expenses may be made under section 1 but not under section 7.

Dispositions of Cases and Support Orders.

The primary purpose of the law is to obtain maintenance for the child during its minority and not to punish the man for his misdemeanor. Consequently, provision is made for dismissing the case if such maintenance is secured either by the marriage of the parents or by provision which is satisfactory to the court; or a case may be dismissed if the court finds that no living child will be born or that the child has died. The law aims to protect the child from securing only a small cash settlement, by stating that settlements shall be approved by the court or justice in a "certificate of adequate provision for the maintenance of the child."

Orders for contributions to the child's support through periodic payments are enforced through the probation officer. In case of failure to comply with a probation order, or if the original judgment is a commitment, the man may be sentenced to the house of correction under an order which states that because his dependents are

in needy circumstances his wages of 50 cents a day, earned by work in the house of correction, shall be paid to his family. Money is occasionally collected through fines ordered by the court to be paid for the child.

The method of collecting support through the probation office, applicable to payments for children of illegitimate paternity as well as to payments under the uniform desertion and nonsupport act, gives the same officer the duty of collecting the money and also of adjusting the complex social factors in the lives of the persons concerned. The probation office of the central municipal court in Boston does an advanced type of social-service work in connection with the receiving and investigating of complaints and the subsequent treatment of the whole situation.

The probation orders which a court may render include those outlined under the desertion law and the interpretation of its practice as given by a committee of judges:

The disposition of the case, after a plea or finding of guilty, should include an order for weekly payments to the probation officer; a placing on probation until a day certain, not less than six months nor more than two years away; a recognizance, usually with the probation officer as surety; and, unless the court has considerable confidence in the defendant, a sentence, usually of two or three months in the house of correction, and a suspension of the execution of the sentence, conditioned upon performance of the order, and compliance with the usual probation conditions. Where the court has confidence in the defendant, simple probation may be used instead of a suspended sentence. It is of doubtful wisdom to require the defendant to assign his wages to the probation officer, or to give him an order on the employer, as this incites rebellion and is a source of constant irritation. The probation officer should use a systematic method of collections, and should follow up the payments as maturities are followed up in a bank. * * * If any need of increased pressure appears, the probation officer should surrender the defendant and a suspended sentence should be imposed, upon the same conditions, if none has been imposed before.⁴

At any time after an adjudication under section 1 of the act, reasonable confinement expenses in accord with the status of the persons concerned may be ordered paid to the mother or to the probation officer in her behalf.

An order for the child's maintenance may be entered at any time after the adjudication of paternity under the provisions of the law.⁵ After the adjudication the court is required to continue the case from time to time until the child is born; but even this does not prevent the making of an order as to confinement expenses, and as to support as well, at any time. Some maintenance orders were found to have been entered before the birth of the child.

⁴ Association of Justices of District, Police and Municipal Courts of Massachusetts, Committee on Law and Procedure: Report No. 7, Criminal Remedies in Massachusetts for Failure to Furnish Support. August, 1916. p. 36.

⁵ Acts 1913 ch. 563 sec. 4.

Period of Support.

The Massachusetts law specifically states that "the defendant shall be liable to contribute reasonably to the support of the child during minority."⁶ This provision is enforced by means of penalties and orders provided by the uniform desertion and nonsupport act for the protection of children of legitimate birth. That law states:⁷

Before the trial, with the consent of the defendant, or at the trial, on entry of a plea of guilty, or after conviction, if the defendant is placed on probation * * * the court in its discretion, having regard to the circumstances and to the financial ability or earning capacity of the defendant, shall have power to make an order, which shall be subject to change by the court from time to time as circumstances may require, directing the defendant to pay a certain sum periodically, for a term not exceeding two years, to the probation officer.

The exact amount of time within this two-year period is subject to the discretion of the individual justice or court,⁸ and definite limits must be fixed in each instance. The term may be extended from time to time without a new complaint. There is some difference of opinion in Massachusetts in regard to whether the two-year limitation on the probation period applies to cases brought under the 1913 act.

At the time the study was made, the law had not been in operation a sufficient length of time to show how long cases will be followed—whether until the child becomes of working age and able to be self-supporting, or until he is 21 years old, when legal minority ceases. There appears to be no reason why any man adjudged the father and not dismissed for reasons stated in the statute (certificate, or marriage, or no living child to be born) may not be arrested and ordered to pay as often as he fails to make proper provision.

Thus it is seen that the Massachusetts law purposes to secure reasonable support for the child during its minority. In general, the provisions and safeguarding of the law are far-reaching. To what extent this ideal has been realized can be shown only through a study of the actual results obtained in the courts.⁹

ADMINISTRATION OF THE LAW IN THE BOSTON COURTS, 1914-15.

Method of Study and Distribution of Cases.

The study of results obtained under the Massachusetts act was made from records of cases brought before the nine courts in Boston

⁶ Acts 1913 ch. 563 sec. 6.

⁷ Acts 1911 ch. 456 sec. 5 as amended by 1918 ch. 257 sec. 453.

⁸ Massachusetts Commission on Probation: Probation Manual, Boston, July, 1916. P. 16.

⁹ For a more detailed analysis of the law see: Manual of Laws Relating to Illegitimacy in Massachusetts, prepared by the Boston Conference on Illegitimacy in 1917. Also, Report No. 7, Criminal Remedies in Massachusetts for Failure to Furnish Support, prepared by the Committee on Law and Procedure of the Association of Justices of District, Police, and Municipal Courts of Massachusetts. August, 1916.

trying such cases during 1914. In Boston these and other domestic relations cases were not tried in a centralized court, as in some cities, but in the regular police courts¹⁰ of the several districts of the city or in the Superior Court of Suffolk County. In the superior court were initiated 14 cases in which the defendant or complainant had a Boston residence, and this court also heard 59 cases appealed from the 8 lower courts. Indictments by the grand jury were used as methods of bringing cases to the superior court.

For the purpose of this study, court and probation records were secured for all complaints entered or tried during 1914, and these cases were followed through the dockets to the end of 1915. Complaints for which no warrants were issued were excluded. These court records were checked with records secured for all other parts of the study; and the many additional facts so secured, concerning marriages, adoptions, settlements, and ages and status of children, were used to supplement the court material.

During the year 1914 the courts of Boston issued warrants for 256 cases initiated under the act for the support of children born out of wedlock. In addition 42 cases under the act, held over from 1913, were also pending in the courts in 1914. For purposes of analysis only cases initiated during the year were studied; and these, since many of them were not disposed of until 1915, were followed through 1915 to give time for their closing. (See Table 72.)

TABLE 72.—*Status in 1914 of cases brought under the act relative to the support of children of illegitimate birth, by year of initiation.*

Year of initiation of case.	Cases brought under the act, which were current in 1914.		
	Total.	Closed in 1914.	Pending at end of year.
Total.....	298	195	103
Prior to 1914.....	42	37	5
1914.....	^a 256	158	98

^a These 256 cases involved 239 fathers and 253 children.

Although the treatment of complaints appeared to be somewhat different in the nine courts, the numbers in each court were too small to warrant comparisons or separate classifications, and all cases for the city were analyzed together. This use of the total number of all cases in the city gives facts which can more readily be compared with other cities which have a centralized court. A case, even though

¹⁰ The central municipal court of Boston, one of the district courts, has transferred all cases under this act, as well as domestic relations complaints, to its special domestic relations sessions.

appealed and settled in the superior court, was always considered as belonging to the court in which it originated.

As would be expected, the courts serving the parts of the city where institutions for mothers and babies were located had a large number of cases, quite out of proportion to their total business. The number of cases in the central court of the city was relatively small in comparison with the total number of criminal cases. (See Table 73.)

TABLE 73.—*Total criminal cases initiated and cases initiated under the act relative to the support of children of illegitimate birth, in each court in Boston, 1914.*

Court.	Total criminal cases initiated in fiscal year 1914. ^a	Cases under the act specified initiated in calendar year 1914.
Boston central municipal.....	53,247	66
Brighton.....	1,740	7
Charlestown.....	5,196	11
Dorchester.....	3,256	61
East Boston.....	3,256	15
Roxbury.....	9,173	48
South Boston.....	8,666	24
West Roxbury.....	3,106	10
Superior court and grand jury (Boston residence).....	(b)	14

^a Fourteenth Annual Report of the Board of Prison Commissioners of Massachusetts, for the year 1914 Boston, 1915. p. 142. Cases begun in fiscal year, Oct. 1, 1913, to Sept. 30, 1914.

^b The cases in the superior court could not be compared, because only cases of Boston residence were used, and the court figures are for cases for the whole county of Suffolk.

Since courts usually compute their statistics from the cases initiated and not from the individuals arrested or the children involved in the matter of support, cases were considered in discussing disposition rather than number of fathers or of children. However, in the discussion of the amounts collected, and of ages of children, it was necessary to count children rather than cases; in the discussion of percentages of orders paid, the number of fathers was used. The 256 court cases involved 239 alleged fathers and 253 children.¹¹

Ten men were the alleged fathers of more than one child—two being the alleged fathers of three children each, and one being the alleged father of four children.

Court Procedure.

In 1914 and 1915 no uniform and organized method was employed in the Boston courts for receiving, investigating, and prosecuting cases. In general, complaints were made to the regular warrant

¹¹ An alleged father would be involved in more than one case if he was accused in a second complaint of parentage of a second child, or if a second complaint was made because the first was technically wrong, or if the first had been allowed to lapse before trial. A separate complaint is not necessarily made out for each child.

clerks, who were men. The court did not undertake to have a woman always present to assist with these cases, either at the time of receiving the complaint or later throughout the trial. In Massachusetts it is the duty of the probation officer in all criminal cases to inform the court, so far as possible, whether a person on trial has been previously convicted of crime¹² and, after the defendant's conviction, he may make recommendations as to the desirability of release on probation. Aside from the informal help given to the mother by the probation officers, there was no official in the inferior courts whose duty it was to prosecute each case or to direct its progress. In the superior court, the district attorney represented the State and prosecuted the case for the mother. Social agencies often followed their own cases through the courts with their own attorneys or social workers.¹³

In many instances the mother secured her warrant and brought in her case as best she could alone. Often the judge was obliged to rely merely upon the information produced in court—in many cases only the terrified mother's statement—and was compelled to make a decision of the greatest importance to the child's future without adequate knowledge of the social factors of the situation. The study of records revealed a large number of cases regarding which nothing appeared to have been known except the legal data required on the court forms. Such a method of procedure makes it probable that cases will be dropped after the warrant is issued, or that they will be dismissed at various stages before any real provision has been made for the child. There were 37¹⁴ of the 256 cases in the Boston courts in which the only entry was the date of the writing of the warrant.

Comparison of Number of Cases Initiated and Number of Illegitimate Births in Boston.

In all Boston courts during 1914 a total of 256 cases (representing 253 children) were initiated. During the same year there were born out of wedlock in the city 847 children. For every 100 births 30.2 court cases were initiated. This ratio of births to court cases is merely suggestive of the relatively small number of cases which are brought to court. It is not an exact ratio, for some of the court children were born before 1914 or were born outside Boston, and support for children born in Boston might have been secured through courts outside the city.

¹² R. L. 1902 ch. 217 sec. 84.

¹³ Since the time covered by this study, all cases initiated in the central municipal court under the act relative to the support of children of illegitimate birth come to the probation department. In the superior court, also, the probation department handles all these cases.

¹⁴ Including 4 cases in which the child was stillborn or had died before the end of the period.

Philadelphia and Chicago each have a specialized court with an organization equipped to deal with these cases. In Philadelphia in 1916, 38.8 court cases were initiated for every 100 births out of wedlock, a proportion somewhat greater than was the case in Boston. The comparison is only suggestive. The relative proportions of cases brought to court would be affected by the comparative accuracy of birth registration and by other factors. (See Table 74.)

TABLE 74.—*Number of court cases initiated in Boston under the act relative to the support of children of illegitimate birth, and number of court cases of fornication and bastardy in Philadelphia, per 100 illegitimate births in Boston and in Philadelphia, respectively.*

City.	Live births.		Court cases initiated.	
	Total.	Illegitimate.	Number.	Per 100 illegitimate births.
Boston (1914).....	19,462	847	256	30.2
Philadelphia (1916).....	^a 41,220	982	^b 381	38.8

^a Reprint from the Annual Report of the Bureau of Health of the Department of Public Health and Charities, Philadelphia, 1916, pp. 54, 70.

^b Third Annual Report of the Municipal Court of Philadelphia for the Year 1916, p. 224.

In Chicago, on the other hand, the evidence indicates that the proportion was considerably smaller than in Boston. The Juvenile Protective Association of Chicago stated, in a report of an investigation made by that organization:¹⁵

It is clearly impossible to estimate the number of children born each year in Chicago out of wedlock, but it is obvious that a minority of cases are brought into court. Last year [1913] the total number of bastardy cases tried in the Court of Domestic Relations was 469—less than a sixth of the number of illegitimate children born in the hospitals alone.

Ages of Children.

The discussion of cases brought into court is mainly concerned with infants, for only 19 of the children involved were 2 years of age or over at the time the case was initiated, and only 1 other child was over this age at the close of the case. More cases were started before the birth of the child than after. The court cases for the 253 children represented were begun at the following times:

Total children	253
Before the birth of the child.....	124
Third month of pregnancy.....	10
Fourth to sixth month.....	44
Seventh to ninth month.....	61
Month of pregnancy not reported.....	9

¹⁵ The Juvenile Protective Association of Chicago: A Study of Bastardy Cases Taken from the Court of Domestic Relations in Chicago. Text by Louise de Koven Bowen. 1914. p. 4.

After the birth of the child.....	104
Less than 3 months.....	54
3-5 months.....	8
6-8 months.....	6
9-11 months.....	5
12-17 months.....	6
18-23 months.....	2
2 years or over.....	19
Age of child not reported.....	4
Not reported.....	25

The cases for 214 of the 253 children were closed by December 31, 1915, the end of the period studied. The cases for 39 were still pending, though 6 of the children concerned had died. Of the 214 whose cases were closed, 36 were unborn and 143 were living at the close of the case, while 4 were stillborn and 19 were dead; in regard to 12 of the children it was not known whether they were born or unborn at the close of the case. All those who died were under 1 year of age at death. Ninety of the living children were under 1 year of age at the close of the case, 36 were 1 year of age or over, and there were 17 whose ages were not reported.

The cases for the 214 children whose cases were closed terminated at the following times:

Total children.....	214
Child stillborn.....	4
Child dead.....	19
Child unborn.....	36
Child living, so far as known.....	143
Under 3 months of age.....	45
3-5 months.....	16
6-8 months.....	16
9-11 months.....	13
12-17 months.....	10
18-23 months.....	6
2 years or over.....	20
Age not reported.....	17
Not reported whether born or unborn.....	12

Classification of Cases.

The type and amount of support secured for the children concerned is of greater significance than technical docket information. For this reason the dispositions have been classified not in legal terms but in terms showing the social significance of the court's dealings. All types of dispositions in which the court ordered or sanctioned an arrangement for the child's support are grouped together regardless of the factors of trial or conviction, and in contrast to these are grouped those cases closing perhaps with some sort of provision, but not one which the court could sanction officially under the law or to which it could legally hold the father.

In order to determine how much these arrangements actually accomplished each is related to the provision known to have been secured. Such information was obtained not only from records of money payments, but from marriage, adoption, and agency records examined in connection with other parts of this study.

Types of dispositions made by court.

As described in the analysis of the law, there are certain dispositions definitely specified by which a case may be closed under this act: Simple probation or probation during a suspended sentence; commitment to the house of correction, usually with an order for payment of wages for the support of the child; dismissal because of certification of adequate provision having been made, or because of the marriage of the defendant and the mother; and imposition of a fine, usually ordered to be paid for the support of the child. These all make some provision for the child. In contrast to these dispositions are those in which the defendant is discharged because found not guilty by the court; cases in which the warrant is returned unserved, usually because the man has completely disappeared; and other cases, including those placed on file, nolle-prossed by the district attorney, dismissed for want of jurisdiction, and withdrawn without prosecution. Cases pending at the close of the period studied include those in which the warrant was still out and waiting to be served, as well as those in which the man, out on bond, had defaulted.

In the analysis of dispositions, cases classified under "order or arrangement for periodic payments or confinement expenses" include all orders for the payment of confinement expenses; orders for periodic payments through the probation officer; and other arrangements made through the court or probation office for periodic payments over a period of time during which a case was continued or a sentence was suspended.

The cases on file after adequate provision was certified include only those for which the judge or district attorney had signed such a statement. Other cash settlements in which the lump sums involved were not officially approved by the court were included in the cases otherwise dismissed—those on file, nolle-prossed, or dismissed for want of prosecution or jurisdiction.

The "dismissed, parents married" cases include not only those in which the marriage was recorded on the court paper as the reason for dismissal but also several without such a statement, in which, from the checking with other records, it was evident that the marriage was taken into consideration by the justice in rendering the judgment.

Types of provisions secured for child's support.

Under the provisions secured for the child during the pendency of the case there were included any definite plans carried out for the child—such as the payment of money, the parents' marriage, or the child's adoption. These were not necessarily ordered by the court; they were often results of the fear of an order or merely unofficial plans made by persons concerned with the child's welfare. Agency care was not included as a provision.

Money secured always refers to money paid by the father. In instances in which there were both money and some other provision, the preference has been given to the most permanent adjustment in the following order: Marriage, adoption, money payments. In eight of the nine adoption cases and in three of the marriage cases, money was known to have been paid by the father. These cases, though not appearing under "money secured" in the analysis of the types of provision secured, have been included in the discussion of amounts of money paid.

Analysis of Dispositions and Provisions Made.

Proportion of cases resulting favorably for the child.

Information as to dispositions and provisions made has been summarized in table 75. Of the 256 cases initiated in the Boston courts during 1914, only 120, less than half, were closed after an arrangement for support or confinement expenses, or for both, which could legally hold the man to his obligation, was ordered or approved by the court.¹⁶ In six cases the arrangements were not carried out.

In contrast to this, 76 were closed without arrangements for confinement expenses or support, and 42 were pending at the end of the time period. In 18 other cases, the man was found not guilty, though in 1 of these he married the mother, thus providing for the child. Since all the pending cases had been open for at least a year, they may justly be considered lost so far as support was concerned, for neither absconders from warrants nor defaulters of bonds are often brought to terms after such a length of time. Six of these pending cases would never be pressed further, because the children concerned were dead.

¹⁶ Of the 120 cases closed after an arrangement for support or confinement expenses had been ordered or approved by the court, there were 118 in which the child was living or unborn at the close of the case, 1 in which the child was dead, and 1 in which it was not known whether the child was living or dead. Of the 136 in which no provision had been ordered or approved by the court at the end of the period, there were 52 in which the child was living or unborn, 27 in which the child was dead or stillborn, and 57 in which it was not known whether the child was living or dead.

TABLE 75.—Cases initiated in 1914 under the act relative to the support of children of illegitimate birth, resulting in specified provision for child in 1914 and 1915, and cases pending Dec. 31, 1915, according to disposition of case by court.

Disposition of case by court.	Cases initiated in 1914 under the act.					
	Total.	Provision secured during pendency of case.				No provision secured or none reported.
		Total.	Parents married.	Child adopted.	Money secured.	
Total.....	256	134	a 29	b 9	96	80
Dismissed, not guilty.....	18	1	1	.....	.....	17
Closed after arrangement for support or confinement expenses was ordered or sanctioned by court.....	120	114	28	6	80	6
Order or arrangement for periodic payments or confinement expenses.....	64	58	6	1	51	6
Sentence to house of correction with order for assignment of wages.....	5	5	.....	.....	5	.....
Dismissed, certificate of adequate provision.....	28	28	2	4	22	.....
Dismissed, parents married.....	20	20	20	.....	.....	.....
Fine, to be paid for child.....	3	3	.....	1	2	.....
Otherwise closed.....	76	19	.....	3	16	57
Warrant returned without service.....	7	.....	.....	.....	.....	7
Case otherwise dismissed.....	c 69	19	.....	3	16	50
Pending, Dec. 31, 1915.....	42	.....	.....	.....	.....	42
Warrant out.....	37	.....	.....	.....	.....	37
Defendant defaulted before disposition..	5	.....	.....	.....	.....	5

^a In 3 cases money also was secured.

^b In all the cases but 1 (case otherwise dismissed) money was secured.

^c Including 6 dismissed for want of jurisdiction.

Although in only 114 cases the court entered judgment which was carried out, in arranging for the support of the child or for confinement expenses, 19 of the cases closed for other reasons and 1 in which the defendant was dismissed as not guilty incidentally resulted in some provision being made during the pendency of the case. Thus, in 134 cases, 52 per cent of the total, some provision was secured as a direct or indirect result of court action. In 17 cases—7 per cent—the defendant was dismissed as not guilty, and no provision was made. In 105 other cases—41 per cent—no provision whatever resulted though in only 18 of these had the child died. To be sure, 42 of the 105 cases were still pending, but, as previously pointed out, there was small probability of favorable action, since they had been open at least a year.

To summarize the 105 cases—41 per cent of the total—lost or closed without results for the child: In 37 instances, the warrants were still out, unserved; 5 others remained open on defaulted bonds; in 7 cases the warrant was returned without service; no money was known to have been paid in 6 cases in which some had been ordered or arranged for; 6 cases were closed because the case was outside the jurisdiction of the court receiving the complaint; and 44 cases, closed in other ways, made no provision so far as could be discovered.

It is probable that in some of these cases great difficulties were encountered in locating the defendant, or the complainant decided not to push the case.

Thus, 256 cases initiated in the nine courts of Boston during one year resulted in provisions being made in only 134 cases, representing 142 children, while there were born into the community during the same year 847 children, three-fifths of whom received prolonged care from agencies during their first year of life.¹⁷ The amount of responsibility placed upon fathers through the courts is evidently not in proportion to that assumed by agencies.

Distribution of cases according to types of dispositions and provisions made.

The dispositions of the cases show the legal orders and judgments rendered or the status of the case on the court docket at the end of the period, December 31, 1915. Of the 120 cases closed after arrangements for support were ordered or sanctioned by the court, 64 were by periodic payments or payment of confinement expenses, 5 by the payment of house of correction wages, 28 by certificates of adequate provision, 20 by the marriage of the parents, and 3 by payment of fines. Except for the fact that the superior court was the only one imposing fines, there was little difference in the various types of dispositions or of provisions made in the inferior courts and in the superior court. A comparison of dispositions in the inferior courts and in the superior court is shown in Table 76.

TABLE 76.—*Dispositions in the inferior courts and in the superior court of cases initiated in 1914 under the act relative to the support of children of illegitimate birth.*

Disposition of case by court.	Cases initiated in 1914 under the act.		
	Total.	Court in which disposition was made.	
		Inferior.	Superior.
Total.....	256	183	73
Dismissed, not guilty.....	18	16	2
Closed after arrangement for support or confinement expenses was ordered or sanctioned by court.....	120	76	44
Order or arrangement for periodic payments or confinement expenses.....	64	37	27
Sentence to house of correction with order for assignment of wages.....	5	4	1
Dismissed, certificate of adequate provision.....	28	18	10
Dismissed, parents married.....	20	17	3
Fine, to be paid for child.....	3	.....	3
Otherwise closed.....	76	50	26
Warrant returned without service.....	7	7	.....
Case otherwise dismissed.....	69	43	26
Pending, Dec. 31, 1915.....	42	41	1
Warrant out.....	37	37	.....
Defendant defaulted before disposition.....	5	4	1

^a Fourteen cases were initiated in the superior court. The others were appealed cases.

¹⁷ See p. 137.

In a total of 134 cases provision of some sort was actually secured for the child. In 96 of these cases money was paid by the father, in 29 instances the parents were married, in 8 money was secured and the child also adopted; 1 child was adopted for whom no money was known to have been obtained.

Periodic payments and cash payments.

An outstanding improvement in the new law over the old civil law is that, in place of dismissing a father after he has made an inadequate cash settlement, which in many instances would be quickly and unwisely spent by the mother, he may be held liable for regular weekly sums of money, to be collected by probation officers, who also can advise upon its expenditure for the child. If the father willfully fails to meet his payments, the probation officer may bring him again before the judge, and he may be committed to the house of correction. Likewise, in approved arrangements for periodic payments during a continuance, the man is held to his agreement because the surety is responsible for his payments.

The need for safeguarding the interests of the child by ordering payments in weekly installments, under the helpful supervision of a probation officer, is borne out by facts discovered in the study of infants born in 1914. This study brought out the frequency of such factors in regard to the mothers as youth, low economic and social status, bad home conditions, absence of home protection, low mentality, and weaknesses of character, which would make them incapable of handling without assistance and supervision a sum of money in trust for the child's future.

In 114 cases closed after arrangement for support or confinement expenses had been ordered or sanctioned by the court, some provision was actually secured during the pendency of the case. Twenty of these cases were dismissed because of the marriage of the parents. Notwithstanding the evident superiority of periodic payments, only 63¹⁸ of the 94 not dismissed because of the marriage of the parents were closed after orders or arrangements for periodic payments or confinement expenses, while 31 were closed after fines or other cash payments. In 29 of these 31 cases, the child was living or unborn at the close of the case.

Marriages and adoptions.

The social significance of the marriages and adoptions reported for the court cases could not be determined by the method used in obtaining facts for this study. A marriage or an adoption was considered merely as a type of adjustment, regardless of how successful that adjustment had proved to be. In general, social agencies in

¹⁸ Including 5 cases in which the defendant was sentenced to the house of correction with order for assignment of wages. See Table 75, p. 240.

Massachusetts discourage adoptions except under most favorable conditions, and the courts do not encourage marriages of the parents brought before them unless they are convinced that such a solution would work for the best interests of all concerned.

Most of the adoptions which were known to have occurred were undertaken through the large maternity hospital and children's institution which cares for unmarried mothers and their children. Adoptions seem to have been agreed to after the payment of sums ranging from \$150 to \$800, the majority of them being from \$200 to \$400. In 4 of the 9 adoption cases, adequate provision was certified.¹⁹

In 29 cases the parents were known to have married during the pendency of the case; in 13, before the child's birth. In a few other cases the parents were known to have married after the court case closed, but only provisions made during pendency of the case were considered. This proportion of marriages, about 1 in 9, is somewhat greater than that in the Philadelphia court in 1914—1 in 12.²⁰

Duration of Cases in Court.

It is greatly to the credit of the courts that in cases which terminated after some provision for the child had been arranged, the results were usually accomplished without unreasonable delay between the issuing of the warrant and the conclusion of the case. Some delay is often unavoidable because of the mother's physical inability to be present in court. The fact that 73 cases took less than a month, and 37 others less than three months, implies careful work in pressing trials. (See Table 77.)

TABLE 77.—*Dispositions of cases initiated in 1914 under the act relative to the support of children of illegitimate birth, by length of time between warrant and disposition.*

Length of time between warrant and disposition.	Cases initiated in 1914 under the act.					
	Total.	Disposition of cases in 1914 or 1915.				
		Order or arrangement for confinement expenses or support of child.	Defendant discharged not guilty.	Warrant returned without service.	Otherwise closed.	Pending.
Total.....	256	120	18	7	69	42
Less than 1 month.....	73	52	6	1	14	.....
1-2 months.....	37	23	2	.....	12	.....
3-5 months.....	33	19	1	2	11	.....
6-8 months.....	29	14	.....	2	13	.....
9-11 months.....	14	8	1	.....	5	.....
12-18 months.....	15	4	1	2	8	.....
Not reported or pending.....	55	.....	7	.....	6	42

¹⁹ See Table 75, p. 240.

²⁰ Second Annual Report of the Municipal Court of Philadelphia for the Year 1915. Pp. 61-63. Fifty-three marriages in 640 cases, or 8.3 per cent; 1 in 6 of the cases legally disposed of and 1 in 12 of all cases handled. Boston—29 marriages in 256 cases, 11.3 per cent.

*Amount of Money Secured.***Total amount secured.**

The total amount of money known to have been paid during 1914 and 1915 for all cases initiated in the Boston courts during 1914 was \$13,143.11. (See Table 78.) Ninety-nine children secured the benefits of this money. In addition, there were 16 children for whom money was secured, though the sum was not known.

Thus, 115 of the 253 children, only 45 per cent, secured money through some one of the methods of payment. In 8 of these cases the money was for confinement expenses only—for the 7 cases for which the amounts were known, a total of \$450.²¹ Excluding these cases in which the payment was for confinement expenses only, it appears that \$12,693.11 was obtained for the support of 92 children. Because of the varying periods of time covered by the amounts paid, the per capita amount would not be significant.

TABLE 78.—*Type of payment and total amount secured in 1914 and 1915, cases initiated in 1914 under the act relative to the support of children of illegitimate birth.*

Type of payment.	Amount secured in 1914 and 1915.	Children involved. ^a
Total.....	\$13,143.11	99
Periodic payments or house of correction wages.....	6,460.11	63
Cash payments and fines.....	6,233.00	29
Confinement expenses only.....	450.00	7

^a Excluding 16 for whom amount of money was not reported.

The distribution of the individual sums paid, as shown in Table 79, indicates how few children received amounts of any size and how small the cash payments were. The lump sums represented all that the children would be likely to receive, since new complaints would probably not be entered. These did not appear to be appreciably greater than the sums collected during the time period on continuing payments, whereas they would be expected to be many times greater.

²¹ One of \$230, 1 of \$100, and the others in sums of \$50 or under.

TABLE 79.—*Amounts secured, by type of payment, cases initiated in 1914 under the act relative to the support of children of illegitimate birth.*

Type of payment.	Children concerned in court cases under the act, for whom money was secured.												
	Total.	Amount of money secured in 1914 and 1915.											
		Less than \$10.	\$10-\$49.	\$50-\$99.	\$100-\$149.	\$150-\$199.	\$200-\$249.	\$250-\$299.	\$300-\$349.	\$350-\$399.	\$400.	\$800.	Not reported.
Total.....	115	5	19	24	15	10	13	5	3	3	1	1	16
Payments on court order or arrangement for periodic payments.....	59	3	15	15	10	7	4	4	.....	.....	.....	.....	1
Court order or arrangement for confinement expenses only.....	3	1	1	.....	1	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
Wages from house of correction.....	5	1	.....	3	1	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
Fine paid for child.....	3	.....	.....	.....	1	.....	2	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
Cash settlement.....	33	.....	1	5	2	2	6	1	3	2	.....	1	10
Cash settlement with an adoption.....	7	.....	.....	.....	.....	1	.....	.....	.....	1	1	.....	4
Cash settlement, confinement expenses only.....	5	.....	2	1	.....	.....	1	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	1

The majority—63 of the payments of all types—were under \$150; 34 were between \$150 and \$400; 1 was \$400; only 1 payment was more than \$400—a certificate of adequate provision of \$800.

The amounts of money paid, however, were so contingent upon whether the child had died, the parents had married, or the payments had ceased that these facts must be taken into consideration before any conclusion can be reached about the adequacy or inadequacy of the amounts secured. Information as to these facts is combined in Table 80.

TABLE 80.—*Amount secured, by status of payment at end of period and whether child was living or dead, cases initiated in 1914 under the act relative to the support of children of illegitimate birth.*

Status of payments at end of period, and whether child was living or dead at close of payments or end of period.	Children concerned in court cases under the act, for whom money other than confinement expenses only was secured.											
	Total.	Amount of money secured in 1914 and 1915.										
		Less than \$10.	\$10-\$49.	\$50-\$99.	\$100-\$149.	\$150-\$199.	\$200-\$299.	\$400.	\$800.	Not reported.		
Total.....	107	4	16	23	11	10	23	1	1	15		
Payments ceased.....	68	4	10	12	5	5	16	1	1	14		
Child living or unborn.....	62	4	^a 9	^b 11	2	4	16	1	1	14		
Child dead.....	6	.....	1	1	3	1	.....	.....	.....	.....
Payments not ceased.....	39	.....	6	11	9	5	7	.....	.....	1		
Child living or unborn.....	36	.....	5	9	9	5	7	.....	.....	1		
Child dead.....	3	.....	1	2	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....

^a Includes 2 children whose parents intermarried (payments of \$16.50 each), and 2 children whose father was dead.

^b Includes 1 child whose parents intermarried (payment of \$87).

The payments for almost two-thirds of the children (68 out of 107) had ceased by the end of the period studied, and 30 of these would in all probability never receive more from the father because adequate provision had been certified by the judge (28) or the father had died (2). In the cases in which payments had ceased, contingencies of the child's death or the parents' marriage seem to account for but few of the small payments. In but 2 of the 26 cases in which the money amounted to less than \$100, and in but 4 of the remaining cases, could the small amounts be accounted for by the death of the child. In but 3 instances did the parents' marriage explain the small payments; in 2 others they might be accounted for by the death of the father.

For 57 living or unborn children whose parents were not known to have married each other and whose fathers were living, payments had ceased, though 19 of the children had received less than \$100, and all but 2 of those for whom the amount of money secured was known had received less than \$400. Four of the children received merely nominal sums of less than \$10, and 5 others received under \$50.

Obviously the sums received were absolutely inadequate to cover the period of minority. The enforcement of the intent of the law would necessitate further complaints, in the cases where such action was possible, to see that the fathers, if they did not voluntarily contribute, are brought again before the court, or that probation periods are renewed.

Amounts ordered and percentages paid.

The amounts of money ordered and the types of orders, as distinguished from the amounts actually paid and the methods by which the payments were finally made, express in a definite way the standards of support set by the courts. That part of the order due by the end of the period studied or by the time of the death of the child or the marriage of the parents was considered, for the purposes of this analysis, the amount ordered. Payments were ordered for 81 children, the amounts of the orders being stated on the records for 77. For these 77 children, a total of \$9,806.39 was ordered to be paid during the period covered by the study. In 5 instances, the sums ordered were merely for confinement expenses. (See Table 81.)

TABLE 81.—*Total amount ordered, by type of order, cases initiated in 1914 under the act relative to the support of children of illegitimate birth.*

Type of order.	Total amount ordered.	Number of children concerned.
Total.....	\$9,806.39	a 77
Periodic payments.....	8,669.89	a 64
Wages from house of correction.....	332.50	5
Fine.....	500.00	3
Confinement expenses only.....	304.00	5

a Four other children were the beneficiaries of orders for periodic payments but were not included here because the amounts of the orders were not given on the records.

To a large degree, however, these orders were not fully met. (See Table 82.) Of the fathers who were ordered to pay in this way, only half paid 100 per cent of the amounts ordered, and almost one-tenth paid nothing at all. The shortage occurred in the periodic payments; all fines and house of correction wages were paid. Considering the leniency of the courts in their original decrees, the percentages secured were notably small.

TABLE 82.—*Per cent paid of amount ordered, by method of payment specified in court order, cases initiated in 1914 under the act relative to the support of children of illegitimate birth.*

Method of payment specified in court order.	Fathers ordered to make payments under the act.									
	Total.	Per cent paid of amount ordered.								
		Over 100.	100	75-99.	50-74.	25-49.	10-24.	Under 10.	None.	Not reported.
Total.....	74	11	26	14	4	5	2	2	7	3
Periodic payments or confinement expenses.....	a 66	10	19	14	4	5	2	2	7	3
Wages from house of correction.....	5	1	4							
Fine paid for child.....	3		3							

a In previous tables, 2 cases included here were put under "dismissed, adequate provision certified," or under "cash settlements." However, since confinement expenses were ordered and paid before the final dismissal, they are included here, because they started with an order and closed with a lump-sum payment which complied with the order. It must be borne in mind that this table is based on the number of fathers, while Table 81 is based on the number of children.

Periodic payments.

Throughout the discussion of periodic payments the total amounts computed for the period of time covered by the study, rather than weekly orders, were considered. It was evident that the former would be of greater significance in showing results obtained, and since changes of orders occurred from time to time or payments were made in advance or in arrears, no weekly sums could have been stated. Moreover, the method used was the only one which would have shown the percentage paid. In eight cases the judge specified the entire sum which was to be secured from the father before his payments should cease. These amounts ranged from \$100 to \$300 to be paid in weekly installments. Only that part of the order due by the end of the period studied or by the time of the death of the child or the marriage of the parents was included in this analysis. Periodic payments included in some cases payments for confinement expenses, in addition to weekly installments for the support of the child.

A total amount of \$8,669.89 was ordered to be paid periodically during the period studied, for the support of 64 children—an average of \$13.92 per month for each child. Four other children were concerned in orders for periodic payments, but the amounts ordered were

not given. Following are the total amounts ordered, the average for each child, and the monthly average for the 64 children for whom the amounts of the orders were known:

Total amount ordered for period studied.....	\$8, 669. 89
Number of children concerned in orders.....	64
Average amount per child.....	135. 47

Total months during period of study covered by orders.....	623
Average number of months covered by orders.....	9. 7
Average amount ordered per month per child.....	13. 92

Not all the money which was ordered to be paid periodically was secured in that way. The fathers of 4 children made lump-sum payments after the judgment, in order to hasten their release from obligation. The fathers of 5 children paid nothing.

Although 68 children were concerned in orders for periodic payments, only 59 actually received money paid in this way. The amounts of money paid were stated in the case of all but one of these children. A total amount of \$6,115.61 was known to have been collected for 58 children through periodic payments or such payments plus confinement expenses, giving an average of \$10.60 per month for each child. The following list gives the total amount collected, the average for each child, and the monthly average for the 58 children for whom the amounts collected were known:

Total amount collected during period studied.....	\$6, 115. 61
Number of children concerned.....	58
Average amount per child.....	105. 44

Total months of collection.....	577
Average number of months of collection.....	9. 9
Average amount collected per month per child.....	10. 60

The average amount secured for each child, if computed for a year at the average rate per month, would be \$127.20. Such a sum is slightly less than the usual amount, \$130, paid yearly at the time this study was made, for the board and clothes of each State ward by the State Board of Charity of Massachusetts.²² It is much less than the standard set by the Federal war risk insurance act²³ for compulsory allotments and Government allowances to dependents of soldiers and sailors. Under the provisions of that act, a child of illegitimate birth, if acknowledged by the father by instrument in writing, or if the father had been judicially ordered or decreed to contribute to the child's support, would receive \$240 a year (\$20 a month, \$15 from the father's pay and \$5 from the Government), unless the father had

²² State board of charity, division of state minor wards—Form to be filled out by persons desiring to take children to board.

²³ 40 U. S. Statutes at Large p. 400 sec. 22, p. 402 sec. 201, p. 403 sec. 204, p. 610 secs. 4 and 6.

other dependents, in which case the amount would be proportionately reduced. However, the sum paid for a child to whose support the father had been judicially ordered or decreed to contribute could not under the terms of the act exceed the amount fixed in a previous order or decree of a court.

Even more significant than the average in showing how much the children actually received, month by month, are the numbers of children receiving specified amounts. This information is given in Table 83. Over half the 59 children for whose benefit periodic payments were made had received amounts of less than \$100; the small amount may be explained in 4 of these cases by the fact that the child had died. One-third of the amounts under \$100 were intended to cover a period of a year or more. One of the 10 children receiving from \$100 to \$149 had died. In 54 of the 59 cases, the child was living at the end of the period.

Payments had ceased in the cases of 18 children living or unborn at the end of the period and benefiting from money secured through periodic payments. In 3 of these cases, less than \$10 was secured; in 8, from \$10 to \$49; in 4, from \$50 to \$99. Only 3 of the 18 children received as much as \$150, and none received as much as \$250. In only 5 of the 15 cases in which less than \$100 was secured, could the low amounts be accounted for by the death of the father or the marriage of the parents.

TABLE 83.—*Amount secured by length of time from order to close of payment, cases initiated in 1914 under the act relative to the support of children of illegitimate birth.*

Length of time from order to close of payment or Dec. 31, 1915.	Children for whose benefit periodic payments were made.								
	Total.	Amount of money secured in 1914 and 1915.							
		Less than \$10.	\$10-\$49	\$50-\$99	\$100-\$149	\$150-\$199	\$200-\$249	\$250-\$299	Not reported.
Total.....	59	3	15	15	10	7	4	4	1
Less than 6 months.....	14	3	5	3	3	—	—	—	—
6-11 months.....	20	—	4	7	5	2	1	—	1
12-17 months.....	18	—	5	4	2	4	2	1	—
18-22 months.....	5	—	1	1	—	1	1	1	—
Not reported.....	2	—	—	—	—	—	—	2	—

Payments through house of correction wages and fines.

Orders for fines or wages earned at the house of correction are of less importance than periodic payments. The wages are merely emergency measures. These house of correction wages amounted to—

Less than \$10 (length of time covered not reported).....	1
\$50 to \$99 (paid during period of 6 months).....	3
\$101 (paid during 12 months).....	1

In 4 of these cases the child was living or unborn at the end of the period, and the payments had ceased. In 1 case, that in which the highest amount was secured, the child was dead at the end of the period. Fines were for \$100 and \$200.

Certificates of adequate provision.

A radical provision in the act was that which aimed to protect the child from small cash settlements. The Association of Justices of Massachusetts voted in 1914: "That it is the sense of this meeting that the provision for the dismissal [upon certificate] of complaints * * * should not be employed in place of a continuing order, except in cases where the settlement agreed upon makes adequate provision during the full period of the probable dependence of the child."²⁴

Of the 256 cases before the court, 28, involving the same number of children, were dismissed after certificates of adequate provision were signed by the judge or district attorney. The granting of such a certificate would probably preclude any subsequent opening of the case. In all but 8 of the cases in which certificates of adequate provision were signed, arrangements for the care of the child were implied. Fourteen of the children were adopted through, or their care was assumed by, a large maternity hospital and children's institution, 3 others were adopted, 1 was taken permanently by his grandparents, and in 2 cases the parents were married. Three children were unborn at the time certificates were made, and 1 was dead.

The kinds of provision and the amounts of money paid were as follows:

Total certificates of adequate provision granted.....	28
Parents married.....	2
Amount paid not reported.....	2
Grandparents assumed permanently the support of mother and child.....	1
\$300 paid.....	1
Child adopted through, or care assumed by, a maternity hospital and children's institution.....	14
\$800 paid.....	1
\$350 paid.....	1
\$323 paid.....	1
\$315 paid.....	1
\$225 paid.....	2
\$200 paid.....	2
\$175 paid.....	1
\$150 paid.....	1
Amount paid not reported (1 child dead).....	4

²⁴ Association of Justices of District, Police and Municipal Courts of Massachusetts, Committee on Law and Procedure: Report No. 7, Criminal Remedies in Massachusetts for Failure to Furnish Support. Aug., 1916. P. 44.

Child adopted through other source.....	3
\$400 paid.....	1
Amount not reported.....	2
Kind of provision not reported.....	8
\$250 paid.....	1
\$200 paid.....	1
Amount paid not reported.....	6

The only children receiving as much as \$400 directly or indirectly through court action were the two receiving \$400 and \$800, respectively, on certificates of adequate provision. Both these children were adopted. Half the \$400 payment was made before the birth of the child and half after the child was adopted. The \$800 payment was made after the adoption of the child, \$600 going to the mother and \$200 to the agency caring for the child up to the time of adoption.

Two certificates of adequate provision were made for amounts of less than \$200. In both these cases an agency was responsible for the care of the child. Amounts paid ranging from \$200 to \$350 were known for 10 other children.

Judges increasingly refuse to sign certificates for the smaller sums of money. The policy of the association of justices is stated in their report as follows: “* * * that this provision for final dismissal upon certificate was intended for the very rare and exceptional case of a defendant able and willing to make settlement of several thousand dollars upon the child; and it was expected that orders for periodical payments would be used in ninety-nine per cent of all cases.”²⁵ A case brought in since this study closed was known to have been settled in the superior court on a certificate stating that \$2,000 was received in trust for the child.

Other cash payments.

Seventeen children, in addition to those concerned in the certificates, received money in lump-sum payments not ordered by the court. In those 17 instances, if the child should later become dependent upon society for support, complaint against the father may again be made, though it might be difficult to find the man. Private settlements between parties would not bar a court complaint, though the court would take all such facts into consideration, especially when a private settlement which seemed fairly reasonable had previously been made. Of the 17 cash settlements, 11 were for sums under \$150.

Confinement expenses.

One provision of great importance in the Massachusetts law is that which provides, under penalty, for the payment of a sum deter-

²⁵ Association of Justices of District, Police and Municipal Courts of Massachusetts, Committee on Law and Procedure: Report No. 7, Criminal Remedies in Massachusetts for Failure to Furnish Support. Aug., 1916. P. 44.

mined by the court for the confinement expenses of the mother.²⁶ Such a payment may be ordered only in cases brought under section 1 of the act. It may be collected before or after the child's birth and may be paid either to the probation officer or to the mother. It was found in this study that money was paid for this purpose both before and after the child's birth, and that it was paid in cases in which the child had died. Several fathers, realizing what the court would demand, paid these expenses without orders.

Twenty-seven payments for confinement expenses, including those paid voluntarily, were known to have been received either in connection with another sum for support or as the only payment. This figure is a minimum, since the purpose of the payment was not always made clear on the records. Some of the probation officers also made a practice of securing funeral expenses from the father, if the child died; but because such money was obtained informally it was not included.

The eight cases in which confinement expenses only were obtained were all cases in which the child had died or the parents had married. In one of these cases the amount was for only \$6; in one, for \$10; in two other cases, for less than \$50; in one, for \$50; in one, for \$100; and in one, for \$230. In one case the amount was not reported.

SUMMARY OF THE LAW AND ITS ADMINISTRATION IN 1914-15.

The Massachusetts act relative to the support of children born out of wedlock is an expression of the tendency to render more nearly normal the lot of the child born out of wedlock. This law provides a standard for support with far-reaching possibilities in the direction of interpretation and social treatment. Among the fundamental provisions are those which make the father liable for reasonable contributions to his child's support during minority, and those which safeguard the securing of such support through a procedure already established in the case of nonsupport of children of legitimate birth. There are no limitations as to the time when cases may be brought to court.

The intent of the law is that the father's contributions shall be paid so far as possible through weekly installments, collected under the supervision of the probation officer. Thus the money is to be paid at such times and in such manner as will render it most valuable to the child. When it appears probable that a father will not fulfill his obligations under the leniency of probation he may be sentenced to hard labor; yet this sentence need not thwart the purpose of the law by depriving the child of support, for the father's wages in the house of correction may be assigned for the support of

²⁶ Acts 1913 ch. 563 sec. 4.

the child. The contributions are collected not for the mother but for the child, though the mother, before or after the child's birth, may receive a reasonable sum for her confinement expenses.

Massachusetts, with its effective State probation commission and its years of experience in probation work, is unusually well equipped to deal with problems of illegitimacy in the courts. Some of the probation work in these cases, especially in the largest courts, was done according to approved methods of social investigation and case treatment and was bringing about most delicate and difficult social adjustments involving father, mother, and baby. In general, too, the courts were found to press these cases with reasonable rapidity and to render judgments without undue delay.

The Massachusetts law had been in operation for a comparatively short period at the time this study was made. Most of the courts had not developed a well-organized method for the reception, investigation, and prosecution of cases under this act. The mothers were often left to shift for themselves in the securing of warrants and the following up of prosecutions. Adequate social information appeared to have been lacking in a considerable number of cases. In fact, in one-seventh of the cases initiated during 1914, the only entry was the date of the writing of the warrant. Often the probation records themselves showed little information about the cases and were too meager to make possible any just estimate of the results obtained.

In 1914 there were 256 cases initiated in the Boston courts. For nearly half the 253 children involved in these cases action was brought before the birth of the child, while for the majority of the others proceedings were begun before the child became a year old. Nineteen children were 2 years of age or more.

The number of court cases initiated under the act was less than one-third of the number of children born out of wedlock in the city during the same year. Of the children born during the year, three-fifths received prolonged care from agencies during their first year of life.

Less than half the cases initiated in the Boston courts during the year actually resulted in an arrangement for the support of the child, for confinement expenses, or for both, which could legally hold the man to his obligation. In a few other instances support was secured as an indirect result of court action. Altogether, but 52 per cent of all the cases initiated resulted in making some provision for the child, though in only 7 per cent of the cases was the defendant dismissed as not guilty. In only two-thirds of the cases resulting in an arrangement for support, where the case was not dismissed because of the marriage of the parents, was the money to be collected through

weekly payments, notwithstanding the evident superiority of such a method.

The money collected did not usually amount to sums equal to the standard provided in Massachusetts for dependent children who were wards of the State. But few of the smaller amounts could be explained by the marriage of the parents or the death of the child. Many of the cases in which small amounts were collected had been closed without plans being made by the courts for bringing them in again. The amounts secured through lump-sum payments, including cases in which adequate provision was certified, appeared not to be appreciably greater than the amounts collected during the period on continuing payments, though the lump sums were usually intended to provide for the child's entire minority.

The inadequate results accomplished under the law may be attributed partly to the lack in most of the courts of an organization equipped to deal with the difficult problems involved. The mother, often at a time when she was physically ill-adapted to meet the strain, was attempting to secure support for her child through legal processes which were strange and terrifying to her. The circumstances and means of the father required consideration in making plans. Such facts as these called for more than merely a legal process, if the court was to effect a final disposition of the case which would provide equitably for the child without injustice to either parent.

CHANGES IN ADMINISTRATION SINCE THE PERIOD COVERED BY THE STUDY.

The preceding analysis is based upon the administration of the law in 1914 and 1915. At that time the law was comparatively new, having become effective in July, 1913. During the six years the law has been in force, the Massachusetts Commission on Probation and individual judges and probation officers have been working toward higher standards in administration. It was not practicable to repeat the intensive study for a later period, but an effort was made to obtain some information in regard to the present administration of the act in Boston, as compared with the situation that was revealed by this study. A list of questions was sent by the secretary of the Massachusetts Commission on Probation to the probation officers of seven courts in Boston. Information was obtained direct from the central municipal court, and it was found that no cases under the act are now initiated in the superior court. The questions were as follows:

1. How many cases this year involving children of illegitimate birth?

2. Does the number increase—taking the past four years, for instance?
3. Is there a decline in the proportion of cases in which lump settlements are accepted?
4. Is the certificate of adequate provision as much used as formerly, or is there any change in the policy of the courts as to its use?

The answers to these questions, together with statistics compiled by the probation department of the central municipal court and statistics published in the annual reports of the Massachusetts Commission on Probation, formed the basis for the following brief discussion of the present situation.

Number of Cases Brought into Court.

Although this chapter pertains only to Boston, it may be of interest to note the yearly distribution of probation cases under the act in all the courts of the State. For the six years from October 1, 1913, to September 30, 1919, the number of cases in which the defendants were placed on probation and ordered to make weekly payments for the support of the children were as follows:²⁷

1914.....	71	1917.....	284
1915.....	142	1918.....	262
1916.....	233	1919.....	198

The law went into effect in July, 1913, so that 1914 was the first year in which any considerable number of cases were placed on probation under the law. From 1914 to 1917 there was a steady increase in the number of cases placed on probation, the number in 1917 being four times that in 1914. There were fewer probation cases in 1918 than in 1917, and fewer in 1919 than in any year subsequent to 1915. The effect of the war and the difficulty in following up cases of men in camp or overseas probably accounts in large part for this decline. No data are available in regard to the proportion the number of probation cases bears in each year to the total number of cases initiated under the act.

The probation department of the central municipal court of Boston now handles all cases initiated in that court under the act providing for the support of children born out of wedlock. An analysis of the illegitimacy cases handled by the probation department of this court from the time the law became operative until October 16, 1919—a period of a little more than six years—has recently been made by a member of the staff,²⁸ who has given permission for its use in this

²⁷ Figures are for the fiscal years, Oct. 1 to Sept. 30. Figures for 1914 to 1918 obtained from the Sixth to the Tenth Annual Reports of the Commission on Probation, 1914–1918. Boston, 1915–1919. Figures for 1919 furnished by the deputy commissioner.

²⁸ Data compiled by Miss Elizabeth A. Lee, of the municipal court of the City of Boston.

report. During this period a total of 511 cases had been initiated in the central municipal court and had been handled by the probation department. During the first part of the period some of the cases initiated were not referred to this department, so that the figures for the first year or two do not represent the total number of cases initiated under the act in the court under consideration. The distribution of cases according to year of initiation was as follows:

Total -----			511
1913 (6 months) -----	16	1917 -----	90
1914 -----	50	1918 -----	100
1915 -----	87	1919 (9½ months) -----	^a 86
1916 -----	82		

With the exception of 1916, the figures show an increase from year to year, even through the war period, when the total probation cases under the act in the State as a whole declined. The increases in the first years are so considerable that the correction of the figures by the inclusion in those for the earlier years of cases not handled by the probation department would probably not affect the general tendency. It was estimated in the course of the study made by the Children's Bureau that the total number of cases initiated in 1914 in the central municipal court was 66. The number of cases in the fiscal year ended September 30, 1919, was 107, or 62 per cent higher.

In the Roxbury court the numbers of cases in each year of the period 1915 to 1919 were 52, 37, 35, 35, 30. The Charlestown court reported that the average number of cases under the act remained about the same, the number initiated in 1919 being 13. In East Boston the number of cases in 1919 was 16, showing a slight increase over preceding years. In South Boston the figures showed a decrease from year to year, the number of cases in 1918 and 1919 being 9 and 6, respectively, as compared with 24 in 1914. The Dorchester court reported 13 cases in the last fiscal year, there having been no material change in number over the years immediately preceding. However, the number of cases in the Dorchester court in 1914 was 61; hence, the number of cases in 1919 was only a little over one-fifth of the number in 1914. In West Roxbury the number of cases in 1919 was 4, recent years showing a decrease. In Brighton there were no cases in 1919.

Cases are not now initiated in the superior court of Suffolk County. The court reported an increasing number of appealed cases, though the increase was not very marked.

Table 84 compares the number of cases initiated in Boston under the act in the calendar year 1914 and in the fiscal year ended September 30, 1919.

^a The number of cases during the fiscal year ending Sept. 30, 1919, was 107.

TABLE 84.—*Cases initiated in each court in Boston, 1914 and 1919, under the act relative to the support of children of illegitimate birth.*

Court.	Cases initiated in calendar year 1914. ^a	Cases initiated in fiscal year ended Sept. 30, 1919.
Total.....	256	^b 189
Boston central municipal.....	66	107
Brighton.....	7	.....
Charlestown.....	11	13
Dorchester.....	61	13
East Boston.....	15	16
Roxbury.....	48	30
South Boston.....	24	6
West Roxbury.....	10	4
Superior court and grand jury (Boston residence).....	14	.....

^a See Table 73, p. 234.^b The figures for 1919 included cases in which no warrant was issued; figures for 1914 excluded such cases. In 1919 in the central municipal court there were 13 cases in which no warrant was issued; the figures are not available for the other courts.

Although the number of cases in the central municipal court showed an increase of 62 per cent in 1919 over the number in 1914, the numbers of cases in all but two of the other courts showed a decrease. The decrease was most marked in the court serving the area containing a large maternity hospital and children's institution. It may be that the courts are more careful than formerly about accepting cases on the basis of the mother's residence in a district to which she has come simply for the purpose of securing maternity care. In 1914 only one-fourth of the cases were initiated in the central municipal court of the city; in 1919 the proportion was about five-ninths. The latter ratio is more in accord with the total volume of work done in the central court as compared with the other courts.

The total number of cases initiated under the act in Boston in 1919 was 189, a reduction of 67, or 26 per cent, over the number in 1914. The actual decrease was greater than here indicated, since cases in which no warrant was issued were excluded from the 1914 figures and included in the figures for 1919. In 1914 there were 30.2 court cases initiated for every 100 births out of wedlock. Based on births registered as illegitimate, the ratio was 34. Statistics for illegitimate births are not available for a period later than 1915. However, the average number of births registered as illegitimate for the six years 1910 to 1915 was 779, with no regular tendency to increase or decrease. On the basis of this average the number of court cases initiated in 1919 was only 24.3 per 100 illegitimate births. If illegitimate births registered as legitimate had been included in the number of births, and if cases in which no warrant was issued had been excluded from the number of cases, the proportion would have been still smaller. The lesser number of cases in 1919 as com-

pared with 1914 may be partly accounted for by the fact that many of the alleged fathers were probably in the military or naval service and that in consequence there was difficulty in bringing them before the courts.

Methods of Handling Cases.

Reference has already been made to the change in policy in the central municipal court, whereby all cases initiated under the act are referred to the probation department. In 1914 some of the cases were never dealt with by that department. This change is a great advance over the old policy. As pointed out in the analysis of the Massachusetts law,²⁹ the probation office of the central municipal court performs a high type of social service work in connection with the receiving and investigating of complaints and the treatment of the whole situation. Complete investigations are made, and physical and medical examinations are given the mothers by women physicians attached to the court in all cases where such examinations are deemed advisable. Arrangements for confinement are made when necessary. A woman probation officer is in charge of cases under the act, and the mother thus has the advantage of a woman's counsel and assistance. The money collected from the fathers by the men probation officers is turned over to the women probation officers, who supervise the expenditure of the money in the interest of the children. The child is supervised, and the mother is brought in for nonsupport if she fails to do her part.

In the superior court, also, all cases under the act are now handled by the probation department. The probation officers of the lower courts report appealed cases and transmit the results of their investigations to the probation department of the superior court.

No information was available in regard to changes in methods of handling cases in the other courts in Boston, but it is probable that the situation in that respect is about the same as in 1914.

Dispositions of Cases.

As a part of the analysis of illegitimacy cases handled by the probation department of the central municipal court over a six-year period, data in regard to dispositions of cases were secured. These data are given in Table 85, rearranged in accordance with the plan followed in the study made by the Children's Bureau.³⁰ There are several factors which make this analysis not entirely comparable with that made by the bureau for cases initiated in 1914. Table 85 shows the status of the case in October, 1919. Hence, cases initiated in the early years of the period had much more time to be finally dis-

²⁹ Sec p. 231.

³⁰ See Table 75, p. 240.

posed of than cases initiated in 1918 or 1919; the latter group of cases therefore includes more pending cases than the earlier group. In the bureau study cases initiated in 1914 were followed to the end of 1915—hence there was not room for as much variation in the period between the initiation of the case and the end of the time covered by the analysis. Moreover, the bureau study followed appealed cases through the superior court, so that the disposition “appealed” did not appear in the analysis, whereas the data given in Table 85 represent only the dispositions in the central municipal court. The figures here given include cases in which no warrant was issued, while such cases were excluded from the 1914–15 analysis.

TABLE 85.—Disposition of cases initiated in the central municipal court, 1913 to 1919, under the act relative to the support of children of illegitimate birth.

Disposition of case by court.	Cases initiated in the central municipal court under the act. ^a							
	Total	Year of initiation.						
		1913 ^b	1914	1915	1916	1917	1918	1919 ^c
Total.....	511	16	50	87	82	90	100	86
Dismissed, not guilty.....	22	.....	1	3	4	5	4	5
Closed after arrangement for support or confinement expenses was ordered or sanctioned by court.....	216	7	21	45	35	40	43	25
Placed on probation, with order for periodic payments.....	d123	3	9	14	19	28	29	21
Sentenced ^e	5	.....	.....	3	1	.....	.....	1
Dismissed, certificate of adequate provision.....	16	1	3	2	4	3	2	1
Dismissed or on file, parents married.....	72	3	9	26	11	9	12	2
Otherwise closed.....	131	3	18	18	26	18	25	17
Appeal from adjudication of paternity.....	67	5	10	9	12	10	15	6
Dismissed or referred to district attorney or other courts, no jurisdiction.....	37	.....	4	5	8	2	10	8
Otherwise dismissed.....	f27	4	4	4	6	6	.....	3
Pending.....	142	.....	10	21	17	27	28	39
Warrant out.....	79	.....	5	10	14	21	12	17
No warrant issued.....	49	.....	5	8	2	6	15	13
Defendant defaulted.....	1	.....	.....	.....	1	.....	.....	.....
No adjudication.....	9	.....	.....	2	.....	.....	.....	7
Adjudicated father, case continued.....	4	.....	.....	1	.....	.....	1	2

^a Includes only cases handled by the probation department. In the early years of the period all the cases did not come to this department.

^b Six months of 1913—July 1 (when the law went into effect) to Dec. 31.

^c Nine and a half months of 1919—Jan. 1 to Oct. 16.

^d Of these 123 cases, the defendant was still on probation Oct. 16, 1919, in 48 cases; in 54, the defendant had defaulted; in 19, the case had been dismissed; and in 2, the defendant had been surrendered and sentenced.

^e Presumably with order for the assignment of wages for the support of the child.

^f Includes 9 cases closed after agreement to pay (not in court), of which 1 was initiated in 1914, 3 were initiated in 1915, 3 in 1917, and 2 in 1919; 3 cases in which the child was adopted, 1 initiated in 1914, 1 in 1916, and 1 in 1917; 9 cases dismissed for want of prosecution (4 were initiated in 1913, 1 in 1915, 3 in 1916, and 1 in 1919); 3 cases dismissed after the death of the child (1 initiated in 1914 and 2 in 1916); and 3 on file (1 initiated in 1914 and 2 in 1917).

Of the 511 cases handled by the probation department of the central municipal court, the defendant had been dismissed, not guilty, in 4 per cent; in 42 per cent the case had been closed after

arrangement for support or confinement expenses had been ordered or sanctioned by the court; and in 3 per cent of the cases money was secured on agreements out of court or the child was adopted. In 13 per cent of the cases the defendant appealed from the adjudication of paternity; in 10 per cent the case was closed for want of jurisdiction or was otherwise dismissed (exclusive of cases in which money was secured informally or the child was adopted), and in 28 per cent the case was pending at the end of the period.

In 123—57 per cent—of the 216 cases closed after arrangement for support or confinement expenses was ordered or sanctioned by the court, the defendant was placed on probation with an order for periodic payments. In these 123 cases 48 defendants were still on probation October 16, 1919, 54 defendants had defaulted, 2 had been surrendered and sentenced, and 19 cases had been dismissed. It must be borne in mind that some of these cases had been initiated within a year of the close of the period, while others had been initiated more than six years before.

Taking the figures year by year and excluding 1913 because of the small number of cases and 1919 because of the short time which had elapsed from the initiation of the cases, there is little variation in the percentages of cases closed after arrangement for support or confinement expenses was ordered or sanctioned by the court. In 1914 the percentage so terminated was 42; in 1915, 52; in 1916, 43; in 1917, 44; in 1918, 43.

The proportion of cases in which the defendant was placed on probation, among those closed after arrangement for support or confinement expenses had been ordered or sanctioned by the court, was much higher in the last years of the period than in the first years. In 1914 three-sevenths of the cases closed after an arrangement for support resulted in the defendants being placed on probation; in 1915 the proportion was somewhat less than a third; in 1916 more than half the cases resulted in probation; in 1917, seven-tenths; in 1918, two-thirds; and in 1919, almost six-sevenths. Hence, in 1919 the proportion of cases in which the defendant was placed on probation among those cases closed after an arrangement for support or confinement expenses had been ordered or sanctioned by the court was twice the proportion in 1914.

In the year 1915, in which the smallest proportion of cases resulted in probation, there was an unusually large proportion of marriages, the cases closed after the marriage of the parents representing almost three-fifths of all those closed after an arrangement for support or confinement expenses which was ordered or sanctioned by the court. The proportion—three-sevenths—of marriages in 1914 was lower than in 1915, but it was higher than in the years following

1915. In 1916, 1917, and 1918 the proportion of cases terminated after the marriage of the parents was less than one-third; in 1919 the proportion was one-twelfth. Hence, there seems to be a marked decline in the proportion of cases terminated by the marriage of the parents.

Only 7 per cent of the cases closed after an arrangement for support or confinement expenses ordered or sanctioned by the court were dismissed after certificates of adequate provision had been granted. These 16 cases represented 3 per cent of the total 511 cases brought before the court. There seems to have been little change in policy from year to year, the number of cases so terminated ranging from 1 to 4 each year.

In the 216 cases closed after arrangement for support or confinement expenses was ordered or sanctioned by the court, the defendant was adjudged father or acknowledged his paternity. In the 67 appealed cases the paternity was adjudicated by the lower court, as well as in the 4 cases continued after adjudication of paternity and included among those pending. Hence, in a total of 287 cases—56 per cent of the total 511—the defendant was adjudged the father by the central municipal court or acknowledged his paternity and made provision for the child which was sanctioned by the court. Analyzing the cases year by year, and excluding 1913 because of the small number of cases and 1919 because of the short time which had elapsed after initiation, the percentages of cases in which the defendant was adjudged father or acknowledged paternity by making provision sanctioned by the court were as follows: 1914, 62 per cent; 1915, 63 per cent; 1916, 57 per cent; 1917, 56 per cent; 1918, 59 per cent. It must be borne in mind that these figures include appealed cases, some of which were lost in the superior court.

Certificates of Adequate Provision and Other Lump-Sum Payments.

As previously stated, a very small number of cases in the central municipal court were closed after adequate provision had been certified, or after agreements to pay, out of court. In the six years from July 1, 1913, to October 16, 1919, there were only 16 cases of adequate provision and 9 cases of agreements to pay, out of court. The yearly distribution of these cases showed no marked change in policy from year to year.

The replies from the other courts in Boston to the questions relating to lump-sum settlements and certificates of adequate provision showed that these methods of disposing of cases are used comparatively infrequently. The Brighton court reported that lump-sum settlements are never accepted, and that the court is not disposed to

accept certificates of adequate provision. The South Boston court reported that certificates of adequate provision are never granted. The Charlestown, East Boston, and Dorchester courts reported no change in policy in regard to certificates of adequate provision, the Dorchester court reporting that certificates are sometimes used, but not commonly. In regard to lump settlements, the Charlestown court reported that in only one case—in which the child died—had the court accepted a lump-sum settlement; the Dorchester court reported no change, and the East Boston court stated that “a lump settlement is only accepted when the court is satisfied beyond doubt that the welfare of the child is provided for and it will not become a burden upon the public.” The Roxbury court reported no marked change in the method of disposing of cases; in the past five years the certificate has been accepted in only nine cases—in these cases the children were taken by an institution, the father paying a lump sum. The West Roxbury court reported both the certificate of adequate provision and the lump settlement seldom used.

In regard to the superior court, the secretary of the commission on probation states: “The acceptance of the lump settlement is declining, and the certificate of adequate provision is accepted with increasing care.”

An analysis of the 16 cases in the central municipal court, in which adequate provision was certified, showed that in 5 instances the child was taken by a maternity hospital and children’s institution; in 3 the child was adopted, in 1 case by the mother’s husband; in 1 case the child was a ward of the city; in 1 the mother and baby were sent to Scotland; in 4 the child remained with the mother; in 1 case the certificate was granted before the child was born; and in 1 the disposition of the child was not stated.

The amounts in these 16 cases ranged from \$164 to \$1,000, the sums paid not being reported in 3 cases. In the 5 cases in which the child was taken by a maternity hospital and children’s institution the amounts paid were \$200, \$164, not reported, \$265, not reported. The amounts paid in the cases in which the child was adopted were \$345, \$526, \$400. The highest payment, \$1,000, was in the case of a child who was a ward of the city; the next highest, \$875, was paid for the benefit of the mother and baby who were sent to Scotland. The four payments made in cases where the child remained with the mother were for \$200, \$400, \$300, and \$550; in the last 3 cases the mother later applied to the court for further action. Within two months after adequate provision was certified in the case of the mother whose child was unborn, the mother applied to a maternity home for care; the defendant had promised to pay \$450, but the mother had only \$150 when she applied for care.

Summary of the Present Situation.

From the preceding analysis it would appear that the number of cases brought in the Boston courts under the act relative to the support of children born out of wedlock was considerably smaller in 1919 than in 1914, though there was a redistribution of cases among the courts which resulted in the central municipal court handling a much larger percentage in the later years than in the earlier. There has been improvement in the methods of handling cases in the central municipal court and in the superior court; information was not available for the other courts, though it is probable that in these courts there has been little change in administration. An analysis of dispositions of cases in the central municipal court, made by a probation officer of the court, showed little variation from year to year, except that the proportion of cases placed on probation among all cases closed after an arrangement for support or confinement expenses had been ordered or sanctioned by the court was much higher in the last years of the six-year period, 1913–1919, than in the earlier years of the period, and the proportion of marriages was considerably lower.

In transmitting the replies to the questions sent the Boston courts the secretary of the probation commission said that the statements “indicate that no radical change has come about in recent years, and give warrant for the opinion that the observations made in regard to the operation of the illegitimate children act at the time of the survey [1914–1915] to all intents and purposes are descriptive of the situation as it now exists.”

Probation officers and others in Boston familiar with the operation of the act believe that it should be changed in one particular—the provision permitting the granting of certificates of adequate provision should be eliminated. This feature of the law, which was intended to provide for the exceptional case in which the defendant could pay several thousand dollars for the care and maintenance of the child, has not always been fully understood by those administering the act. In a discussion of the act before the Massachusetts Conference of Social Work, December 13, 1919, Mr. Herbert C. Parsons, secretary of the Massachusetts Commission on Probation, stated: “It is true that settlements are arranged for too low amounts. Probation officers feel that the provision for certificates of adequate provision should be eliminated from the law. They feel that it is a continuing limitation against the interests of the mother, the child, and society.”

It is also felt by some of those engaged in the administration of the act that the probation period should be extended, so that the order

might be renewed from time to time and adjusted as varied circumstances might require. At present there is some uncertainty in regard to whether the probation period can be extended beyond two years. An amendment providing for a judgment of paternity under section 7 of the act (the nonsupport section) as well as under section 1 is also desired by some.

In general, the feeling among those engaged in the administration of the act is that the fullest possibilities of the law have not yet been developed in actual practice, and that no radical changes should be made until the law had been in operation for a longer period.

SECTION II. THE PROBLEM IN THE STATE.

SECTION II. THE PROBLEM IN THE STATE.

INTRODUCTION.

The large city not only creates abnormal conditions of living but also draws to itself many of the unfortunates of small towns and of country districts. Within the larger area of a State the intensified problems of the city become merged with those of small urban and rural communities. In order to secure data of more general application, a part of this study of illegitimacy as a child-welfare problem was made State wide in scope. In fact, it was impossible to make a representative study of the situation in Boston without an analysis of State activities.

The survey of the problem in the State by no means covered all the phases of the subject. Data were obtained in regard to illegitimate births in the State, and a comprehensive study was made of children born out of wedlock who were wards of the State board of charity or of the State institutions for the delinquent and for the feeble-minded. Records of infants under 2 years of age boarded in family homes were consulted, as were the adoption records of four counties. A brief study was made of conditions in a seacoast rural section. Studies of infant mortality previously made by the Children's Bureau in two Massachusetts cities included some data in regard to infants of illegitimate birth which were of value for comparative purposes.

The Massachusetts State Board of Charity has both supervisory and administrative functions. The duties of supervision comprise visitation and inspection of the State hospitals and sanatoria, the State training schools for delinquent girls and boys, the county training schools for juvenile delinquents, wayfarers' lodges and public lodging houses, and the city and town almshouses. The board also has general supervision over children on parole from the State training schools, children supported by cities and towns, and adults supported by cities and towns in families other than their own. Such charitable corporations as ask for or consent to visitation and inspection also come under the supervisory activities of the board, and all applications for the incorporation of charitable organizations are investigated by the board. The work of cities and towns in the relief of mothers with dependent children is under the supervision of the board. Results of visitation and inspection are published, and

the board makes recommendations to the legislature for changes in existing laws and for new legislation.

The administrative duties of the board may be classified under two heads—those concerned with the State adult poor and those dealing with the State minor wards. The work with reference to the State adult poor includes the discharge of sane inmates of the State infirmary and the State farm; the investigation of the settlement of persons supported or given aid by cities and towns, and of sane inmates of State institutions; the directing of local aid of persons without settlement; the transfer of paupers from one institution to another or from one place to another; and the management of the hospital for lepers. The work with reference to State minor wards includes the maintenance and care of children coming under the custody of the board, and the execution of the laws concerning abandoned infants, the protection of infants, infant boarding houses, and the licensing of lying-in hospitals.¹

The board has developed a comprehensive and highly organized service for the care of dependent and neglected children, administered by the division of State minor wards. The board cares for children of all ages, retaining supervision until they reach the age of 21 years, unless previously discharged. Four classes of children are received by the board—dependent, neglected, wayward, and delinquent. Dependent children are not committed through court action but are received by the board from the overseers of the poor of the different towns, from the State infirmary at Tewksbury, or on direct application from parents, relatives, or friends. In certain cases the board itself may take the initiative in removing children from unsuitable boarding homes or homes in which they have been placed for adoption. Neglected, wayward, and delinquent children are committed to the board by the courts. The board must be notified of all neglect proceedings, and agents of the board are present at the hearings and have a right to protest against commitment to the board. A court may request the attendance of one of the board's agents at proceedings involving juvenile delinquency or waywardness if the interests of the child require such protection. Wayward and delinquent children received by the board are those whom the courts consider too young to be committed to an institution for delinquents, or whose behavior does not warrant such treatment, but

¹ The functions of the State board of charity have been transferred, by legislative act of 1919, to the newly created department of public welfare. The division of aid and relief is the successor to the division of State adult poor. The board of trustees of the State infirmary (formerly the State infirmary and State farm) is made a part of this division. The functions of the division of State minor wards are taken over by the division of child guardianship, and the board of trustees of the Massachusetts Hospital School is made a part of this new division. The trustees of the Massachusetts Training Schools, together with the institutions and departments under their control, form the division of juvenile training of the new department.

whose home conditions are such that removal of the child is deemed necessary. If, after commitment to the board, these children become incorrigible, they may be transferred to correctional institutions without further action by the court. Besides neglected, wayward, and delinquent children committed to the board, children are sometimes committed to the temporary care of the board pending final disposition of their cases. The treatment of these classes of children is not differentiated. All are placed in family homes, unless exceptional circumstances make other disposition necessary.

A part of the work of the State board of charity is the granting of licenses to maintain boarding homes for infants. The law provides that anyone having under his control for gain or reward at one time two or more infants under the age of 2 years, unattended by a parent or guardian, and not related by blood or marriage, is deemed to maintain a boarding house for infants. Such homes are inspected at least once a year by the State board of charity and local boards of health. Whoever receives under his care or control, and whoever places under the care or control of another for compensation, an infant under 2 years of age, not related by blood or marriage to the person receiving it, is required to give notice within two days to the State board. This notice includes statements of the name, age, and residence of the infant, his parents, and the persons from whom or by whom he was received, together with the terms of placement. Upon the receipt of such notice the board may investigate the case and make such recommendations as it deems expedient. If these are not complied with, the board may apply to a court to make and enforce orders for the care, custody, maintenance, and protection of the infant. Infants reported as cared for apart from their relatives are visited by the nurses who visit infants under care of the board. The board must be notified of the reception for board, or for the purpose of procuring adoption, of an infant of illegitimate birth under 3 years of age. Such children may be taken into the custody of the board if, by reason of neglect, abuse, or other cause, such action is considered necessary to preserve their lives.

The part of the work of the division of State adult poor most concerned with the problem of illegitimacy is the after-care of the women and children discharged by the board from the State infirmary. The majority receiving this care are unmarried women with children. These mothers are helped in finding employment, are given legal assistance in securing support from the father of the child, and are otherwise aided. In certain cases in which the consent of the mother is obtained, the superintendent of State adult poor acts as trustee for the funds collected from the father for the support of the child.

There are three State training schools for juvenile delinquents—the Lyman School for Boys, the industrial school for boys, and the industrial school for girls. These schools are administered by a single board of trustees and are under the general supervision of the State board of charity.² The Massachusetts Reformatory for Women receives girls and women 15 years of age and over. Infants under 18 months of age may be provided for with their mothers in this institution.

The two institutions for the feeble-minded—the Massachusetts State School for the Feeble-Minded at Waverley and the Wrentham State School—are under the control of the Massachusetts Commission on Mental Diseases, established in 1916 as the successor to the State board of insanity.³ An appropriation for a third institution was made in 1914, but the institution has not yet been completed. The State school for the feeble-minded has as an adjunct a farm colony at Templeton. The facilities of the institutions are not at all commensurate with the number of feeble-minded in the State needing care. According to statistics compiled in 1915, there were in April of that year 520 feeble-minded persons in the Massachusetts State hospitals for the insane. This number constituted 3.6 per cent of the total number of patients in these hospitals and equaled 18.9 per cent of the population of the two State institutions for the feeble-minded.⁴ Mentally defective patients in hospitals for the insane do not receive proper care and training, and they handicap the work which these institutions are intended to do. A few feeble-minded children are cared for at the Hospital Cottages for Children, Baldwinville. The State infirmary at Tewksbury maintains a department for mental cases, and a number of mentally defective persons are cared for by this institution until they can be admitted to the schools for the feeble-minded. In 1914 the State board of charity reported 520 persons stated to be mentally defective being cared for in 161 city and town almshouses.⁵ A larger number of feeble-minded who are in need of care must remain in the community without the supervision which their condition so urgently requires.

² By the reorganization of 1919 the board of trustees of the Massachusetts Training Schools becomes the division of juvenile training of the department of public welfare.

³ By the reorganization of 1919, this commission forms the new department of mental diseases.

⁴ League for Preventive Work: *Feeble-Minded Adrift*. "III. Feeble-minded in State hospitals for the insane." Boston, 1916.

⁵ Thirty-sixth Annual Report of the State Board of Charity of Massachusetts for the Year Ending November 30, 1914. Boston, 1915. Pt. III, p. viii.

CHAPTER I. ILLEGITIMATE BIRTHS IN MASSACHUSETTS.

INCIDENCE IN THE STATE.

Under the Massachusetts law copies of all birth and death certificates are filed in the office of the secretary of the Commonwealth. These records were searched for the year 1914, and a count made of the illegitimate births that had occurred in each town of the State. The results were then classified by county, and also according to size of the community, and compared with the total births in the same areas. By this means it was possible to secure some idea of the distribution of the problem in the State.

During the year studied there were 93,394 live births in the State. Of these, 2,108 were registered as illegitimate. The percentage of illegitimate births was, therefore, 2.3. This proportion is known to be an understatement; it was shown in the Boston study that a number of illegitimate births are registered as legitimate.¹ It was impracticable to correct the State rate by checking with records of social agencies. The percentage of births registered as illegitimate—uncorrected by checking with records of social agencies—was lower for the State as a whole than for the city of Boston, 2.3 as compared with 3.9.² This is largely accounted for by the fact that a considerable number of nonresident mothers come to the metropolis to secure maternity care.

The estimated number of single, widowed, and divorced women of child-bearing age—15 to 44 years, inclusive—in the State in 1914 was 468,069.³ The illegitimacy rate per 1,000 of this population was 4.5 in the year studied. This means that during the year there were between four and five cases of illegitimate maternity to every 1,000 single, widowed, and divorced women of child-bearing age in the State. Here, again, the rate is an understatement.

GEOGRAPHICAL DISTRIBUTION.

The total number of births in each county in the year studied and the number of illegitimate births are given in Table 1. The counties are listed according to geographical location, from west to east.⁴

¹ See pp. 85-88.

² Uncorrected rate for Boston. See p. 85.

³ The population of Massachusetts on July 1, 1914, as estimated by the U. S. Bureau of the Census, was 3,605,522. In 1910, the female population between the ages of 15 and 44, inclusive, comprised 12.982 per cent of the total population; assuming that this proportion would hold for 1914, the number of single, widowed, and divorced women of child-bearing age was estimated to be 468,069. (See Thirteenth Census of the United States, 1910: Vol. II, Population, p. 867.)

⁴ See description of counties, p. 22, and map, p. 23.

TABLE 1.—*Per cent of illegitimate births in each county in Massachusetts, 1914.*

County.	Estimated population 1914. ^a	Total live births. ^b	Live births registered as illegitimate.	
			Number.	Per cent.
Total.....	63,643,863	93,399	2,108	2.3
Berkshire.....	113,248	2,953	27	0.9
Franklin.....	47,553	1,151	8	.7
Hampshire.....	68,607	1,666	30	1.8
Hampden.....	258,163	7,674	148	1.9
Worcester.....	425,995	11,134	203	1.8
Essex.....	459,515	11,068	196	1.8
Middlesex.....	724,074	16,950	253	1.5
Suffolk.....	814,713	21,794	791	3.6
Norfolk.....	197,469	3,921	43	1.1
Plymouth.....	155,343	3,302	55	1.7
Bristol.....	342,639	10,973	227	2.1
Barnstable, Dukes, and Nantucket.....	36,605	654	13	2.0
State infirmary, Tewksbury (Middlesex County).....		159	114	.....

^a Estimated as for July 1, 1914, on the basis of the population on Apr. 15, 1910, as given by the U. S. Bureau of the Census, and the population on Apr. 1, 1915, as given by the Massachusetts State census. The estimated population for the State is that given in the Seventy-third Annual Report of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts on Births, Marriages and Deaths for the Year 1914, p. 8. This estimate is somewhat higher than the estimate of the U. S. Bureau of the Census for the same date, 3,605,522. This is chiefly due to the use of the results of the Massachusetts State census of 1915; the estimates made by the U. S. Census are based on the populations of 1900 and 1910. The slight discrepancy of 61 between the total figure and the sum of the figures for the various counties is due to the fact that the estimates for the counties are the sums of independent estimates for the towns.

^b Seventy-third Annual Report of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts on Births, Marriages and Deaths for the Year 1914, pp. 58-73.

The lowest percentages of illegitimate births were in the western, sparsely populated, and somewhat mountainous counties of Berkshire and Franklin. Whether these low percentages—0.9 and 0.7—may be attributed to incomplete registration of illegitimate births or to other circumstances can not be determined from the information available. It is interesting to compare with this section the only other distinctly rural counties of the State—Barnstable, Dukes, and Nantucket. The percentage for these three counties combined was 2.0, and was exceeded by only two counties—Suffolk and Bristol. The percentages for Hampshire and Worcester Counties were both 1.8, while Hampden had a percentage of 1.9.

The highest percentage for any county was 3.6, that being the rate in Suffolk County, which includes the city of Boston. Middlesex County, exclusive of the State infirmary, had a percentage of 1.5; Essex County, adjoining Middlesex on the east, had a percentage of 1.8; Norfolk and Plymouth Counties, adjoining Middlesex and Suffolk Counties on the south, had percentages of 1.1 and 1.7, respectively. Bristol County had a relatively high percentage—2.1. The births at the State infirmary were not included in the total for Middlesex County, since this institution gives care to persons from all parts of the State. The average percentage for the State as a whole, exclusive of Suffolk County and of the State infirmary, was 1.7. This is less than half the percentage for the county which includes

the city of Boston. It must be remembered, however, that the percentages in the other sections of the State would have been higher had not some of their residents gone to Boston or to the State infirmary to secure maternity care.

DISTRIBUTION ACCORDING TO SIZE OF COMMUNITY.

In addition to the geographical distribution the comparative prevalence of illegitimate births in communities of various sizes is significant. (See Table 2.) In the State there were, in 1914, 14 cities of 25,000 to 50,000 inhabitants, 5 of 50,000 to 100,000, 6 of 100,000 to 500,000, and 1 of more than 500,000 population. The figures may be considered fairly comparable except in the case of the largest city, which is a center for the State and surrounding territory.

TABLE 2.—*Per cent of illegitimate births in Massachusetts, 1914, by size of community.*

Size of community.	Number of communities.	Estimated total population 1914. ^a	Total live births. ^b	Live births registered as illegitimate.	
				Number.	Per cent.
Total.....	353	3,643,863	93,399	2,108	2.3
Less than 5,000.....	240	393,911	7,305	106	1.5
5,000 but less than 10,000.....	54	373,007	8,186	152	1.9
10,000 but less than 25,000.....	33	509,343	12,386	197	1.6
25,000 but less than 50,000.....	14	531,032	14,129	255	1.8
50,000 but less than 100,000.....	5	391,641	10,178	160	1.6
100,000 but less than 500,000.....	6	708,529	21,589	372	1.7
Over 500,000.....	1	736,461	19,467	752	3.9
State infirmary.....			159	114	.....

^a See note a, Table 1, p. 271.

^b Commonwealth of Massachusetts: Seventy-third Annual Report on Births, Marriages, and Deaths for the Year 1914. Boston, 1915. Pp. 58-73. The number of births in Boston, the only city having more than 500,000 inhabitants, was given in the Report of the Health Department of the City of Boston for 1914 as 19,462, and that figure was used in Sec. I of this report.

The lowest percentage of illegitimate births was found in communities of less than 5,000 inhabitants, and the highest in the city of over 500,000. Within these limits there seems to be no evidence of correlation between size of community and percentage of illegitimate births, the percentages for communities of various sizes being very similar. It is clear that rural areas and small towns have an illegitimacy problem very nearly if not quite as serious as that existing in all but the largest cities.

CHAPTER 2. CHILDREN OF ILLEGITIMATE BIRTH UNDER THE SUPERVISION OF THE STATE BOARD OF CHARITY.

CHILDREN UNDER CARE OF THE DIVISION OF STATE MINOR WARDS.

Description of the Work of the Division.

The administrative work of the division of State minor wards may be classified into three main groups—investigation, care of children under 3 years of age, and care of older children. The investigating department has been in existence since 1907, and has developed a system of intensive investigations of applications for the reception of dependent children and for the return of children to their relatives. The activities of this department include constructive social work, which has resulted in a steady decrease in the proportion of cases received to the number of applications.

The infants' department cares for children under 3 years of age, boarding them in family homes and supervising their care through frequent visits by nurses employed by the board. Older children are usually placed in family homes and regularly supervised by the board's visitors. As a rule, board is paid for children under 14 years of age and in some cases for children above this age. Whenever possible, parents are required to contribute toward the support of their children. Children are sometimes placed with relatives or with other persons desiring to give them free homes. Wards above the age of 14 years are usually expected to render services equivalent to the cost of their room and board, the State consequently being relieved of this expense. If it is found that a child is unable to do this and also his school work, the payment of board by the State is continued.

A quarterly allowance is made by the State for the clothing of each child, and medical and dental treatment is furnished. The board itself buys the clothing for the children under 2 years of age. Clothing allowances for older children are paid directly to the families with whom they are placed.

The policy of the board in regard to adoption of the children under its care is very conservative. Adoption is desired only for children whose heredity is good and who have no relatives who might later be able to provide a home for them. Great care is taken that the persons

desiring to adopt a child are able to provide a good home. In order to insure the suitability of the home and the happiness of the child, no adoption is permitted until the child has been cared for by the family for a year free of charge. In 1914 only 53 children were adopted—less than 1 per cent of the children under the care of the board.¹

The board does not advocate the general policy of removing a child from school and having him begin work at the age of 14. If a child shows desire and capacity for further education, arrangements are made whereby this may be given. Wards above the age of 14 who have not shown particular promise in school are helped to find a trade and are often given industrial training. At the close of the year of the study 56 per cent of the girls and 40 per cent of the boys over 14 years of age were continuing their education. The State was paying board for more than half the children of this age attending school. Of all the 1,540 children under care who were 14 years of age and over, 151 were attending high school, normal school, or college.²

The division of State minor wards maintains no institution for the children under its care. Several boarding homes in Boston and vicinity serve as temporary homes for children coming under the care of the board and for those undergoing special medical treatment. Sick children are sent to the State infirmary at Tewksbury. The board has repeatedly recommended the establishment of a hospital for the care and treatment of sick wards of the State.

The board is constantly confronted with the problem of caring for feeble-minded children. Because of the crowded conditions in the institutions for the feeble-minded, State wards who have been diagnosed mentally defective are compelled to wait long periods for admission. Most of these children are cared for in special boarding homes in which none but feeble-minded children are boarded and in which the compensation paid is greater than for normal children. No more than six feeble-minded children are cared for in any one home. The worst cases are sent to the State infirmary until they can be admitted to the proper institution. State wards who are crippled, epileptic, or suffering from other nervous diseases, and who need institutional care, are provided for at the Massachusetts Hospital School or at the Hospital Cottages for Children—the State institutions designed for the care of these classes of children.

¹ Thirty-sixth Annual Report of the State Board of Charity of Massachusetts for the Year Ending November 30, 1914. Boston, 1915. Pt. I, pp. 119, 127.

² Derived from the Thirty-sixth Annual Report of the State Board of Charity of Massachusetts for the Year Ending November 30, 1914. Boston, 1915. Pt. I, p. 122.

Method of Securing Data.

In order to secure information in regard to children born out of wedlock under care during the year of the study, all records of children under care during 1914 were searched. Detailed analyses were made of records concerning children born out of wedlock, and a certain amount of comparable material was obtained for children of legitimate birth. With the exception of type of care given and number of families represented, the limitations of the study made it impossible to secure this comparable material for all children born in wedlock, and an arbitrary selection for this purpose was made of children whose case records were numbered from 1 to 2000. The histories of these children of legitimate birth were then compared with the histories of children born out of wedlock whose case records were filed in the same numerical group.

Besides the two main groups of children under care—those of legitimate and those of illegitimate birth—there were two groups of children, foundlings and pseudo-foundlings, whose birth status was not known, though the probabilities were that they had been born out of wedlock. For the purpose of this study, the term “foundling” was defined to mean a deserted child concerning whose parentage nothing was known, abandoned without any provision for care having been made. The term “pseudo-foundling” included children of unknown parentage abandoned at board or elsewhere after some provision for care had been made.³ All available information concerning these children was obtained from the records.

The State board of charity in its annual report publishes figures concerning the total number of children under care. The total figures obtained in the course of this study are somewhat larger than those given in the annual report of the board for 1914, for the reason that the figures here given included children being investigated but not yet received by the board, while the total figures given in the annual report included only children whose care had been definitely assumed. Also, the difference in the year covered—one, the fiscal year of the board from December 1 to November 30, and the other the calendar year—is a partial explanation of the difference.

Proportion of Work of the Division Concerned with Children of Various Types.

The total number of children under care of the division of State minor wards during the year was 7,526. Of these children, 6,413 were receiving prolonged care—that is, they had been received into the custody of the board—and 1,113 were receiving temporary care only. The total number of children of legitimate birth under care

³ See p. 150.

during the year was 5,590; children born out of wedlock numbered 1,721; foundlings, 144; pseudo-foundlings, 71. On the basis of numerical distribution, 74 per cent of the work of the division was concerned with children of legitimate birth; 23 per cent with those born out of wedlock; and 3 per cent with foundlings and pseudo-foundlings. The distribution according to kind of care and status of child is given in Table 3.

TABLE 3.—*Kind of care received by all children under care, according to status of child.*

Status of child.	Children under care of division of State minor wards, 1914.				
	Total.	Receiving prolonged care. ^a	Receiving temporary care.		
			Total.	Investigation only.	Temporary commitment.
Total.....	7,526	6,413	1,113	1,069	44
Born in wedlock.....	5,590	4,805	785	743	42
Born out of wedlock.....	1,721	1,393	328	326	2
Foundling.....	144	144			
Pseudo-foundling.....	71	71			

^a Includes 6 children—5 born in wedlock and 1 born out of wedlock—committed to the board temporarily but cared for over long periods of time.

Of the 6,413 children receiving prolonged care, 75 per cent were born in wedlock, 22 per cent were born out of wedlock, and 3 per cent were foundlings or pseudo-foundlings. Children of legitimate birth constituted 71 per cent of those receiving temporary care, while children born out of wedlock constituted 29 per cent. That the percentage of children receiving temporary care who were of illegitimate birth is somewhat larger than in the case of those receiving prolonged care is probably accounted for by the fact that a larger proportion of children of legitimate birth than of illegitimate are committed by courts on neglect complaints, and that these cases are not investigated by the division prior to reception.

The annual report of the State board of charity⁴ gives the numbers of children of various classes in custody of the board during the year December 1, 1913, to November 30, 1914. Of the total in custody, 36 per cent had been received as dependents, 55 per cent had been committed as neglected children, and 9 per cent had been committed as delinquent or wayward. Of the 1,393 children born out of wedlock receiving prolonged care during the calendar year 1914, 820—59 per cent—were dependent, 551—39 per cent—neglected, and 22—2 per cent—delinquent or wayward. Of the 215 foundlings and pseudo-foundlings, 189—88 per cent—were dependent, 24—11 per cent—neglected, and 2—1 per cent—delinquent.

⁴ Thirty-sixth Annual Report of the State Board of Charity of Massachusetts, for the Year Ending November 30, 1914, Pt. I, p. 128.

Considerably less than two-fifths of all the children had been received as dependents, while nearly three-fifths of the children born out of wedlock had been so received; more than half of all the children in custody had been committed as neglected children, while only two-fifths of the children of illegitimate birth had been so committed; the proportion of children committed as wayward or delinquent was considerably larger among all children than among children born out of wedlock.

For the majority of children born in wedlock care by the State was required because of parental neglect or bad home conditions. For the majority of children born out of wedlock the absence of a home and the inability of the mother to support the child made public provision necessary.

The records of children under care of the division of State minor wards are filed by families and not by individual children, records for all children of the same family being given the same file number. The 7,526 children under care during the year studied belonged to 4,792 families. In some of these families there were children of legitimate and of illegitimate birth. Table 4 gives the distribution of cases according to the number of children of the same family under care.

TABLE 4.—*Family groups represented by all children under care.*

Number of children in each family group under care.	Family groups represented.	Children under care of division of State minor wards, 1914.			
		Total.	Born in wedlock.	Born out of wedlock.	Foundlings and pseudo-foundlings.
Total.....	4, 792	7, 526	5, 590	1, 721	215
One.....	3, 275	3, 275	1, 774	1, 286	215
Two.....	809	1, 618	1, 364	254	.....
Three.....	383	1, 149	1, 046	103	.....
Four.....	196	784	736	48	.....
Five.....	88	440	429	11	.....
Six.....	29	174	167	7	.....
Seven.....	10	70	58	12	.....
Eight.....	2	16	16	.....	.....

Not quite one-third of the children born in wedlock—32 per cent—were the only children in their families under care of the division of State minor wards. Three-fourths of the children born out of wedlock were the only members of their immediate families under care. The task of caring for a group of brothers and sisters is more complicated than the care of a single child, since it is the policy of the board to place children of the same family together whenever possible. In this respect, therefore, the care of children born out of wedlock presented less difficult problems than the care of other children. Two-thirds of the children of legitimate birth had near relatives also under care of the board, more than two-

fifths having more than one. Only one-fourth of the children born out of wedlock had a near relative under care, one-tenth having more than one.

Status of Children of Illegitimate Birth at Time of Application for Care or at Commitment.

Residence, nativity, and race.

The child's residence at the time he came to the attention of the division of State minor wards was reported for 1,652 of the 1,721 children born out of wedlock who were under care during the year. All but 6 of these children were residents of Massachusetts. About half lived in Boston or the metropolitan district and half in other parts of the State. The 475 whose residence was Boston were also included in the Boston study, Section I, chapter 2. The distribution according to residence was as follows:

Total under care.....	1, 721
Massachusetts	1, 646
Boston	475
Metropolitan district outside Boston.....	364
Other Massachusetts (including 38 under care of State institutions or agencies, at application).....	807
Other	6
Not reported.....	69

The county of residence of the children who lived in the State is given in Table 5, in comparison with the percentage distribution in 1910 of the population under 18 years of age.

TABLE 5.—*Per cent distribution, by county of residence at time of application or commitment, of children born out of wedlock, compared with per cent distribution, by county, of population under 18 years of age.*

County.	Children born out of wedlock, under care of division of State minor wards in 1914.		Per cent distribution, 1910, of population of Massachusetts under 18 years of age. ^a
	Number.	Per cent distribution.	
Total.....	^b 1,606	100.0	100.0
Berkshire.....	43	2.7	3.3
Franklin.....	13	.8	1.3
Hampshire.....	18	1.1	1.9
Hampden.....	76	4.7	7.2
Worcester.....	130	8.1	12.2
Essex.....	225	14.0	12.6
Middlesex.....	363	22.6	19.7
Suffolk ^c	522	32.6	21.2
Norfolk.....	52	3.2	5.3
Plymouth.....	62	3.9	3.9
Bristol.....	79	4.9	10.4
Barnstable, Dukes, and Nantucket.....	23	1.4	1.0

^a Based on population statistics in Thirteenth Census of the United States, 1910: Vol. II, Population, pp. 877, 879.

^b Total under care whose residence was Massachusetts, exclusive of 38 under the care of State institutions and agencies, and 2 for whom county of residence was not reported.

^c The county in which Boston is located.

The percentages of children born out of wedlock coming to the attention of the division of State minor wards from the western and central counties were low in comparison with the percentage distribution in 1910 of the population under 18 years of age. The percentages coming from the county in which Boston is located and from the two contiguous counties having large centers of population were relatively high. This is due in part to the fact that many of the children had previously been under the care of private agencies, and that Boston is a center for social effort in the State. The Boston agencies, in placing their charges, utilize neighboring territory to a greater extent than more distant localities. However, the percentages of children coming to the attention of the State from the counties immediately to the south of Boston were relatively low.

The nativity of the children under the care of the State was as follows:

Total under care.....	1,721
Total reported.....	1,665
Massachusetts	1,543
Boston	563
Metropolitan district outside Boston.....	224
Other Massachusetts (including 176 born in State institutions).....	756
Other United States.....	98
Canada.....	15
Other	9

A total of 93 per cent of the children whose nativity was reported were born in Massachusetts—34 per cent in Boston, 14 per cent in the metropolitan district outside Boston, and 45 per cent in other parts of the State.

Of the 1,721 children born out of wedlock who were under care, 1,532 were white, 184 were colored, and 5 belonged to other races. The percentage of colored children was 11. This is higher than the proportion of colored found among children born out of wedlock under the care of Boston agencies during the year, that percentage being 7.

Age and sex.

In the majority of cases the responsibility for care devolved upon the State very early in the lives of these children and was, therefore, likely to be long continued. Almost half the children born out of wedlock were under 1 year of age at the time they came to the attention of the division of State minor wards. Three-fifths were less than 2 years of age, three-fourths were under 4 years of age, and more than four-fifths were less than 6 years old. Mothers and relatives had soon found themselves unable to provide for the children, and private agencies had considered the problems involved so serious and likely to be of such long duration that care by the State was

desirable. Table 6 gives the ages of the children at the time of application or commitment, together with their sex.

TABLE 6.—*Sex, and age at time of application or commitment, of children born out of wedlock.*

Age at application or commitment.	Children born out of wedlock, under care of division of State minor wards in 1914.			
	Total.	Boys.	Girls.	Sex not reported.
Total.....	1,721	1,002	714	5
Less than 1 year.....	794	476	313	5
1 year.....	254	145	109	
2-3 years.....	240	151	89	
4-5 years.....	134	74	60	
6-9 years.....	184	92	92	
10-13 years.....	96	54	42	
14 years and over.....	12	6	6	
Not reported.....	7	4	3	

There were 1,002 boys and 714 girls, or 288 more boys than girls. The reasons for this predominance of boys among children of illegitimate birth under the care of the State are not apparent. It seems to occur in the younger age groups, the proportions of boys and girls being practically equal among children 6 years of age and over.

Of the 1,721 children of illegitimate birth under care, 373 came under care during 1914. The ages of these children were as follows:

Total coming under care during year.....		373
Less than 1 year.....	190	6-9 years..... 35
1 year.....	36	10-13 years..... 18
2-3 years.....	56	14 years and over..... 4
4-5 years.....	34	

Half the children were under 1 year of age; three-fourths were under 4 years of age. The distribution was very similar to that among all children under care who had been born out of wedlock.

Presence with or separation from mother.

More than half the children born out of wedlock—56 per cent of the 1,532 reported—had been separated from their mothers before the time of application or commitment to the division of State minor wards. This proportion is large, in view of the fact that three-fifths of the children were under 2 years of age. Of the 924 who, previous to application or commitment, had not received previous prolonged care from agencies, and whose location was reported, 55 per cent were separated from their mothers. The percentage was almost the same—56 per cent—for the 608 who had received previous prolonged care. The percentages of children of various ages who had been separated from their mothers varied considerably for the two groups—a smaller percentage of the younger children who had received prolonged care and a larger percentage of the older children having been separated from their mothers previous to application or commitment to the division of State minor wards. Table 7 gives, for the children who

had not previously received prolonged care, the proportions at various ages who had been separated from their mothers.

TABLE 7.—*Per cent of children born out of wedlock not having previously received prolonged care from agencies, who had been separated from their mothers previous to application or commitment, by age.*

Age at application or commitment.	Children born out of wedlock, under care of division of State minor wards in 1914, who had not received prolonged care previous to application or commitment.						
	Total.	Whose presence with or separation from mother at application or commitment was reported.					Whose presence with or separation from mother was not reported.
		Total.	With mother.		Separated from mother.		
			Number.	Per cent.	Number.	Per cent.	
Total.....	a 1,067	924	414	44.8	510	55.2	143
Less than 1 year.....	525	438	218	49.8	220	50.2	87
1 year.....	141	120	40	33.3	80	66.7	21
2-5 years.....	227	204	88	43.1	116	56.9	23
6 years and over.....	170	158	68	43.0	90	57.0	12
Not reported.....	4	4	.....	.....	4	.....	.....

a Excluding 9 under care from birth.

Half the children under 1 year of age who had not previously received prolonged care had been separated from their mothers, two-thirds of those 1 year of age had been separated, while less than three-fifths of those 2 years of age and over had been cared for apart from their mothers previous to application or commitment. That the largest percentage of children separated from their mothers occurred among those 1 year of age is surprising.

Table 8 gives for the children who had been under prolonged agency care at some time previous to application or commitment the proportions with their mothers and separated from them.

TABLE 8.—*Per cent of children born out of wedlock having previously received prolonged care from agencies, who had been separated from their mothers previous to application or commitment, by age.*

Age at application or commitment.	Children born out of wedlock, under care of division of State minor wards in 1914, who had received prolonged care previous to application or commit- ment.						
	Total.	Whose presence with or separation from mother at application or commitment was reported.					Whose presence with or separa- tion from mother was not reported.
		Total.	With mother.		Separated from mother.		
			Number.	Per cent.	Number.	Per cent.	
Total.....	645	608	266	43.7	342	56.3	37
Less than 1 year.....	260	242	136	56.2	106	43.8	18
1 year.....	113	110	41	37.3	69	62.7	3
2-5 years.....	147	136	54	39.7	82	60.3	11
6 years and over.....	122	117	34	29.1	83	70.9	5
Not reported.....	3	3	1	.....	2	.....	.....

Forty-four per cent of the children under 1 year of age who had previously received prolonged care had been separated from their mothers, as compared with 50 per cent of those who had not previously received prolonged care. The percentage at 1 year was slightly less among the former group than among the latter. Above this age the percentages separated from their mothers were higher among children who had been under agency care than among those who had not received such care—71 per cent for children of the former group 6 years of age and over, as compared with 57 per cent among children of this age who had not received care from agencies.

Table 9 shows the number of children who had been under the supervision of agencies at the time of application or immediately prior to commitment.

TABLE 9.—*Supervision and presence with or absence from mother, at application or commitment, of children born out of wedlock.*

Presence with or separation from mother at application or commitment.	Children born out of wedlock, under care of division of State minor wards in 1914.		
	Total.	At application or commitment.	
		Under agency supervision.	Not under agency supervision.
Total.....	a 1,712	923	789
With mother.....	680	413	267
Separated from mother.....	852	476	376
Not reported.....	180	34	146

a Exclusive of 9 under care from birth.

Excluding the 9 children who were unborn at the time application was made for care, 923 of the 1,712 children born out of wedlock—54 per cent—were under agency supervision at the time of application or commitment to the division of State minor wards. Of the 680 children who were with their mothers at this time, 413, or 61 per cent, were receiving agency care; of the 852 away from their mothers, 476, or 56 per cent, were under agency supervision. The fact that a greater proportion of those with their mothers than of those away were being cared for by agencies is contrary to what might have been expected.

Home or place of residence.

The home or place of residence of the child at the time of application or commitment is given in Table 10.

TABLE 10.—*Home or place of residence, at time of application or commitment, of children born out of wedlock, of specified ages.*

Home or place of residence of child at application or commitment.	Children born out of wedlock, under care of division of State minor wards in 1914.						
	Total.	Age at application or commitment.					
		Less than 1 yr.	1 yr.	2-3 yrs.	4-5 yrs.	6 yrs. and over.	Not reported.
Total.....	a 1,712	785	254	240	134	292	7
Mother's own home.....	207	32	25	42	33	75	.....
Mother's other establishment.....	12	2	1	2	2	6	1
Mother's place of employment.....	56	29	10	10	3	4	.....
Mother's parental home.....	136	64	15	18	8	31	.....
Home of relatives or friends.....	105	44	7	13	10	31	.....
Adoptive or foster home.....	39	4	7	6	3	19	.....
Boarding or free home.....	473	212	91	77	34	56	3
Public infirmary or maternity home.....	194	113	32	24	9	16	.....
Hospital.....	53	46	5	1	1	.....	.....
Other institution.....	49	15	6	6	4	18	.....
Other.....	19	15	2	.....	1	1	.....
Not reported.....	369	209	53	43	26	35	3

a Excluding 9 who were under care from birth.

More than one-third of the children whose residence at the time of application or commitment was reported were living in their mothers' own homes or places of employment, or were being cared for by grandparents, relatives, or friends. The number living in the mothers' places of employment was relatively very small. More than one-third were being cared for in boarding or free homes. Nearly one-fifth were in public infirmaries, maternity homes, or hospitals. Only a small number of children were being cared for in institutions of other types. In 3 per cent of the cases the child had been living in an adoptive or foster home.

As was to be expected, the proportion of children provided for in their mothers' own homes was smaller in the younger-age groups and the proportion in public infirmaries, maternity homes, or hospitals was larger. The smallest proportion in boarding or free homes was found among the children 6 years of age and over.

Previous agency care.

A total of 1,393 children born out of wedlock received prolonged care from the division of State minor wards during the year. Of these, nearly two-fifths had received prolonged care from agencies before coming under the care of the division. In many cases care had been given by more than one agency. Table 11 gives information on this subject.

TABLE 11.—*Prolonged care received previous to application or commitment by children born out of wedlock, according to age.*

Age at application or commitment.	Children born out of wedlock, receiving prolonged care from division of State minor wards in 1914.						
	Total.	Who had received no previous prolonged care.	Who had received previous prolonged care.				
			Total.	From specified number of agencies.			
				One.	Two.	Three.	Four.
Total.....	1,393	858	535	402	115	12	6
Less than 1 year.....	596	392	204	164	40	.....	.....
1 year.....	217	123	94	70	21	3	.....
2-5 years.....	319	192	127	95	27	4	1
6 years and over.....	254	147	107	71	26	5	5
Not reported.....	7	4	3	2	1	.....	.....

One-third of the children under 1 year of age had received prolonged care previously. More than two-fifths of those 1 year of age at application or commitment, and about the same proportion of those 6 years of age and over, had previously received prolonged care. Prolonged agency care had been given two-fifths of the children between the ages of 2 and 5 years.

In Table 12 will be found information concerning types of agencies giving previous prolonged care. One-third of the children who had previously been under prolonged agency supervision had been cared for by child-caring agencies. Two-thirds had received care from agencies of other types, including maternity homes, public infirmaries, and child-protective agencies. All children committed as neglected had previously been given either temporary or prolonged care by a child-protective agency.

TABLE 12.—*Type of prolonged care received previous to application or commitment by children born out of wedlock, according to age.*

Age at application or commitment.	Children born out of wedlock, receiving prolonged care from division of State minor wards in 1914.				
	Total.	Who had received no previous prolonged care.	Who had received previous prolonged care.		
			Total.	From child-caring agencies.	From other agencies.
Total.....	1,393	858	535	^a 173	362
Less than 1 year.....	596	392	204	54	150
1 year.....	217	123	94	17	77
2-5 years.....	319	192	127	48	79
6 years and over.....	254	147	107	53	54
Not reported.....	7	4	3	1	2

^a Including 94 under care of both child-caring and other agencies.

One-twelfth of the children less than 2 years of age at application or commitment and slightly more than one-sixth of those 2 years of age and over had previously received prolonged care from child-caring agencies. One-eighth of all the children under prolonged care had previously been given prolonged care by child-caring agencies. These agencies had provided for the children for a time, but had found the problems involved of a type with which the State agency was best adapted to deal.

The following cases are representative of a number in which prolonged care had been given by agencies previous to the time of application or commitment to the division of State minor wards:

Two brothers, 5 and 3 years of age, respectively, were committed to the division of State minor wards as neglected children during the year of the study. The elder had been in charge of a private child-caring agency for three years, and the younger for two years. The mother had failed to support the children, and at the time of commitment her whereabouts was not known. The children were healthy, bright, and attractive.

The older child was born in another State. The mother and father had lived as man and wife, and they planned to marry; but the father was not steady—so the mother said—and she left him and came to Boston. The private child-caring agency took charge of the child and sent the mother to a maternity home, where the second child was born. The mother claimed that the children had the same father, but this was questioned. The mother remained at the maternity home with her younger child for some time, acting as cook in the home. Finally discharged because of her intemperance, she was sent to an institution for inebriate women, the child-caring agency assuming the care of the baby. Subsequently the mother served several terms in a correctional institution. She was extremely intemperate and was violent when intoxicated. (Cases W 345, 346.)

Five years before the period covered by this study application was made to the division of State minor wards for the care of an infant less than a month old who was with his mother in a maternity home. The alleged father was a soldier, and the mother refused to give his name. She was ill, and her sister requested that the State assume the care of the child. After investigation the case was closed, because the child had been placed at board by a private child-caring agency. A few months later the boarding woman made application to the State for the care of the child, since the mother was not paying board. This application was also refused, after investigation and conference, since the private agency was willing to continue supervision. However, when the child was not quite 2 years of age this agency came to the conclusion that the mother was too ill to continue to bear any responsibility for the payment of the child's board. She had heart trouble and tuberculosis. The case seemed to involve long-continued care, and the State, therefore, received the child at the request of the private agency. (Case W 350.)

An 8-year-old boy had been received by the division of State minor wards about five years before this study was made, on the application of his maternal aunt. Both maternal grandparents were dead, and the mother had disappeared a few months before the application. The aunt was an actress; and since it was necessary for her to travel frequently, she was unable to care for

the child. The mother was reported to have had a previous child of illegitimate birth.

The boy was born in a Boston hospital. When a month old he and his mother were sent by a private child-caring agency to a children's institution, where the latter was employed as a wet nurse. Here they remained until the baby was 7 months old. The child was then boarded in a private family, the mother paying. Two and one-half years later application was made by the mother to the same child-caring agency for a boarding home for the boy. The society sent the child to his aunt, and the mother to the State infirmary, where a third child of illegitimate birth was born. This child was colored. Upon discharge from the infirmary the mother abandoned the baby in a field and was arrested and committed to the reformatory for women. Information in regard to the older child is incomplete, but apparently the aunt provided for him for nearly three years. At the end of that time the mother, who had been released from the reformatory, applied to the agency which had previously been interested in the case, asking that they assume the care of the boy. The agency boarded the child for two years, at the end of which time the aunt again took him. The mother disappeared and the child had been with his aunt for only a few weeks when she again asked the agency to provide for the child. As has been stated, her profession required her to travel a great deal, and it was impossible for her to keep the child longer. The society boarded the boy for two months. Then, realizing that the disappearance of the mother and the inability of the aunt to keep the child made it necessary to provide for him in a more permanent way, the private agency relinquished the child to the care of the State, and the boy became a State ward. (Case W 1070.)

A boy 18 years of age had been committed to the division of State minor wards at the age of 11, having previously spent six years under the care of a private child-caring agency. Up to the age of 5 years he had been cared for by his maternal grandparents, but they had been unable and unwilling to give him further care. His mother had married a man who was not the child's father. The boy had a tubercular knee, and while under the care of the private agency had spent most of the time in their institution receiving medical treatment. He had also been in a home for crippled children and had spent five months immediately prior to his commitment to the State in a third institution—a children's home—supported by the overseers of the poor. At the time of commitment the boy was in much better physical condition; however, he was placed in a State institution for crippled children, where he improved steadily. He was able to work on the farm, and later was a chauffeur for the institution. At the end of the period covered by this study he was considered able to be placed permanently in a suitable occupation, and his good conduct gave promise for the future. (Case W 488.)

A boy 18 years of age at the close of the period covered by the study had been committed to the division of State minor wards at the age of 12 years. He had been under the care of agencies since the age of 7 years. His mother and father had been illegally married, the father never having been divorced from his first wife, who was living at the time of his second marriage. In all, three children were born of this illegal union.

When the boy was 7 years old he and his brother and sister were placed under the care of a private child-caring agency. The mother was in a home for incurables and the father in a hospital for the insane. The three children were placed in family homes by the private agency. The boy of the study remained five years in one home, but proving to be unmanageable, revengeful,

and dishonest, he was finally removed by the agency and the responsibility for his care was turned over to the town in which the parents had lived. He was placed in the almshouse for a few days and was then committed to the care of the State. His brother and sister remained under the care of the private agency.

The boy was placed by the State in a boarding home, later in a free home, and finally in a wage home. At the end of the period he was working and was reported to be doing very well. (Case W 518.)

Source of application or commitment.

The sources of the applications to the division of State minor wards for the care of the children, or of the commitments of children to the care of the State, were as follows:

Total under care	-----	1,721
Total reported	-----	1,701
Court	----- 542	Paternal relative----- 8
Public agency	----- 451	Friend----- 68
Private agency	----- 134	Boarding woman----- 64
Mother	----- 361	Other----- 2
Maternal relative	----- 71	

Courts committed 32 per cent of the children to the care of the State. Overseers of the poor and other public agencies committed or made application for the care of 26 per cent. Applications for the care of 8 per cent of the children came from private agencies. The mothers applied directly for the care of 21 per cent of the children, and relatives or friends for 9 per cent more. In 4 per cent of the cases women who had been boarding the children and who had not been adequately paid applied for the assumption of care by the State.

Reason for application or commitment.

The immediate reasons for application or commitment are given below. Although not always the underlying causes of the child's dependency, they indicate the types of situations which made care by the State necessary for these children born out of wedlock:

	Number.	Per cent distrib- ution.
Total under care	----- 1,721	
Total reported	----- 1,690	100.0
Mother dead	----- 39	2.3
Mother unfit to care for child or mother's home unfit	----- 442	26.2
Mother feeble-minded	----- 66	
Mother insane	----- 37	
Mother committed to an institution for delinquents	----- 117	
Mother otherwise unfit	----- 134	
Mother's home unfit	----- 88	
Mother unable to care for child	----- 666	39.4
Mother's husband unwilling	----- 29	
Mother physically unable	----- 83	
Mother otherwise unable	----- 551	

Child abandoned or deserted.....	348	20.6
Board unpaid	34	
Abandoned at board	193	
Otherwise deserted	121	
Child in unfit home (other than mother's).....	79	4.6
Boarding home unfit.....	28	
Custodian's home unfit	51	
Other	116	6.9
Custodian unable or unwilling to care for child.....	37	
Child delinquent or unmanageable.....	28	
Child sick	24	
Not otherwise specified	27	

The mother's inability to provide for the child was the immediate reason for application in nearly two-fifths of the cases. One-fifth of the children came to the attention of the division of State minor wards because they had been abandoned or deserted. The unfitness of the mother to provide proper care or the existence of conditions in the mother's home detrimental to the child's welfare was given as the reason for application or commitment in slightly more than one-fourth of the cases.

The following cases illustrate some of the conditions which lead to application to the State for the care of children born out of wedlock, or to commitments of these children to the care of the State:

The year before the period covered by the study, the mother of a 20-month-old baby girl applied to the State for the care of the child. The mother was not well, and though she worked very hard she was unable to support the baby. She had lived with the father of the child for five years, and they had had three other children, two of whom were living. Just before the baby's birth the mother discovered that the father had a wife living, and for this reason she left him. Two months after the baby's birth at the State infirmary, the mother took the two older children to her parents' home in Canada, placing the baby in the care of a private agency. The grandparents were willing to care for the older children but refused to take the youngest. The agency placed the child in a boarding home, the mother paying board. During the 18 months the baby was under care of this agency she lived in six different boarding homes, having been placed in one of these two different times. Meanwhile, the mother returned to Massachusetts and secured a position at housework, where she earned \$6 a week. Out of this amount she paid \$2.50 to her parents for the board of the older children, and \$2 to the agency for the baby's board; with the balance she had to pay carfare and provide clothing for herself and the children.

The division of State minor wards boarded the baby in a private family. At the end of a year's care she was reported to be a lovable child, in good health, though somewhat backward in her general development. (Case W 1050.)

A baby boy, born in a private hospital, was boarded out from the hospital at the age of 6 weeks. His mother had never seen him. When he was not quite 11 months old application was made for his care to the division of State minor wards, the boarding woman claiming that he had been abandoned at

board and that \$34 was due her. An investigation was made, and it was found that the mother's relatives were able to continue to support the child, and that the father was a professional man with considerable means. A payment of \$500 toward the child's board was obtained from the father, and the responsibility for the child's care was assumed by the mother's relatives, the baby continuing at board. During the first year and a half of the child's life he lived in six different boarding homes, for periods varying in length from two days to six months. (Case W 811.)

A boy 20 years of age at the time of this study was committed to the care of the State at the age of 3 years because of neglect by his foster parents. His mother, a school-teacher, had given him away when he was 2 weeks old. The foster mother proved to be immoral and intemperate and took the child with her to rum shops and questionable places. Her home was filthy, and the boy was badly neglected. The child was placed at board by the State; during the six years next preceding the close of the study, he had remained in the same home. At the age of 17 he was reported to be a good worker; later reports of his conduct were not satisfactory, and he was reported to be shiftless and irresponsible. (Case W 509.)

A 4-month-old baby was received by the State at the age of 1 month, application having been made by a private agency because the mother was ill and unable to care for the child, though she was fond of the baby and anxious to support it. A few days after the application was made the mother was examined at a psychopathic hospital and pronounced syphilitic and feeble-minded, institutional care being recommended.

The mother had applied for help five months before the child was born and was admitted to the State infirmary because she had no home and was in need of treatment for venereal infection. Later she was removed to the almshouse of the town in which she had lived. The baby was born in a private home in the same town. He had sore eyes and was placed in a Boston hospital for treatment, where he remained until received by the division of State minor wards at the age of 1 month. He was boarded out by the State, and at the close of the period was reported to be bright and happy and doing well.

Three years before the child of the study was born the mother had had a previous child out of wedlock, born at the State infirmary. She was 18 years of age at that time. This baby died of pneumonia at the age of 2 months. The alleged father married another woman. The alleged father of the second child denied paternity but said that he was willing to pay board in order to keep the case out of court.

The mother's early history had not been a happy one. At the age of 2 years, when her father deserted his family, she was sent to live with relatives in Canada, where she remained until the age of 10 years. The girl had only a few terms of schooling, having been kept at home most of the time to work on the farm. At the age of 10 years she was placed in a convent school in the United States by her mother—the child's grandmother—and remained there for eight years, spending her vacations with her mother, who worked in a cotton mill. She was reported not to have studied much in school, because she was not in good health. Upon leaving the convent school she went to work in a cotton mill, and before long became pregnant. After her first child was born she drifted from city to city, working for short periods in cotton factories and living at times with her mother and sister, who were out of work much of the time. The girl was intemperate and immoral and was reported to have practiced

prostitution for a time. The family history showed tuberculosis, insanity, and excessive alcoholism. (Case W 1151.)

The year before the period covered by the study application was made to the division of State minor wards by the mother of a month-old infant, who desired the State to assume the care of the baby. She had an older child of illegitimate birth whom she could keep with her at her place of employment, but she could not provide for the younger child. After a period of investigation the application was refused, because the mother was under the care of a private agency which was willing to continue supervision. In a few weeks, however, this agency made application to the State for the care of the baby, since it seemed impossible to solve the problem otherwise. At the time the child was received he was suffering from malnutrition, but he improved under the care of the State.

The mother was reported to be in poor physical condition, mentally low grade, and untruthful. She had first come to the attention of agencies at the time her first child was born. She was then 18 years of age and had been in the United States four years, having been employed in domestic service. Her parents had never lived in this country, but her brother—a man of good character—tried to assist her and wished to compel the father of the first child to marry her, but the mother refused to allow this and said her conduct was no more irregular than that of “everyone else.” The mother kept the first child with her, obtaining employment at housework; part of the time she was under the supervision of private agencies. When the second child was 5 days old a visiting nurse reported to one of the agencies which had given care previously that the mother was boarding with a woman of doubtful reputation. An investigation was made, advice and supervision were given, and a mental examination arranged for; the mother was diagnosed feeble-minded. At the last report she was again at housework, keeping the older child with her. (Case W 1200.)

Care Given by the Division of State Minor Wards.

Length of time children were cared for.

The ages, at the end of the year or the close of care, of the children born out of wedlock were as follows:

Total under care.....		1, 721
Less than 1 year.....	180	10-13 years..... 264
1 year.....	139	14-17 years..... 183
2-3 years.....	219	18 years and over..... 122
4-5 years.....	228	Not reported..... 1
6-9 years.....	385	

The total amount of care given these children by the division of State minor wards could be estimated only for the 1,393 receiving prolonged care. At the end of the year or the close of care 8 per cent of these children were less than 2 years of age; 26 per cent were from 2 to 5 years old; 26 per cent, from 6 to 9 years of age; 18 per cent, from 10 to 13 years old; and 21 per cent were 14 years of age and over. The number of years they had been under care is given in Table 13.

TABLE 13.—*Duration of care received by children of specified ages, born out of wedlock.*

Age at close of care or at end of year.	Children born out of wedlock, receiving prolonged care from division of State minor wards in 1914.								
	Total.	Number of years under care.							
		Less than 1.	1	2-3	4-5	6-9	10-13	14 and over.	Not reported.
Total.....	1,393	171	122	256	211	336	176	115	6
Less than 1 year.....	50	50							
1 year.....	62	34	28						
2-3 years.....	169	33	49	87					
4-5 years.....	199	22	15	75	87				
6-9 years.....	362	18	15	50	75	291			3
10-13 years.....	251	12	13	24	28	68	105		1
14-17 years.....	177	2		19	17	39	39	57	2
18 years and over.....	122				4	28	32	58	
Not reported.....	1			1					

Seven-eighths of the children who had received prolonged care—88 per cent—had been under care one year or longer. Of the 912 children 6 years of age or over 627, or 69 per cent, had been wards of the State for at least 6 years. Of the 550 children 10 years of age or over, 291—53 per cent—had been under care at least 10 years. Twenty-five children had been cared for by the division of State minor wards for 16 years, 21 children for 17 years, 4 children for 18 years, 7 children for 19 years, and 4 children had been State wards for 20 years.

Excluding 1 whose age was not reported and 6 for whom length of time under care was not given, 1,336 children 1 year of age and over were receiving prolonged care. Up to the end of the year studied the care given these children by the division of State minor wards averaged six years per child. Almost seven-eighths of these children remained under care at the end of the year, hence the figures given in Table 14 by no means represent the total length of time during which they will be dependent upon the State.

TABLE 14.—*Aggregate and average duration of care received by children of specified ages, born out of wedlock.*

Age of child at close of care or at end of year.	Children born out of wedlock, receiving prolonged care from division of State minor wards.	Number of years under care of division of State minor wards.	
		Aggregate.	Average.
Total.....	a 1,336	b 8,027.5	6.0
1 year.....	62	45.0	0.7
2-5 years.....	368	873.5	2.4
6-9 years.....	359	1,928.0	5.4
10-13 years.....	250	1,881.0	7.5
14 years and over.....	297	3,293.0	11.1

a Excluding 50 who were less than 1 year of age, 1 whose age was not reported, and 6 for whom time under care was not reported.

b Estimating average for those under care less than 1 year as 6 months—171 children, 85.5 years.

Children 1 year of age at the end of the period had been under care for an average of about 8 months; children 2 to 5 years of age, for an average of 2 years and 5 months; those 6 to 9 years of age, for an average of 5 years and 5 months. Children between the ages of 10 and 13 had spent on the average 7 years and 6 months under the continuous care of the State, and those 14 years of age and over had been State wards for an average of 11 years and 1 month.

Home or place of residence of children at end of period.

The home or place of residence of the children at the end of the year, or, in the case of those who died or were discharged from care during the year, immediately previous to death or discharge, is an index of the types of provision made by the State for the care of these children. Information was secured as to the various dispositions of the children throughout the period of care by the State, but it is impossible to present all this material in statistical form.

Only 35 of the 1,393 children receiving prolonged care—3 per cent—were with their mothers at the end of the year or the close of the case. Eight of these children were under 1 year of age, 14 were from 1 to 5 years, and 13 were 6 years of age and over.

The home or place of residence of the children is given in Table 15.

TABLE 15.—*Home or place of residence at end of period of children of specified ages, born out of wedlock.*

Home or place of residence at end of year or immediately preceding close of care.	Children born out of wedlock, receiving prolonged care from division of State minor wards in 1914.					
	Total.	Age at end of year or at close of care.				
		Less than 2 yrs.	2-5 yrs.	6-9 yrs.	10 yrs. and over.	Not reported.
Total.....	1,393	112	368	362	550	1
Family home.....	1,280	96	351	346	486	1
Home of relatives or friends.....	^a 30	5	10	4	11	.....
Adoptive or foster home.....	47	1	33	9	4	.....
Boarding or free home.....	1,166	90	308	333	434	1
Wage home.....	36	.....	.....	.....	36	.....
Other.....	1	.....	.....	.....	1	.....
Institution.....	104	16	16	16	56	.....
Public infirmary.....	67	15	15	10	27	.....
Institution for the feeble-minded.....	19	.....	.....	1	18	.....
Institution for delinquents.....	2	.....	.....	.....	2	.....
Other institutions.....	16	1	1	^b 5	9	.....
Not reported.....	9	.....	1	.....	8	.....

^a Including 16 in their mothers' own homes, 3 of whom had been adopted by the mother and her husband; 2 in their mothers' places of employment; 4 in their mothers' parental homes; 1 adopted by maternal relatives; 4 in the homes of paternal relatives, 2 of whom had been adopted by their fathers; 3 in friends' homes.

^b Including 1 in a hospital.

More than nine-tenths of the children receiving prolonged care—92 per cent—were in family homes. Only 7 per cent were in institutions. The location of 1 per cent was not reported, but it was probable that they were not in institutions.

The prevailing type of disposition was the boarding or free home. Of the 1,280 children in family homes, 91 per cent were in homes of this kind. Many of the older children in free homes were earning their board by assisting in household tasks or on the farm. Children living in wage homes comprised 3 per cent of the total. These were older children, whose services in the home were of sufficient value to merit the payment of wages in addition to room and board. Six per cent of the children were in the homes of relatives or friends or of adoptive or foster parents, under the supervision of the State.

Of the 104 children in institutions, 65 per cent were in the public infirmary. Some of these children were there only temporarily on account of sickness, and others had been in the infirmary for some time, because of prolonged ill health or defective mentality. Children being cared for in institutions for the feeble-minded comprised 18 per cent of the total in institutions; the remaining 17 per cent were in institutions of other types.

Occupations of the children 14 years of age and over.

During the year 305 children 14 years of age and over were under care of the division of State minor wards. All but 6 of these received prolonged care. Twenty-eight of the 299 under prolonged care were in institutions. Information was obtained in regard to the occupations of 174 children—95 boys and 79 girls—who were living in family homes. (See Table 16.)

TABLE 16.—*Occupations of boys and girls 14 years of age and over, born out of wedlock.*

Occupation at end of period.	Children born out of wedlock, 14 years of age and over, receiving prolonged care from division of State minor wards in 1914 whose occupations were reported.		
	Total.	Boys.	Girls.
Total.....	174	95	79
Attending school.....	86	41	45
Housework.....	14		a 14
Farm.....	13	b 13	
Factory.....	25	b 15	b 10
Store.....	7	c 7	
Office.....	3		3
Other.....	21	a 17	4
None.....	5	2	3

a Including 2 also attending school.

b Including 1 also attending school.

c Including 4 also attending school.

Half the children whose occupations were reported were attending school and were not gainfully employed after school hours or during vacations. A few who were gainfully employed part of the time were also attending school. Almost half the children—83 of the 174—were gainfully employed: Twenty-seven were at housework or farm work, 25 were employed in factories, 10 were working in stores or offices, and 21 were engaged in other occupations.

Disposition of children whose cases were closed during year.

During the year studied, 326 children—19 per cent—died or were discharged from care. Of these, 214 had received temporary care and 112 prolonged care. Forty-four children died during the year, of whom 25 had received temporary care and 19 prolonged care.

The 189 children receiving temporary care, whose cases were terminated during the year for reasons other than death, were discharged to the following persons or agencies for the reasons specified:

Total receiving temporary care previous to discharge.....	189
Mother	46
Mother able to care for the child.....	14
Mother and her family able.....	15
Mother and father married each other.....	2
Mother married, but not to father.....	2
Mother's husband willing to care for child.....	2
Home situation improved.....	1
Other disposition made.....	5
Mother and child deported.....	1
Mother and child disappeared and impossible to locate.....	4
Other relatives or friends.....	43
Relatives or friends able to care for child.....	38
Child adopted by relatives.....	2
Home situation improved.....	2
Other disposition made.....	1
Adoptive or foster parents.....	18
Private agency or institution.....	53
Public agency or institution.....	22
Not reported to whom discharged.....	7
Child disappeared and impossible to locate.....	6
Home situation improved.....	1

The care of one-fourth of these children was assumed by their mothers, more than one-fifth were taken by relatives or friends, and the care of one-tenth was assumed by adoptive or foster parents. Private agencies assumed the care of almost three-tenths, and public agencies of more than one-tenth of the children.

The 93 children receiving prolonged care during the year, whose cases were terminated for reasons other than death, were discharged to the following persons or agencies for the reasons specified:

Total receiving prolonged care previous to discharge.....	93
Mother	12
Mother able to care for child.....	3
Mother and father married each other.....	4
Mother married, but not to father.....	2
Mother's husband willing to care for child.....	1
Mother and child deported.....	2
Other relatives or friends.....	8
Relatives or friends able to care for child.....	5
Child adopted by father or other relatives.....	2
Other disposition made.....	1
Adoptive parents.....	21
Private agency.....	1
Public agency or institution.....	21
Child feeble-minded or delinquent.....	13
Child discharged for other reasons.....	8
Self	29
Of age.....	22
Self-supporting	5
Child disappeared and impossible to locate.....	2
Not reported.....	1

One-eighth of this group of children were discharged to their mothers, one-twelfth to other relatives or friends, and nearly one-fourth to adoptive parents. Public agencies or institutions, such as schools for the feeble-minded and institutions for delinquents, assumed the care of almost one-fourth of these children. Nearly one-third were of age or were self-supporting, or had been shifting for themselves for some time.

Characteristics of the Children.

Physical and mental condition.

The division of State minor wards has physicians attached to its staff and pays especial attention to the health of the children under its care. Hence the records contain fairly complete information as to physical condition. At the end of the period studied three-fourths of the children were in good physical condition, so far as known; one-fourth were in poor condition, a considerable number having serious physical disabilities. The proportion in poor condition is practically the same as that found among children born out of wedlock under the care of Boston agencies during the year.

Total children under care.....	1,721
In good physical condition, so far as known.....	1,299
Having very defective vision.....	16
Having very defective hearing.....	7
Crippled or deformed (including 1 also rachitic and 1 also tubercular and rachitic).....	37
Tubercular (including 1 also rachitic).....	10
Having rachitis.....	24

Having syphilis or gonorrhea (including 1 also deaf, 4 also crippled or deformed, 1 also crippled and rachitic, 1 also rachitic and having defective vision, and 1 also having defective vision)-----	44
Suspected of having syphilis or gonorrhea-----	3
Epileptic (including 1 also crippled)-----	4
In otherwise poor condition-----	277

A total of 1 per cent of the children had seriously defective vision or hearing and 2 per cent were crippled or deformed. Children having syphilis or gonorrhea comprised 3 per cent of the total.

The division of State minor wards makes a practice of securing diagnosis of mentality in all cases in which there is reason to believe that the child is below normal mentally. Children diagnosed feeble-minded are transferred to the State institutions for the feeble-minded as soon as there is accommodation for them. However, the limited capacity of these institutions makes it necessary for the division to provide for considerable numbers of feeble-minded children either in private boarding homes or at the State infirmary. Children who are admitted to the State schools for the mentally defective are usually not discharged from the division of State minor wards for some time, the reason being that occasionally after a period of residence at one of these institutions a child is found not to require permanent custodial care, and it again becomes necessary to provide for him in the community.

By reference to Table 17 it will be seen that there were under care during the year 849 children 7 years of age and over who had been born out of wedlock. Of these 19 per cent were below normal mentally or were backward in school.

TABLE 17.—*Mental condition of children 7 years of age and over, born out of wedlock.*

Age at end of period.	Children 7 years of age and over, born out of wedlock, under care of division of State minor wards in 1914.						
	Total.	Mental condition.					
		Normal.	Very backward in school.	Probably sub-normal or feeble-minded, but not diagnosed.	Sub-normal (diagnosed).	Feeble-minded (diagnosed).	Insane.
Total.....	849	691	50	15	7	83	3
7-9 years.....	280	236	14	8	1	21	.....
10-13 years.....	264	202	22	3	2	35	.....
14 years and over.....	305	253	14	4	4	a 27	3

a Includes 1 also insane.

The percentage of children below normal mentally or very backward in school was highest in the 10-to-13-year age group, 23 per cent

of the children of this age being so reported, as compared with 16 per cent of those 7 to 9 years of age and 17 per cent of those 14 years of age and over. The high percentage in the intermediate age group may be explained by the fact that in many cases definite subnormality or abnormality does not manifest itself until the child approaches the age of adolescence, and that in the case of children over the age of 14 there has been opportunity to make some other provision for their care.

Ten per cent of all the children 7 years of age and over had been diagnosed feeble-minded. Of the children 7 to 9 years of age, 8 per cent were known to be mentally defective; of those 10 to 13 years of age, 13 per cent; and of those 14 years of age and over, 9 per cent. The percentage of feeble-mindedness was considerably higher than that found among children under the care of Boston agencies—6 per cent; it was ten times higher than the percentage of feeble-mindedness found among children under the care of a selected group of five private child-caring agencies in Boston.⁵ Private agencies, as a rule, turn over their most difficult cases to the State.

The following are illustrations of some of the difficulties involved in giving proper care to children of low mentality, and of the defective heritage frequently found in these cases:

A 10-year-old girl, who had been under the care of the State from the age of 1 month, was backward and very nervous, and progress in school was difficult. She was given a mental examination and pronounced backward but not feeble-minded; it was recommended that she be placed in a special class in school. The child's mother was feeble-minded and deformed—both hands had been amputated when she was a child—and she had served a term in the reformatory for women. At the time of the child's birth, which occurred in an almshouse, she was only 17 years of age. The maternal grandmother was dead and the grandfather was intemperate and unable to care for himself. Three children were subsequently born out of wedlock to this woman by different fathers, the last a resident of the almshouse where she had lived for some time. Two of these children also became wards of the State, but one of them died soon after commitment. The other, a 5-year-old girl, was still under care and was in bad physical condition, having suffered from malnutrition, rachitis, and spinal curvature. The condition of this girl and of her sister—the child first mentioned—necessitated special care and attention. (Case W 582.)

A boy 12 years of age, who had been under the care of the State board from infancy, was the source of considerable trouble at home and at school. He was given a mental examination and pronounced not feeble-minded but hysterical. Although he was in the fifth grade, he was doing third-grade work and was a disturbing element in the class. He was said to have a violent temper.

The boy's mother was committed to a reformatory during the year of the study on a charge of drunkenness. It was her fifth commitment to this institution, the first sentence having been served 17 years before. Sixteen times she had been placed on probation or sentenced to an institution, and she had been arrested several other times. Most of her arrests had been on

⁵ See pp. 183-184.

charges of drunkenness, though on two occasions she had been before the court on sex charges. She was diseased and mentally subnormal. Both her parents had been intemperate. The woman was a widow, and had one child of legitimate birth. Since her husband's death she had had two children out of wedlock—the one mentioned above and a child who was placed under the care of a private agency. (Case W 851.)

A 15-year-old girl, who had been under the care of the State for nine years, had been diagnosed feeble-minded four years previous to the period covered by this study. She was repulsive looking and peculiar, had an ugly disposition, and was reported to be a menace to society. One doctor who examined her thought her to be internally paralyzed. She had spells of feeling and acting like a drunken person and at times showed signs of insanity. Application was made for her admission to a school for the feeble-minded, but she had not been admitted at the close of the period studied. She was boarded in a family home for a time, but had been at the State infirmary for three years. Her brother, also of illegitimate birth, had been received by the board at the same time that the girl had been taken. He was described as dreamy and absent-minded, but a fine boy in every respect and making unusually rapid progress at school.

The children's mother was a feeble-minded prostitute, and she was at the State infirmary suffering from tuberculosis at the time that they were received by the State. Her grandfather was the dissolute son of an excellent family; her father was intemperate, and her mother slovenly and inferior mentally. (Case W 303.)

A 19-year-old girl of illegitimate birth had been under the care of the State for 14 years. Nothing was known of her mother, who had not been heard from since the commitment of the child. The girl was boarded until the age of 14, when she was placed in a family who paid wages for her services. She did housework well, but she was very peculiar, one of her characteristics being her strong dislike of children. When 15 years old, she was given a mental examination and pronounced hysterical but not feeble-minded. She grew fault-finding and complaining and was subject to hallucinations. A few months after the first examination she was reexamined and pronounced mentally deranged. She was then placed at the State infirmary. It was finally decided that she was feeble-minded, and application was made to one of the State schools for the feeble-minded. At the close of this study she was still on the waiting list of this institution and was being cared for at the State infirmary, where she had been for three years. About the time when she was suffering from mental disturbance she made inquiries about her people, and was very unhappy when she learned that her mother had never inquired for her. (Case W 378.)

Conduct.

Information regarding the conduct of the children was based on the statements of the visitors of the State board of charity, as given in the records of the children. Absence of a definite statement was assumed to indicate that the child's behavior was satisfactory. Conduct was described as "poor" only if the misbehavior or stubbornness was of such character as to cause serious difficulty in the home in which the child was placed, or in the community, or if it was a menace to his own welfare. Reference to Table 18 will show that

one-fifth of the children 7 years of age and over presented serious problems of conduct.

TABLE 18.—*Conduct of children 7 years of age and over, born out of wedlock.*

Age at end of period.	Children 7 years of age and over, born out of wedlock, under care of division of State minor wards in 1914.														
	Boys and girls.					Boys.					Girls.				
	To- tal.	Conduct good, as far as known.		Conduct poor.		To- tal.	Conduct good, as far as known.		Conduct poor.		To- tal.	Conduct good, as far as known.		Conduct poor.	
		Num- ber.	Per- cent.	Num- ber.	Per- cent.		Num- ber.	Per- cent.	Num- ber.	Per- cent.		Num- ber.	Per- cent.	Num- ber.	Per- cent.
Total.....	849	678	79.9	171	20.1	527	422	80.1	105	19.9	322	256	79.5	66	20.5
7-9 years.....	280	242	86.4	38	13.6	163	138	84.7	25	15.3	117	104	89.0	13	11.0
10-13 years.....	264	216	81.8	48	18.2	173	143	82.7	30	17.3	91	73	80.2	18	19.8
14 years and over.	305	220	72.1	85	27.9	191	141	73.8	50	26.2	114	79	69.3	35	30.7

At the end of the period studied 14 per cent of the children 7 to 9 years of age, 18 per cent of those 10 to 13 years of age, and 28 per cent of those 14 years of age and over were reported unsatisfactory in conduct. Of the 50 boys so described who were 14 years of age and over, 3 were known to have been sexually immoral, 3 alcoholic, 7 otherwise delinquent, and 37 were of otherwise poor character. Of the 35 girls of the same age group 12 were known to have been sexually immoral, 5 of them becoming mothers out of wedlock; 1 had been otherwise delinquent; and 22 were of otherwise poor character.

Among these children troublesome conduct and subnormal mentality appear to be very closely associated. Of the 171 whose behavior was unsatisfactory, 68, or 40 per cent, were below normal mentality or were very backward in school; of the 678 whose conduct was good, only 90, or 13 per cent, were mentally below normal or very backward.

The effect of unfortunate experiences in early childhood before coming under the care of the State, as well as the results of the lack of normal family ties and of shifting from one boarding or foster home to another, are illustrated in the cases studied. Although the division of State minor wards endeavors to place the children in homes in which the relation of parents and child will be approximated as closely as possible, it is extremely difficult, especially with older children, to realize this ideal for all the thousands under care and to insure for each the sympathetic and understanding affection and interest so necessary to right development.

Little information is available as to the psychological effect upon the child of the knowledge of birth out of wedlock. It is certain, however, that very real suffering is entailed upon a sensitive child

by lack of information concerning his parentage, or by the feeling that his parents did not care for him or that they had led unworthy and degrading lives. Whether this mental suffering results in a weakening of moral fiber or a dulling of the instincts toward right living depends upon the make-up of the individual and the influences with which he is surrounded.

Instances of successful work on the part of the division of State minor wards are given in the following cases, representative of a large number in which the outcome for the child is favorable.

Fourteen years previous to the period covered by this study a 3-year-old girl was committed to the care of the State on a charge of neglect. Her younger brother was committed at the same time. The children had been living with their mother and maternal grandmother, both of whom were intemperate. There were a number of men boarders in the house, and conditions were very bad. The children had been much neglected. Subsequent to their commitment the mother was arrested fourteen times for drunkenness and once for another offense.

Both children were placed at board in private families, and both did well so far as conduct was concerned. The boy was undersized and not very bright, but he was trustworthy and tried hard to give satisfaction. The girl was sensible, attractive, intelligent. She finished the second year in high school and then became a skilled worker in a factory. She was economical and accumulated a good bank account. She was a credit to the board and to the families with whom she had been placed. (Case W 793.)

A 10-year-old boy was committed to the division of State minor wards as a delinquent child eight years before the study was made. From the age of 2 years he had been living in an institution for children. He was described as a runaway, untruthful, dishonest, and light-fingered. His mother, a widow with one child of legitimate birth, had paid no board for the child for six years and had not seen him for five years. She was reported to have been intemperate. She died while the boy was under the care of the State. The boy was boarded, and later lived for a time with his married sister. At the age of 15 he went to work in a mill and afterwards did farm work. At the end of the period studied he was reported to be a good boy in every way, steady, reliable, and industrious, and doing well in his work. His early tendencies toward wrongdoing seemed to have been entirely overcome. (Case W 52.)

In contrast to the preceding are two illustrations of troublesome conduct on the part of wards of the State who were of illegitimate birth:

Ten years previous to the time covered by this study a 4-year-old boy was received by the State on the application of his mother, who stated that her husband—the boy's stepfather—was out of work, and that they had no home. The mother had been brought up by her stepmother, who treated her well, but was not fond of her; the girl was unruly and was committed to an industrial school on a charge of stubbornness. After a year at the school she was placed at housework, where she did well for a time. Two years later she gave birth to a child out of wedlock—the boy of the study. When the child was less than 2 years of age the mother married, but her husband was worthless and did not support her. Subsequent to the time when the boy was committed to the care

of the State, the mother had two other children of illegitimate birth, one of whom did not live long; the other, as well as a child born in wedlock, became wards of the State. The mother continued to live an immoral life.

The boy was placed at board. At the age of 14 he had reached the first year in high school, but his conduct was very troublesome. He ran away to his mother; after he was returned to the family with whom he was boarding, he stole, set fire to a barn, and committed other misdeeds. During the year of the study he was before the court on a charge of arson and was formally committed to the care of the division of State minor wards as a delinquent. Shortly after the close of the period studied he was transferred to an institution for delinquent children. (Case W 632.)

A 19-year-old girl, who had been under the care of the State for 18 years, was thought by the board's physician to be a moral defective. At the time she was received she was in poor physical condition. She had a club foot, which was operated on when she was 8 years old. From the age of 15 she had given trouble by her immoral conduct. The boarding woman's adopted son, also said to be of illegitimate birth, was a partner in her wrongdoing. When the girl was 16 years old she gave birth to a child whose father was a neighbor. The child remained with the mother at the State infirmary for two years, when the mother was placed at housework. The baby had trouble with her foot, but was improving, and it was thought that she would be able to walk.

The girl's mother was, herself, of illegitimate birth; hence, three generations of illegitimate maternity are here represented. The girl had an older sister also born out of wedlock. (Case W 808.)

Status of the Mother.

The same data were obtained in regard to the mothers of the children born out of wedlock under care of the division of State minor wards as in the case of the study of such children under the care of Boston agencies and institutions and of Boston children under the care of certain State agencies. In the section dealing with the problem in Boston the discussion of the child's heritage and the possibilities of the mother's providing care was as complete as the information permitted; hence, only a summary of the outstanding facts is attempted here.

The mothers of 1,570 of the 1,721 children under care were white; of 123 children, colored; of 2, American Indian; the race was not reported in 26 cases. The percentage of children whose mothers were colored was 7.

Information as to the nativity of the mother was obtained in 1,201 cases. In 658 of these instances the mother was native born; in 543, foreign born. The percentage of cases in which the mother was foreign born was 45. In one-fifth of the cases in which the mother was native born her place of birth was Massachusetts. The length of time the mother had been in the United States at the time the child was born was reported in 298 of the 543 cases in which the mother was foreign born. In more than half these cases the mother had been

in this country less than 5 years, in a few instances the child being foreign born.

In 1,046 of the 1,721 cases the age of the mother at the time of the child's birth was given. In 14 per cent of these cases she was under the age of 18; in 27 per cent, between the ages of 18 and 20; in 28 per cent, from 21 to 24 years of age; in 25 per cent, between 25 and 34 years; and in 5 per cent, 35 years and over. The mothers of a total of 70 per cent of the children under the care of the division of State minor wards were under 25 years of age. In 1910, 58 per cent of the single, widowed, and divorced women in Massachusetts between the ages of 15 and 44 years were under the age of 25.⁶

Information as to the civil condition of the mother was secured in the cases of 1,459 children under care during the year. In 79 per cent of these cases, the mother was single at the time of the child's birth; in 5 per cent, widowed; in 14 per cent, divorced, separated, or deserted; and in 2 per cent, legally married to a man not the father of the child. The mothers of 10 per cent of the 1,721 children of illegitimate birth, under the care of the State, were living as married at the time of the child's birth; the mothers of 2 per cent were illegally married. In 17 per cent of the cases, the mother was known to have married after the birth of the child. In 3 per cent of all the cases, she was known to have married the child's father.

The mothers of 69 children had died before the application was made to the division of State minor wards for the care of the child. Of the other 1,652 cases, the mother was in poor physical condition in 342, or 21 per cent. In 4 per cent of the cases, the mother was known to have syphilis or gonorrhea. This percentage is somewhat lower than that found among the cases dealt with in section I, *The Problem in Boston*. The difference may be accounted for by the fact that many children under the care of the division of State minor wards came into its charge years ago, when the importance of information regarding the mother's physical condition was less emphasized.

The mothers of 18 per cent of the children were below normal mentally. In 7 per cent of the cases, the mother was feeble-minded; in 2 per cent, insane; in 2 per cent, subnormal or abnormal mentally, though not definitely feeble-minded or insane; and in 7 per cent, reported as probably subnormal or feeble-minded, diagnoses not having been made. The findings as to mentality are practically identical with those for mothers of children under the care of Boston agencies,

⁶ Thirteenth Census of the United States, 1910; Vol. II, Population, p. 867.

and also for mothers of children under the care of a selected group of six private child-caring agencies in Boston.⁷

Complete information as to the character of the mother was impossible to obtain in all cases. The proportion described as of poor character, aside from the experience resulting in the birth of the child of the study, must be regarded as a minimum. So far as the records indicated, the mothers of 54 per cent of the children were immoral, alcoholic, otherwise delinquent, or of generally poor character. In 45 per cent of all the cases the mother was reported to have had other illicit sex experiences; in 2 per cent more she had been a prostitute either before or after the child's birth. In a total of 11 per cent of the cases the mother was reported as alcoholic or otherwise delinquent, though in only 3 per cent of the cases was alcoholism or other delinquency not combined with immorality. The mothers of 4 per cent of the children were otherwise of poor character, being shiftless, lazy, abusive, or neglectful of their children.

The mothers of 508 children—29 per cent of all the children of illegitimate birth under care during the year—had been under the care of agencies before the time of application to the division of State minor wards for the care of the child. This excludes the care given the mother's other children or the mother's parents. The mothers of a total of 107 children—6 per cent—had been wards of child-caring agencies. In a total of 332 cases—19 per cent—the mothers had been before the courts. This includes 18 cases—1 per cent—in which the mother had been a ward of a child-caring agency. In 233 of the 322 cases—14 per cent of the total 1,721—the mother had been committed to a correctional institution. In 87 cases—5 per cent—in which the mother had not been a ward of a child-caring agency or before a court she had been given prolonged care by agencies of other types.

The mothers of 416 children—24 per cent of the 1,721 under care—were known to have had illegitimate births before the child of the study was born. In a total of 609 cases—35 per cent—the mother had had one or more such births before or after the birth of the child of the study; in 300 cases—17 per cent—she had had more than one. Of 432 cases in which the mother was under the age of 21 at the time of the child's birth, there were 37, or 9 per cent, in which there had been a previous illegitimate birth. Of 614 cases in which the mother was 21 years of age or over at the time the child of the study was born, there were 227, or 37 per cent, in which she had had one or more previous births out of wedlock. One mother had had 8 previous illegitimate births, and 1 had had 10.

Reports as to the occupation of the mother at the time of application for the care of the child were secured in 1,197 cases. Of these,

⁷ See p. 195.

the mother was gainfully employed in 820 cases, or 69 per cent. In 4 per cent of the cases in which she was gainfully employed the mother was a proprietor or manager or was engaged in a professional pursuit. In 5 per cent of the cases she was a clerk or kindred worker. In 31 per cent of the cases in which the mother was gainfully employed she was a semiskilled worker, and in 60 per cent she was engaged in domestic or personal service. In regard to specific occupations, in 25 per cent of all the cases in which the mother was gainfully employed she was a semiskilled factory worker and in 43 per cent a domestic servant. In 15 cases in which the mother was gainfully employed—2 per cent—she was a prostitute at the time of application.

Of the 377 cases in which the mother was not gainfully employed there were 247—66 per cent—in which she was a housewife and 16—4 per cent—in which she was attending school. In 5 cases in which the mother was a housewife and in 24 in which she had no occupation the mother was a prostitute. Hence in 8 per cent of the cases in which the mother was not gainfully employed in a legitimate occupation she was earning money through immorality.

In 1,129 cases the mother's mode of living at the time of application for the care of the child was reported. In 33 per cent of these cases she was living in her own home or other independent establishment, in 18 per cent in her parental home, in 6 per cent in the home of relatives or friends, in 6 per cent she was boarding, in 32 per cent living in her place of employment, and in 5 per cent in an institution.

Although complete information was not obtained as to the mother's family, such data as were available indicate that in at least 34 per cent of the cases the mother had no parental home upon which she could rely for assistance or the character or circumstances of her parents made it difficult for her to get help from them. In 6 per cent of the cases both maternal grandparents were dead at the time of application for the care of the child, in 5 per cent they had never been in the United States, in 10 per cent one parent was dead, in 2 per cent the mother's parents were divorced or separated, and in an additional 11 per cent of the cases one or both maternal grandparents were alcoholic, immoral, otherwise delinquent, chronically dependent, mentally below normal, shiftless, abusive, or otherwise of poor character.

In 3 per cent of all the cases one or both of the child's maternal grandparents were feeble-minded or insane or were probably subnormal or feeble-minded. In 13 per cent of the total number of cases one or both maternal grandparents were known to be alcoholic, immoral, or otherwise delinquent, and, in an additional 4 per cent, otherwise of poor character. In 2 per cent of the cases both mental

subnormality and poor character were reported. In a total of 19 per cent of the cases one or both of the child's maternal grandparents were alcoholic, immoral or otherwise delinquent, dependent upon charitable aid, mentally below normal, or generally shiftless. The mothers of 44 children—3 per cent of all children of illegitimate birth under care—were themselves known to have been born out of wedlock.

On the whole the mothers of children born out of wedlock under the care of the division of State minor wards seem to be of the same status as the mothers of children under the care of Boston agencies during the year.⁸ The mothers of a larger proportion of children under the care of the division of State minor wards had previously received assistance from social agencies; the percentage of children whose mothers had had other births out of wedlock was considerably higher in the "minor-wards" group. With these exceptions, the findings were identical or the differences very minor.

Defective mentality, low moral standards, and dependency—conditions which are found in the family histories of many children born out of wedlock who must rely upon the public for support and care—are illustrated in the following cases:

A 19-year-old girl, a State ward from the age of 3 years, had a heritage of mental defect, dependency, and immorality extending over three or four generations. A great-grandmother and a great-grandfather on her mother's side had been almshouse inmates. The maternal grandmother was an inmate of an almshouse, where she was considered an imbecile; she finally became insane. The girl's mother was born out of wedlock and was brought up by the child's great-grandmother, because of the feeble-mindedness of the grandmother. At the age of 14 the mother was committed to an institution for delinquents, on a charge of having stolen jewelry and money; at the age of 20 she was described as shiftless and incapable of earning her living, and she became an inmate of the almshouse in which the grandmother and great-grandmother had been cared for. Later she was committed on a sex charge to the reformatory for women, and spent 11 months at that institution.

Soon after leaving the reformatory she married and had two children, whose whereabouts were unknown at the time of commitment of the child of the study. After five years the mother was deserted by her husband; four years later he returned to her, but in the meanwhile a child had been born to the mother out of wedlock. The history of that child is also unknown. After two years the husband deserted again, and this time his desertion was final. The mother worked occasionally in private families, and at one of these times the child of the study was born; the father was a reputable business man of good family and was 10 years younger than the mother. Mother and baby were cared for in the almshouse, where the baby remained until she was committed to the care of the division of State minor wards as a neglected child. When the baby was less than 2 years old the mother was sentenced to the reformatory

⁸ See Sec. I ch. 2. This group also included Boston children under the care of State agencies.

for women for three years on a charge of adultery with an inmate of the almshouse, by whom she had another child of illegitimate birth. A fourth child was born out of wedlock to this woman, but her history did not state when this child was born. After her return from the reformatory she again became an inmate of the almshouse, where she died of pneumonia when the child of the study was 15 years of age. The record described this mother as an undersized woman, not very strong, who could read and talk quite well, and who worked well under supervision, though she had a bad temper and seemed to have no idea of right and wrong.

The child was placed at board by the division of State minor wards. At the age of 17 she was described as poorly nourished, not strong, and suffering from spinal curvature. She was backward in school, though she finally reached the sixth grade and later attended trade school. Because of peculiar lumps on her hands, she was unable to keep long at housework or sewing. A mental examination was given when she was 17 years of age and she was pronounced not feeble-minded. (Case W 578.)

Two little girls, 3 and 7 years of age, had been under the care of the State for nearly two years, having been committed as neglected children from a town in the southeastern part of the State. At the time of commitment the maternal grandmother was in the reformatory for women on a charge of adultery, and the mother was about to be committed to a State institution for the feeble-minded. The home of the maternal grandparents, where the children had always lived, was described as a miserable, filthy hovel. The older child had a weak heart and was very nervous, but while under the care of the State did excellent work in school. The younger child was poorly nourished, pale and anemic, very nervous, and afraid of strangers, but at the close of the period studied she was described as bright and attractive. It was too early to determine whether the children would be able to overcome the handicap of their unfortunate heritage.

The family had been in this country for generations but came from worn-out and run-down stock. The maternal grandfather was feeble-minded and intemperate. The maternal grandmother was feeble-minded and grossly immoral and was committed to the reformatory for women on a charge of adultery just before the children were committed to the division of State minor wards. The grandparents had 11 children, ranging in age, during year covered by the study, from 30 to 9 years. The oldest child was an inmate of a State school for the feeble-minded; the second child was the mother of the children of the study and was committed to a school for the feeble-minded shortly after the children came under the care of the division of State minor wards; the third child—a boy—had been for six years a ward of the State, after which he had returned to his home—he was under indictment for manslaughter at the time his nieces were committed to the State board, but the complaint was dismissed because he was found to be feeble-minded and he was committed to a State institution. The fourth child had been under the care of the State for four years but was not under care at the time the children of the study were committed. The fifth child had been under the care of the State board and was then transferred to a State institution for the feeble-minded. The sixth child was under the care of the division of State minor wards and was of normal mentality. The seventh, eighth, and ninth children had been under the care of the division of State minor wards and had been transferred to institutions for the feeble-minded. The two youngest children were committed to the care of the State board at the same time the children of the study were committed—one of them was of normal mentality and the other was backward.

Hence, of the 11 children of these feeble-minded parents—the maternal grandparents of the children studied—7 were feeble-minded and were being cared for in State institutions for the feeble-minded, 1 was backward mentally, 2 were normal mentally, and the mentality of 1 was not stated. All but 2 of the 11 had been under the care of the division of State minor wards, and these 2 were in State institutions.

The mother of the children of the study had a third child of illegitimate birth, who died in infancy; she did not know who was the father of this child. The two children committed to the care of the State had different fathers. After the birth of the oldest child the mother married a tramp in an attempt to cover the fact that her child had been born out of wedlock. The man did not support her and deserted her after a short time. (Cases W. 855, 856.)

A boy 12 years of age had been under the care of the State for four years, and previously had received prolonged care from a private agency, having been boarded in family homes. The private agency continued their support; the boy had been in need of a better home than could be found in his native town, especially because he was beginning to suffer from the taunts of the school children—not so much on account of his illegitimate birth as because of the general reputation of his mother in the community. In consequence he was continually fighting with them. At the age of 10 the boy was pronounced a moral defective by the physician who examined him. The year following he caused considerable trouble by setting fires. However, during the year of the study he was reported to be healthy and mentally normal, doing good work in the sixth grade and well liked by his companions.

The boy's maternal grandmother was described as very erratic; she died five years before the boy was received by the State board. The maternal grandfather's relatives were of poor character. At the age of 17 the mother had been committed as a stubborn child to an institution for delinquents. She remained in this institution not quite two years. A year after her return home she married, but she lived with her husband only a short time. Five months after her marriage she was committed to the reformatory for women on a sex charge and remained at the institution 11 months. Seven months after her release she was again committed to the reformatory on a charge of adultery, remaining there about a year and a half. At the age of 25 her first child was born—the boy of the study. Her second child was born out of wedlock, while she was serving her third term at the reformatory. This child, syphilitic and feeble-minded, was a State ward until his death at the age of 6 years. In all, the mother was committed four times to the reformatory on sex charges. While under the care of State institutions, she ran away four times. She was examined for feeble-mindedness and found not committable, and she was twice examined for insanity and found not to be insane. She was described as untruthful, lazy, and immoral, but with strong maternal instincts. A total of five children were born to this woman out of wedlock, each child having a different father. The mother felt no disgrace attached to her immoral conduct, reporting that a cousin had six children of illegitimate birth and that the town had assisted liberally in their support.

Of the five children one was the child of the study, two were dead, one had spent most of her four years of life at the almshouse with her mother, and the fifth was born at the State Infirmary during the year of the study, and was still under the care of that institution at the close of the year. Before the birth of the last child the mother was pronounced insane, and she was to be transferred

from the State infirmary to a hospital for the insane. The family was known to a number of social agencies in Boston and elsewhere. (Case W 530.)

A 9-year-old girl of illegitimate birth, received by the State two years before the period covered by this study, had shortly after commitment been found to be feeble-minded. During the two years she had been under care she was provided for in a boarding home. Previous to her commitment to the care of the State the child had been living with her mother, a high-grade imbecile of bad character, and her stepfather, who was reported to be "not bright." A younger brother, also born out of wedlock, was committed to the care of the State at the same time. He appeared to be of normal mentality and did well in the home in which he was boarded.

Both maternal grandparents were reported to be high-grade imbeciles, the grandfather also being epileptic and immoral. The grandmother died when the mother was 5 years old. The grandfather kept the family together with the aid of housekeepers. At the age of 16 or 17 years the mother had her first child of illegitimate birth, her own father being reported as the father of the child. A sister of the mother was reported to have had two children of illegitimate birth by her own father. The mother later married and had eight children born in wedlock, five of whom were living at the time the study was made. Four of these children and the first child of illegitimate birth were committed to the care of the State as neglected; one of them was feeble-minded and was transferred to an institution for the mentally defective. The child not committed to the care of the division of State minor wards was epileptic and was cared for at a State institution for epileptics.

The mother's husband finally secured a divorce on the ground of immorality. She then supported herself for a time through housework, and later she went through a marriage ceremony with a town "bum" who had a legal wife living, though this fact was not discovered by the mother for two years. By this man the mother had two children—the children of the study. When the mother found that her supposed husband had another wife she left him and became a housekeeper for a family, some of whose children were wards of the State. She married the 22-year-old son of this family, who was reported not bright mentally; they had one child.

This imbecile woman, both of whose parents were imbeciles, had in all 12 children, 3 of whom were of illegitimate birth. Nine of these children were living at the time covered by this study. Seven of the 9 were or had been under the care of the division of State minor wards, and another was under the care of a State institution for epileptics. Two of the children were feeble-minded (Cases W 27, 28.)

The feeble-minded mother of one child born in wedlock and seven born out of wedlock had been married at the age of 17, while a suit was pending to establish the paternity of her unborn child. Her husband deserted on the day of the marriage, and shortly afterwards the mother went to live with another man. They had 6 children; 1 was given away when a baby, 1 died, 1 was adopted, and at the time of the study the other 3 had been under care of the division of State minor wards for five years. They had been committed as neglected, because the parents were held for the grand jury and the home was unfit. Upon release from the institution to which she had been committed, the mother returned to the children's father, and he aided in getting a divorce for her; when this had been procured, he left her and married another woman. The mother went back to her former occupation of domestic service and worked for a third cousin—a widower whose family had been a burden upon charity for years and who had 8 chil-

dren, two of whom were feeble-minded. The mother became pregnant, and after the birth of the baby both parents were arrested and committed for one year to correctional institutions, the infant being cared for with the mother in the institution.

The oldest child under the care of the division of State minor wards was 13 years of age at the time covered by the study. He was in the seventh grade and was reported to have an excellent mind and to be a good boy in every way. His sister, 10 years of age, had conjunctivitis and tuberculosis and was feeble-minded; she had been in the State Infirmary for two years awaiting admission to an institution for the feeble-minded. The youngest child under the care of the State, 3 years of age, was in good health and was described as bright, though heedless. She did good work in school one year, but during the year of the study she was not doing so well. (Cases W 258, 259, 260.)

The year before the period covered by this study, five children of illegitimate birth having the same mother, but four different fathers, were committed to the care of the State because of unfit home conditions. The home was very dirty, the family had been ordered to vacate the house, the stepfather had been abusive, and the two oldest children had venereal infection for which medical attention had not been provided. The mother had been committed to jail pending a hearing on a charge of neglect, but the stepfather had secured bail and left town with the oldest girl, 12 years of age. Two weeks later the child was found in another State, where she had been abandoned by her stepfather; a private child-caring agency had learned of her abandonment and was taking care of her.

The family had been known to social agencies in three States; at one time some of the children had been wards of another New England State. The family was first known to a Boston agency three years before the period covered by the study; stolen goods had been found in the home and it was frequented by persons of disreputable character. Later there were complaints that the children were going out to beg. At one time the family had resorted to publishing their wants in the newspapers with the hope of securing aid. The maternal grandmother kept a boarding house and received public aid; her immoral conduct caused the public authorities to threaten to withdraw assistance if she did not conform to accepted standards of morality. The mother had eight children in all, two of whom were twins; three of the children, including one of the twins, were dead. The father of the two youngest was a man whose children by his legal wife were wards of the State. Three years after the birth of the youngest child the mother married the man referred to above as the children's stepfather.

The division of State minor wards sent four of the children to the State infirmary; the two youngest had the mumps and the two oldest needed prolonged medical care. The fifth child was immediately placed at board. By the end of the period all the children were in boarding homes. The 16-year-old boy was headstrong and had a bad temper, but he was doing well in the ninth grade in school and was generally satisfactory. The 12-year-old girl was still in poor health, though her physical condition had improved; she had reached only the third grade in school and, though she worked hard, was very backward. The 11-year-old boy was in the fourth grade and was doing very well; he was described as a sensitive child who tried his best to do what was right. The 8-year-old girl was slow and dull. The youngest child, 7 years of age, was also slow and dull, though she was a good girl, well and active. All the children except the oldest boy were placed in the same town, and the three girls were

in the same family until it became necessary to remove the oldest on account of her health. (Cases W 785, 786, 787, 788, 789.)

Comparison of Children of Illegitimate Birth with Those of Legitimate Birth under Care.

Sex, race, and nativity.

There were under care during the year 1,717 children of legitimate birth and 606 children born out of wedlock whose case records were numbered from 1 to 2000—the cases chosen for this comparative study. All but 8 of the children born in wedlock and all but 5 of those of illegitimate birth were receiving prolonged care. Of the children of legitimate birth 1,028 were boys and 689 were girls. Of those born out of wedlock 381 were boys and 224 were girls and the sex of 1 was not reported. The percentage of boys among the children of illegitimate birth was slightly larger than among those of legitimate birth—63 as compared with 60.

There were 1,642 white children of legitimate birth, 74 colored, and 1 of another race. Among the children born out of wedlock were 544 white, 61 colored, and 1 of another race. Colored children comprised 10 per cent of those born out of wedlock, while only 4 per cent of those of legitimate birth were Negroes.

The nativity of the children is given in Table 19:

TABLE 19.—*Comparison, by place of birth, of children born in wedlock and children born out of wedlock.*

Place of birth.	Children under care of division of State minor wards, 1914, whose case records were numbered from 1 to 2000.			
	Born in wedlock.		Born out of wedlock.	
	Number. ^a	Per cent distribution.	Number. ^a	Per cent distribution.
Total.....	1,669	100.0	591	100.0
Boston.....	207	12.4	189	32.0
Metropolitan district outside Boston.....	241	14.4	71	12.0
Other Massachusetts.....	^b 961	57.6	^c 289	48.9
Other United States.....	160	9.6	37	6.3
Canada.....	25	1.5	3	.5
Other.....	75	4.5	2	.3

^a Excluding 48 children born in wedlock and 15 born out of wedlock whose nativity was not reported.

^b Including 10 born at State institutions.

^c Including 75 born at State institutions.

Almost one-third of the children of illegitimate birth were born in Boston as against one-eighth of the children of legitimate birth. A total of 93 per cent of the former were born in Massachusetts, while only 84 per cent of the latter were born in the State. The proportion of foreign-born was considerably smaller among children born

out of wedlock—1 per cent as compared with 6 per cent among children of legitimate birth.

Residence at time of application or commitment.

At the time of application to the division of State minor wards for the care of the child, or—in the case of neglected, wayward, and delinquent children—at the time of commitment, 290 of the 1,717 children born in wedlock were living in Boston, 264 in the metropolitan district outside Boston, 1,143 in other parts of the State (including 11 under the care of State institutions), 1 had just come from another State, and the residence of 19 was not reported. Of the 606 children born out of wedlock, 150 were living in Boston at the time of application, 103 in the metropolitan district outside Boston, 311 in other parts of the State (including 23 under the care of State institutions), and the residence of 42 was not reported. Slightly more than two-fifths of the children born out of wedlock whose residence was known were living in Boston or the metropolitan district at the time of application; not quite one-third of those born in wedlock were residents of Boston or the metropolitan district.

A comparison of the county of residence of children born out of wedlock with the residence of children born in wedlock is made in Table 20 for those children whose residence at the time of application or commitment was Massachusetts.

TABLE 20.—*Comparison, by county of residence, of children born in wedlock and children born out of wedlock.*

County of residence at time of application or commitment.	Children under care of division of State minor wards, 1914, whose case records were numbered from 1 to 2000, and whose residence at time of application or commitment was Massachusetts.			
	Born in wedlock.		Born out of wedlock.	
	Number.	Per cent distribution.	Number.	Per cent distribution.
Total.....	1,697	100.0	564	100.0
Berkshire, Franklin, and Hampshire.....	144	8.5	32	5.7
Hampden.....	173	10.2	30	5.3
Worcester.....	268	15.8	62	11.0
Essex.....	243	14.3	78	13.8
Middlesex.....	273	16.0	93	16.5
Suffolk ^a	317	18.7	168	29.8
Norfolk and Plymouth.....	152	9.0	37	6.6
Bristol.....	81	4.8	36	6.4
Barnstable and Nantucket.....	35	2.1	5	.9
Under care of State institutions or agencies.....	11	.6	23	4.0

^a The county in which Boston is located.

The percentage of children born out of wedlock coming from Middlesex, Suffolk, and Bristol Counties was higher than the percentage of children of legitimate birth coming from these counties. In

two of these counties—Suffolk and Bristol—the illegitimacy birth rate for the year studied was also high.⁹ The percentage of children born out of wedlock who lived in Suffolk County—most of which the city of Boston comprised—previous to application was particularly high—30 as compared with 19 per cent for children born in wedlock. This was to be expected on account of the high illegitimacy rate in Boston and because a number of these children had been under the care of Boston agencies previous to their reception by the division of State minor wards. The percentage of children of illegitimate birth who had been under the care of State institutions or agencies, and whose residence could not properly be assigned to any county, was higher than in the case of children born in wedlock.

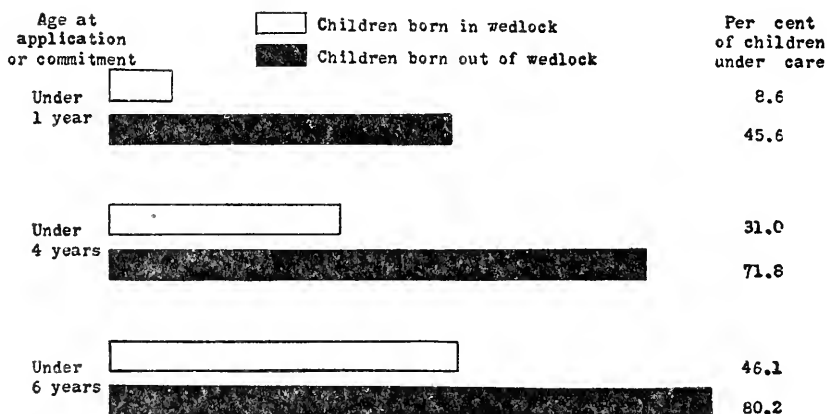


CHART V.—Comparison by age at application or commitment of 1,717 children born in wedlock and 606 children born out of wedlock, under care of the division of State minor wards in 1914.

Age at time of application or commitment.

The ages at which children come under the care of the State are to some extent indicative both of the urgency of the need and of the probable length of time over which care must be given. The children coming under care at the earliest age are those whose natural guardians have been unable to meet their responsibilities even for a short time. Such children probably will be dependent upon the State for the longest period. Table 21 gives the ages at application or commitment, and the comparative numbers of children under care who were born in wedlock and born out of wedlock.

⁹ See Table 1, p. 271.

TABLE 21.—*Comparison, by age at application or commitment, of children born in wedlock and children born out of wedlock.*

Age at application or commitment.	Children under care of division of State minor wards, 1914, whose case records were numbered from 1 to 2000.					
	Born in wedlock.			Born out of wedlock.		
	Number.	Per cent distribution.	Cumulative per cent.	Number.	Per cent distribution.	Cumulative per cent.
Total.....	1,717	100.0	.....	606	100.0	.....
Less than 1 year.....	148	8.6	8.6	276	45.6	45.6
1 year.....	113	6.6	15.2	90	14.8	60.4
2-3 years.....	272	15.8	31.0	69	11.4	71.8
4-5 years.....	259	15.1	46.1	51	8.4	80.2
6-9 years.....	529	30.8	76.9	79	13.0	93.2
10-13 years.....	344	20.0	97.0	35	5.8	99.0
14 years and over.....	49	2.9	99.8	4	.7	99.7
Not reported.....	3	.2	.....	2	.3	.....

Almost half the children born out of wedlock—46 per cent—were less than 1 year of age when application for their care was made to the division of State minor wards. Only 9 per cent of the children born in wedlock were less than 1 year old. A total of 60 per cent of the children of illegitimate birth were under 2 years of age, as against 15 per cent of the children of legitimate birth. Four-fifths of the children born out of wedlock—80 per cent—were less than 6 years old, while less than half the children of legitimate birth were under this age. The evidence is clear that children born out of wedlock come under the care of the State at an earlier age than children born of parents who are married to each other.

Source of application or commitment.

Almost three-fourths of the children born in wedlock were received by the division of State minor wards from courts, having been committed as neglected, wayward, or delinquent children. Less than two-fifths of the children born out of wedlock were received on court commitments. In the case of children of the latter class the problem is mainly one of dependency, while in the case of children of legitimate birth it is largely one of neglect. Nearly one-third of the children born out of wedlock were received from overseers of the poor or from the superintendent of the State infirmary; only one-ninth of the applications for the care of children born in wedlock came from these sources. The proportion of applications for the care of children of illegitimate birth coming from the mothers was much larger than the proportion of applications coming from parents for the care of children of legitimate birth—more than one-fourth as compared with less than one-eighth. (See Table 22.)

TABLE 22.—*Comparison, by source of application or commitment, of children born in wedlock and children born out of wedlock.*

Source of application or commitment.	Children under care of division of State minor wards, 1914, whose case records were numbered from 1 to 2000.			
	Born in wedlock.		Born out of wedlock.	
	Number.	Per cent distribution.	Number.	Per cent distribution.
Total.....	a 1,666	100.0	a 593	100.0
Court.....	1,212	72.8	234	39.4
Public agency.....	185	11.1	173	29.2
Private agency.....	37	2.2	9	1.5
Parents.....	194	11.6	161	27.2
Relative or friend.....	26	1.6	10	1.7
Other.....	12	.7	6	1.0

a Excluding 51 cases of children born in wedlock and 13 of children born out of wedlock, in which source of application was not reported.

Home conditions and reason for application or commitment.

The reason for the application for care or for the commitment of the child, as stated on the records, is given in Table 23. Although the alleged reason is not in all cases the underlying cause of the child's dependency, it gives an indication of the situation.

TABLE 23.—*Comparison, by reason for application or commitment, of children born in wedlock and children born out of wedlock.*

Reason for application or commitment.	Children under care of division of State minor wards, 1914, whose case records were numbered from 1 to 2000.			
	Born in wedlock.		Born out of wedlock.	
	Number.	Per cent distribution.	Number.	Per cent distribution.
Total.....	a 1,696	100.0	a 584	100.0
Death of one or both parents.....	235	13.9	10	1.7
Desertion or nonsupport.....	491	29.0	102	17.5
Inability of parents or relatives to support.....	109	6.4	228	39.0
Home unfit or parents unfit.....	740	43.6	213	36.5
Child delinquent or unmanageable.....	99	5.8	10	1.7
Child feeble-minded.....	9	.5	.....	.....
Child sick.....	13	.8	9	1.5
Other.....	.....	.....	12	2.1

a Excluding 21 cases of children born in wedlock and 22 of children born out of wedlock in which reason for application was not reported.

The death of one or both parents was the reason given for the application in 14 per cent of the cases of children born in wedlock. Only 2 per cent of the children born out of wedlock came under care because of the death of the mother. Desertion or nonsupport was the reason for application or commitment in 29 per cent of the

cases of children of legitimate birth, but in only 18 per cent of those of children of illegitimate birth. Inability of parents or relatives to support the child was given as the reason for application in the cases of only 6 per cent of the children born in wedlock, though in 39 per cent of the cases of children of illegitimate birth the reason stated was the inability of the mother or relatives to care for the child. In 44 per cent of the cases of children of legitimate birth the application was made or the child was committed because of the unfitness of the home or of the parents; in only 37 per cent of the cases of children born out of wedlock was this reason given. The delinquency, defectiveness, or illness of the child was the reason for application in the cases of 7 per cent of the children born in wedlock, but in the cases of only 3 per cent of the children born out of wedlock.

Of greater significance than the immediate reason for application are the home conditions and the character of the parents. The homes of 1,020 children of legitimate birth—59 per cent of the total—had been broken up because of the death or desertion of one or both parents or because the parents were divorced or separated. Practically all the children born out of wedlock lacked normal homes.

One or both parents of 141 children of legitimate birth—8 per cent—had been diagnosed feeble-minded, epileptic, or insane. The mothers of 53 children of illegitimate birth—9 per cent—had been so diagnosed. The percentage for children born in wedlock is very low as compared with the percentage for children born out of wedlock, in view of the fact that both parents of the former are considered and only one parent of the latter. It must be remembered, however, that examinations of mentality probably would not have been made as frequently in the case of parents of children born in wedlock.

Alcoholism, immorality, or other delinquency of one or both parents was reported in the case of 844 children of legitimate birth—49 per cent. The mothers of all the children of illegitimate birth would have been so classified had not this study sought to analyze their character aside from the violation of moral standards resulting in these cases of illegitimate maternity. In 276 cases of illegitimate birth—45 per cent—the mothers were reported as alcoholic, immoral, or otherwise delinquent.

The data indicate that children born out of wedlock are more likely than children born in wedlock to come under the care of the State by reason of the inability of parents or relatives to support them, and less likely to be committed because of parental neglect or improper home conditions. However, the main causes of child dependency—broken homes and low mentality, alcoholism, immorality,

and other delinquency on the part of the parents—exist to a much greater degree among children of illegitimate birth.

Length of time cared for.

At the end of the year or, if the child was discharged during the year, at the close of care, 4 per cent of the children of legitimate birth under prolonged care were less than 6 years of age, while 16 per cent of the children born out of wedlock were under this age. Between the ages of 6 and 13 years were 39 per cent of the children born in wedlock and 52 per cent of the children of illegitimate birth. More than half the children of legitimate birth—57 per cent—were 14 years of age or over, while less than one-third of the children born out of wedlock—32 per cent—had reached the age of 14. The larger proportion of children born in wedlock in the older age groups is due to the later age at which these children are received.

The average number of years the children of various ages had been cared for by the division of State minor wards is given in Table 24.

TABLE 24.—*Comparison of duration of care received by children of specified ages, born in wedlock and born out of wedlock.*

Age at end of period.	Children born in wedlock, under prolonged care, whose case records were numbered from 1 to 2,000.	Number of years under care.		Children born out of wedlock, under prolonged care, whose case records were numbered from 1 to 2,000.	Number of years under care.	
		Aggregate.	Average.		Aggregate.	Average.
Total.....	a 1,705	b 12,402.0	7.3	c 597	b 4,766.5	8.0
1 year.....	3	2.0	0.7	7	5.5	0.8
2-5 years.....	63	193.5	3.1	85	311.0	3.7
6-9 years.....	280	1,420.5	5.1	182	1,117.0	6.1
10-13 years.....	364	2,565.5	6.5	133	1,166.0	8.8
14 years and over.....	965	8,220.5	8.5	190	2,167.0	11.4

a Excluding 4 children born in wedlock: 1 less than 1 year of age, 2 whose ages were not reported, and 1, 14 years of age and over, for whom length of time under care was not reported.

b If time under care was less than 1 year, an approximate average of 6 months was used—22 children born in wedlock, 11 years; 7 children born out of wedlock, 3.5 years.

c Excluding 4 children born out of wedlock: 2 less than 1 year of age; 2 for whom length of time under care was not reported, 1 of whom was 11, and the other, 14 years of age.

In spite of the fact that 68 per cent of the children born out of wedlock were under 14 years of age at the close of care or the end of the year, while only 43 per cent of the children born in wedlock were under this age, the average number of years under care was greater for children of illegitimate than of legitimate birth. The children born out of wedlock had been cared for by the State for an average of 8 years, while the children of legitimate birth had been under care for an average of only 7.3 years. The difference is more marked in the older age groups. Children between the ages of 6 and 9 years who had been born out of wedlock had spent an

average of 6.1 years under the care of the State, while children of the same age who were of legitimate birth averaged 5.1 years under supervision. The average number of years under care for children 10 to 13 years of age was 8.8 in the case of children of illegitimate birth, and 6.5 in the case of those born in wedlock. Children of illegitimate birth who were 14 years of age and over had spent on an average 11.4 years under the care of the division

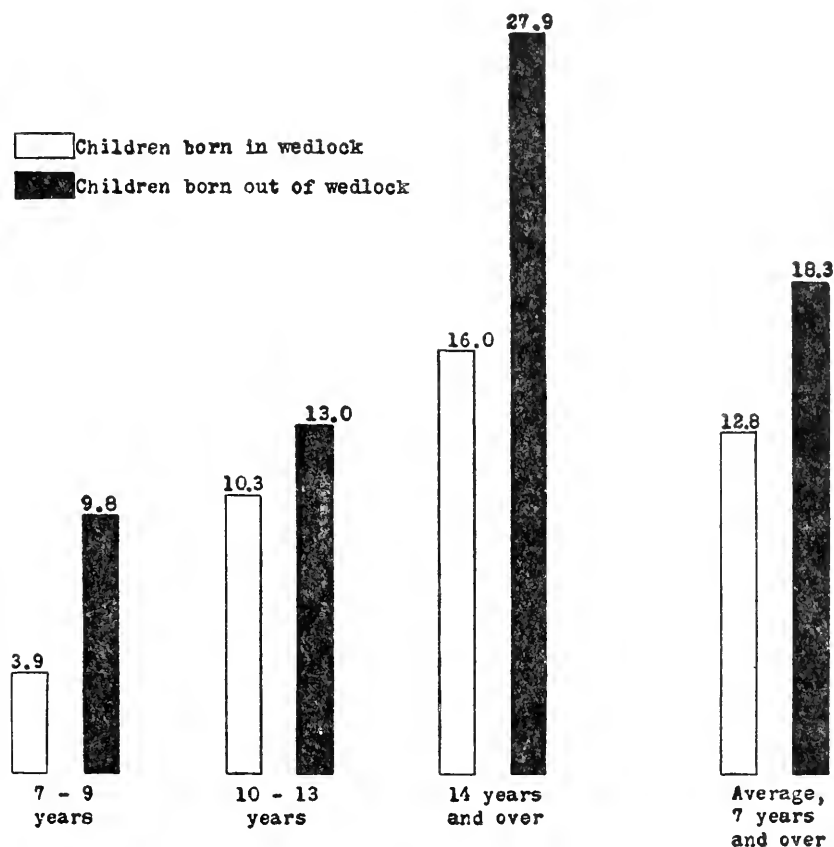


CHART VI.—Per cent of children 7 years of age and over, under care of the division of State minor wards in 1914, whose case records were numbered from 1 to 2,000, whose conduct was poor. (See p. 318.)

of State minor wards, while children of legitimate birth of the same age averaged only 8.5 years under care. These figures indicate the long periods over which children born out of wedlock are dependent upon the public for care and maintenance.

Personal characteristics.

Information concerning the child's mentality and his conduct at the end of the period studied was secured for 1,026 children of legiti-

mate birth who were 7 years of age and over and 461 children of illegitimate birth. Of the children born in wedlock, 112, or 10.9 per cent, had been diagnosed feeble-minded; 51 children born out of wedlock—11.1 per cent—had been so diagnosed. That the percentage of mental defect among children of illegitimate birth under the care of the division of State minor wards is practically the same as that found among children born in wedlock under care of the same agency is worthy of special remark. This controverts an opinion frequently expressed to the effect that dependent children of illegitimate birth are more likely to have a sound heritage than children of legitimate birth who must rely upon the public for support.

There were 914 children born in wedlock and 410 children born out of wedlock, who were not feeble-minded, concerning whose conduct information was obtained. (See Table 25.) The conduct of 13 per cent of the children of legitimate birth was reported as "poor," while the conduct of 18 per cent of the children born out of wedlock was so reported.

TABLE 25.—*Comparison of conduct of children 7 years of age and over born in wedlock and born out of wedlock.*

Age at end of period.	Children 7 years of age and over under care of division of State minor wards, 1914, whose case records were numbered from 1 to 2,000.					
	Born in wedlock.			Born out of wedlock.		
	Total.	Conduct good, so far as known.	Conduct poor.	Total.	Conduct good, so far as known.	Conduct poor.
Total.....	a 914	797	117	b 410	335	75
7-9 years.....	128	123	5	123	111	12
10-13 years.....	242	217	25	115	100	15
14 years and over.....	544	457	87	172	124	48

a Excluding 112 feeble-minded and 561 concerning whose conduct information was not obtained.

b Excluding 51 feeble-minded.

In each age group the percentage of children born out of wedlock whose conduct was unsatisfactory was higher than that of children born in wedlock. Of those 7 to 9 years of age, 4 per cent of the children born in wedlock were reported poor in conduct, while 10 per cent of those of illegitimate birth were thus described. In the 10-to-13-year age group 10 per cent of the children of legitimate birth and 13 per cent of those born out of wedlock were unsatisfactory. Of the children 14 years of age and over, 16 per cent of the children of legitimate birth were unsatisfactory, while 28 per cent—more than one-fourth—of the children of illegitimate birth presented serious problems of conduct.

The relative importance of heredity and environment as affecting conduct is a moot question. It is impossible to state whether the high percentage of children of illegitimate birth under the care

of the State who find it difficult to conform in a fairly satisfactory manner to required standards of behavior may be attributed to innate character defects and lack of stability or to the absence of normal home life and family ties. In this connection it is of interest to note that children born out of wedlock come under the care of the State at an earlier age than children of legitimate birth, and that a larger proportion of the former than of the latter are received because of the inability of the mother or relatives to support the child, and a smaller proportion because of parental neglect, improper home conditions, or their own delinquency. The evidence would seem to indicate that children who have been cared for during the first years of life in their own homes, undesirable though the homes may be, have an advantage over children cared for from early childhood in boarding or foster homes.

INFANTS UNDER TWO YEARS OF AGE REPORTED TO THE DIVISION OF STATE MINOR WARDS AS CARED FOR APART FROM THEIR RELATIVES.

Proportion of Infants Born out of Wedlock.

More than 2,000 infants under 2 years of age are reported each year to the State board of charity under the law requiring notice to the board of the reception of an infant under care or control by a person not related to the child by blood or marriage, or of the placing of an infant under the care and control of another for compensation. Between 40 and 50 per cent of these infants are of illegitimate birth. The number of infants reported and the per cent born out of wedlock are shown in Table 26 for each year of the 10-year period 1905 to 1914. The percentage born out of wedlock decreased between 1905 and 1909 and increased between 1909 and 1914.

TABLE 26.—*Number of infants reported to the State board of charity as cared for apart from their relatives, and per cent born out of wedlock, 1905 to 1914.*

Year. ^a	Infants under 2 years of age reported. ^b						
	Total. ^c	Born in wedlock.		Born out of wedlock.		Of unknown parentage.	
		Number.	Per cent.	Number.	Per cent.	Number.	Per cent.
1905.....	1,704	876	51.4	784	46.0	44	2.6
1906 ^d	2,037	1,073	52.7	884	43.4	80	3.9
1907.....	2,002	998	49.9	915	45.7	89	4.4
1908.....	2,302	1,192	51.8	1,004	43.6	106	4.6
1909.....	2,264	1,220	53.9	938	41.4	106	4.7
1910.....	2,164	1,210	55.9	842	38.9	112	5.2
1911.....	2,078	1,165	56.1	821	39.5	92	4.4
1912.....	2,169	1,178	54.3	883	40.7	108	5.0
1913.....	2,339	1,198	51.2	1,086	44.3	105	4.5
1914.....	2,205	1,033	46.8	1,085	49.2	87	4.0

^a Fiscal year of the State board of charity. For 1905 this year was from Oct. 1, 1904, to Sept. 30, 1905; for 1906, the 14-month period, Oct. 1, 1905, to Nov. 30, 1906; for the succeeding years, Dec. 1 to Nov. 30.

^b Figures derived from Twenty-seventh to Thirty-sixth Annual Reports of the State Board of Charity of Massachusetts, 1905-1914. Boston, 1906-1915.

^c Because of a small amount of duplication on account of transfers of supervision, the actual numbers of infants were somewhat less than the numbers given in the years specified. In 1907 the actual number was 1,925; in 1908, 2,215; in 1909, 2,054; in 1910, 2,099; in 1912, 2,103; in 1913, 2,263; in 1914, 2,136.

^d Fourteen-month period.

During the calendar year 1914 a total of 2,104 infants under 2 years of age were reported to the State board of charity as cared for apart from their relatives.¹⁰ Of these, 991, or 47 per cent, were born in wedlock; 1,037, or 49 per cent, were born out of wedlock; and 76, or 4 per cent, were of unknown parentage. Of the total reported, 108 were not cared for in private homes during the year but were in institutions. This analysis is confined to the 1,996 cared for in family homes. The status of the children was as follows:

Total.....	1,996
Born in wedlock.....	926
Born out of wedlock.....	995
Of unknown parentage.....	75

Fifty per cent of the children cared for in private families had been born out of wedlock. Of these 995, 152 were born in Boston during the year studied and were included in the chapter on the infant born out of wedlock. A total of 559 were included in the chapter on children of illegitimate birth under the care of social agencies; 113 of these children and 112 others were under the care of the division of State minor wards during the year.

Type of Supervision.

The kind of supervision the children received while they were cared for apart from their relatives is given in Table 27. In some cases more than one type of supervision was given during the period covered.

TABLE 27.—*Comparison of type of supervision received by infants born in wedlock and born out of wedlock, cared for apart from their relatives in private homes.*

Type of supervision.	Infants under 2 years of age reported to the State board of charity in 1914 as cared for apart from their relatives in private homes.			
	Total.	Born in wedlock.	Born out of wedlock.	Of unknown parentage.
Total.....	1,996	926	995	75
Agency supervision.....	1,215	544	611	60
State board of charity.....	365	a 150	b 161	c 54
Other public agency.....	44	c 24	c 18	c 2
Private agency.....	c 783	d 359	e 420	e 4
State board of charity and other public agency.....	12	5	7	.....
Other public agency and private agency.....	4	4	.....	.....
State board of charity and private agency.....	7	2	f 5	.....
No agency supervision (supervision by relatives or friends).....	781	382	384	15

a Includes 12 under no agency supervision part of the time.

b Includes 26 under no agency supervision part of the time.

c Includes 1 under no agency supervision part of the time.

d Includes 24 under no agency supervision part of the time.

e Includes 55 under no agency supervision part of the time.

f Includes 3 under no agency supervision part of the time.

¹⁰ The number reported during the fiscal year of the board, Dec. 1, 1913, to Nov. 30, 1914, was 2,136.

A total of 59 per cent of the children born in wedlock were under agency supervision while cared for apart from their relatives; 61 per cent of the children born out of wedlock were supervised by agencies. Most of those not receiving agency supervision were being privately boarded by their mothers, other relatives, or friends. The State board of charity supervised 16 per cent of the children born in wedlock and 16 per cent of those born out of wedlock. The majority of children given agency supervision were under the care of private agencies or institutions.

Age at End of Period and Length of Time Cared for Apart from Their Relatives.

Somewhat more than one-fifth of the children reached the age of 2 years during 1914. The records of these children automatically closed when they attained their second birthday. The ages of the children at the end of the year, or, if the record closed before that time, at the last date reported, are given in Table 28.

TABLE 28.—*Comparison of age, at the end of year or at last date reported, of infants born in wedlock and born out of wedlock, cared for apart from their relatives in private homes.*

Age attained at end of year or at last date reported.	Infants under 2 years of age reported to the State board of charity in 1914 as cared for apart from their relatives in private homes.			
	Total.	Born in wedlock.	Born out of wedlock.	Of unknown percentage.
Total.....	1,996	926	995	75
Less than 6 months.....	413	177	225	11
6 months but less than 1 year.....	413	194	209	10
1 year but less than 18 months.....	377	174	189	14
18 months but less than 2 years.....	314	162	138	14
2 years.....	439	202	215	22
Not reported.....	40	17	19	4

The percentage of children born in wedlock whose ages were reported, and who were less than 6 months of age at the end of the period, was 20; 23 per cent of the children born out of wedlock were under this age. Twenty-one per cent of the children of legitimate birth and 22 per cent of those born out of wedlock were between the ages of 6 months and 1 year; 19 per cent of the children born in wedlock and the same per cent of those of illegitimate birth were 1 year but less than 18 months; 18 per cent of the children of legitimate birth and 14 per cent of those born out of wedlock were between 18 months and 2 years of age; 22 per cent of the former and the same per cent of the latter reached the age of 2 during the year.

The percentage distribution was fairly even and was very similar for the two classes of children.

The total length of time the children had been cared for apart from their relatives, by the end of the year or the date of last record, is given in Table 29.

TABLE 29.—*Length of time infants born in wedlock and born out of wedlock were cared for apart from their relatives in private homes.*

Length of time cared for at end of year or last date reported.	Infants under 2 years of age reported to State board of charity in 1914 as cared for apart from their relatives in private homes.	
	Born in wedlock.	Born out of wedlock.
Total.....	926	995
Less than 6 months.....	468	380
6 months but less than 1 year.....	171	238
1 year but less than 18 months.....	143	163
18 months but less than 2 years.....	129	192
Not reported.....	15	22

Of the children born in wedlock whose ages were reported, 30 per cent had been cared for apart from their relatives in private homes one year or longer. The percentage of children born out of wedlock who had been cared for in this way for that length of time was considerably larger—36. The length of time cared for, together with the age of the child, is given for children born out of wedlock in Table 30.

TABLE 30.—*Length of time infants of specified ages, born out of wedlock, were cared for apart from their relatives in private homes.*

Age attained at end of year or last date reported.	Infants under 2 years of age, born out of wedlock, reported to State board of charity, in 1914, as cared for apart from their relatives in private homes.					
	Total.	Length of time cared for at end of year or last date reported.				
		Less than 6 months.	6 months but less than 1 year.	1 year but less than 18 months.	18 months but less than 2 years.	Not reported.
• Total.....	995	380	238	163	192	22
Less than 6 months.....	225	225	.....	.....	.....	.....
6 months but less than 1 year.....	209	91	118	.....	.....	.....
1 year but less than 18 months.....	189	33	70	84	.....	2
18 months but less than 2 years.....	138	16	23	43	56	.....
2 years.....	215	13	26	36	136	4
Not reported.....	19	2	1	.....	.....	16

More than half the children born out of wedlock who were between 6 months and 1 year of age had been cared for apart from their relatives in private homes at least 6 months. Four-fifths of the children aged 1 year but less than 18 months had been cared for in this way at least 6 months; more than two-fifths had been cared for at least 1 year. Nearly three-fourths of the children between the ages of 18 months and 2 years had been cared for apart from relatives at least 1 year; two-fifths had been so cared for at least 18 months. Almost two-thirds of the children who reached the age of 2 years had been cared for apart from relatives for at least a year and a half. The majority of the children had been cared for apart from their mothers before they had reached the age of 6 months, and they had thus been deprived of their mothers' care during the time it was most necessary to life and health.

There were a number of instances in which the child was shifted from one boarding home to another, or back and forth from boarding home to relatives. This frequent change in surroundings and in care very probably affected the child's health and development. Some of the worst instances of shifting among the children of illegitimate birth are here given. The records did not state the reasons for the changes.

A little girl was placed at board before she had reached the age of 2 months. After two months she was placed in another home, where she remained for only six days. She was discharged to her aunt, who placed her at board in another family, but after two weeks her boarding place was changed, and after another two weeks it was changed again. She stayed in the last boarding home the remaining four months of the year studied. In a period of seven months this infant had been in five different boarding homes. The child had not been under the supervision of agencies during the period described. (Case BB 10.)

When 11 days old a baby boy was placed at board in a private family by a child-caring agency. He remained in this home for seven months, when he was placed in another family home. Here he remained one month, when he was placed in a third home. After about five weeks the baby was boarded with a fourth family, where he lived for three weeks. At some time during this period the child-caring agency discharged him to relatives, and for the remainder of the period studied he was not under agency supervision. For the period of a little more than two weeks immediately following the child's removal from the fourth boarding home no information was available. He was soon placed with a fifth family, where he stayed for five months. At the end of that time his boarding place was again changed, and a sixth family took him for a period of one month. He was then placed in a seventh home, where he remained for more than six months and where he was still living at his second birthday when reports ceased. (Case BB 11.)

In April of the year studied a 3-months-old infant was placed at board by relatives or friends. He remained in this boarding home two months, when he was placed with a second family. Here he remained two months, when his

boarding home was again changed. For the remaining four months of the year he remained with the same family. (Case BB 12.)

An infant boarded throughout the year studied had been placed at board in December of the previous year at the age of 4 months. She was not under agency supervision. During the 12 months and 3 weeks she had been boarded she had been in four different family homes. (Case BB 13.)

SOCIAL SERVICE WORK WITH MOTHERS AND CHILDREN AT THE STATE INFIRMARY.

Description of the Work.

The State infirmary at Tewksbury provides almshouse and hospital care for indigent persons not chargeable for support to any city or town. During the year December 1, 1913, to November 30, 1914, 7,298 persons were under the care of this institution.¹¹ The maternity department of the infirmary gives confinement and maternity care to women from all over the State who are unable to establish legal settlement, and to a few for whom board is paid by the overseers of the poor of the town of settlement. Expectant mothers from the State institutions for delinquents and for the mentally defective are also sent here for maternity care. During the year studied there were 159 live births at the institution, 119 of which were illegitimate.¹²

The State board of charity has general supervision over this institution and passes upon the discharge of all sane inmates. In 1909 the two women members of the board began special work with the after-care of mothers and children discharged from the infirmary. The purpose of this work, as stated in the 1913 report, was:¹³

Primarily. To protect the welfare of the mothers and children and place them in such environment and under such supervision as will tend to develop them into useful and upright citizens.

Secondly. To segregate the defective who is found to be a menace to the community.

Thirdly. To enforce the responsibility of the husband or father.

The work developed, and a standing committee of the board known as the committee on social service was created to handle it. The visiting and investigating are done by women visitors for maternity cases at the infirmary and by volunteer workers in cooperation with physicians and nurses at the institution. A clerk with legal training is employed to aid in establishing paternity and securing support from the fathers.

¹¹ Thirty-sixth Annual Report of the State Board of Charity of Massachusetts for the Year Ending November 30, 1914. Boston, 1915. Pt. I, pp. 25, 26.

¹² Includes 5 registered as legitimate. The number of births registered as illegitimate was 114. See p. 271.

¹³ Thirty-fifth Annual Report of the State Board of Charity of Massachusetts for the Year Ending November 30, 1913. Boston, 1914. Pt. I, p. 124.

The activities of the committee comprise investigation of the cases before admission to the infirmary and during residence therein, securing cooperation from relatives and others, making arrangements for the care of mother and baby, for legal assistance in securing support from the father, and for the follow-up and after-care of the women and children discharged from the institution. The work is not limited to maternity cases. Mothers coming with their children for other than maternity care are also supervised, and many of the pregnant women are accompanied by children. Mothers sent to the infirmary for confinement from State institutions and those who are wards of the State do not come under the supervision of the committee, since they are already provided for. Children at the infirmary unaccompanied by their mothers are not dealt with by the committee, since the division of State minor wards handles all such cases needing assistance.

Overseers of the poor throughout the State are requested to notify the board as early as possible of the case of any pregnant girl or woman before sending her to the State infirmary. It is believed that the younger and less sophisticated women, especially those pregnant for the first time, should be cared for in other ways than at a public hospital, and attempts are made in these cases to secure other provision.

Before discharge from the infirmary, a protective plan is made for the mother and her child. Relatives are communicated with, mental examinations given mothers appearing to be below normal, arrangements for deportation made if the mother has been in this country but a short time, positions in domestic service secured, or other plans made. Every case is investigated from the point of view of legal action to secure support from the father, and all possible steps are taken toward this end.

In the after-care work the cooperation of private societies and of individuals is sought. Advice, counsel, and supervision are given, and every attempt is made to reestablish the mother in the community and to enable her to keep her child.

Proportion of Work Dealing with Children Born Out of Wedlock.

During the year studied a total of 316 women were under the supervision of the social service committee, including those at the infirmary and those given after-care. Of these women, 218 were accompanied by children born out of wedlock or were illegitimately pregnant; during the year, 184 of these were at the infirmary, and 34 were given after-care only. Twenty-five of those at the infirmary were discharged before the birth of the child, the child was not born until 1915, or the infant was stillborn; hence there were no children

born out of wedlock under care during the year. Therefore, there were 193 mothers whose children of illegitimate birth were given care during the year studied, 159 mothers receiving care at the infirmary during that period, and 34 given after-care only. These 193 mothers had 211 children of illegitimate birth under care. Of these children, 91 were born at the infirmary during the year,¹⁴ and 84 others were cared for at this institution, while 36 were given after-care only.

Children under Care, Born Out of Wedlock.

About one-third of the children of illegitimate birth under care during the year—71 out of 211—had come under the supervision of the committee previous to the year studied; two-thirds had come under care during the year, though in many of these cases the mother had been admitted during the previous year, the child having been born in the year studied. More than half the children (108) were discharged from care during the year, the others remaining under supervision at the end of the period.

Of the 211 children under care 102 were boys, 107 girls, and the sex of 2 was not reported. There were 194 white children, 16 negro, and 1 American Indian, the percentage of negroes being 8.

Only 2 children were known to be foreign born, 1 having been born in Canada and 1 in the West Indies. The nativity of 1 child was not reported. The other 208 children were born in the New England States, the nativity of 205 being Massachusetts. Seventy per cent of all the children born out of wedlock—148 of 211—were born at the State infirmary. The nativity of the children is summarized as follows:

Total under care.....	211
Massachusetts.....	205
Boston.....	36
Metropolitan district outside Boston.....	10
State infirmary.....	148
Other Massachusetts.....	11
Other New England.....	3
Foreign.....	2
Not reported.....	1

The residence of the child at the time of entering the infirmary, or of the mother if the child was unborn, was as follows:

Total under care.....	211
Massachusetts.....	201
Boston.....	83
Metropolitan district outside Boston.....	29
Other Massachusetts.....	89
Other.....	9
Not reported.....	1

¹⁴ The total number of illegitimate births in the infirmary during the year was 119, but in 28 cases the child was under other supervision than that of the social service committee.

The residence of almost two-fifths was Boston; and of more than half, Boston or the metropolitan district. More than two-fifths lived in other parts of the State. It must be remembered that residence does not imply legal settlement, and that most of, if not all, these cases were not chargeable to any town for poor relief.

The 83 children whose residence was Boston were also included in the study of children born out of wedlock under care of Boston agencies and of State agencies so far as they dealt with Boston children. Twenty-nine other children were also included in the Boston study, having been under the care of Boston agencies during the year. Nine children included in the Boston study and 8 others were under the care of the division of State minor wards during the period studied.

Thirty-five children had brothers or sisters also under care of the social-service committee during the year. The total number of families represented by the 211 children was 193. In 176 of these cases one child only was under care; in 16, two children were being cared for; and in 1, three children were under care.

Most of the children were very young when they were received for care by the infirmary and the social service committee. In 148 of the 211 cases the mother entered the infirmary before the birth of the child. In 38 other cases the child was less than 1 year of age. The ages of the children at the beginning of care were as follows:

Total under care		211	
Under care from birth	¹⁵ 148	2 years	7
Less than 3 months	29	3 years	6
3-5 months	5	4 years and over	3
6-11 months	4	Not reported	¹⁶ 1
1 year	8		

In 63 cases the mother and child came under care subsequent to the child's birth. Before entering the infirmary 57 of these children had been living with their mothers, 5 had been provided for away from their mothers, and in one case it was not reported whether or not the child was with the mother. Twenty-five children who had been with their mothers and 2 of those away from their mothers had been under the supervision of agencies.

Of the 57 children who had been living with their mothers before entering the State infirmary, 7 had been living in the mothers' own homes or other independent establishments, 3 in the homes of maternal grandparents, 4 in the homes of other relatives, 8 in homes in which the mothers were employed at housework, 6 in a public in-

¹⁵ Includes 1 child 2 years of age who had been born at the infirmary but had been discharged from care. He returned to the institution with his mother when she was again illegitimately pregnant.

¹⁶ Not under care from birth.

firmory or maternity home, and 12 in hospitals. The location of 8 was not reported. All but 2 of the children who had been in infirmaries, maternity homes, or hospitals immediately before entering the State infirmary were under 3 months of age. Three of the 5 children who had been away from their mothers were in boarding or free homes, 1 was in an institution, and the location of 1 was not reported.

The application to the infirmary for the care of these mothers and children came in most cases from the overseers of the poor. In 7 instances private agencies made application; and in 8 cases private individuals. The applications for the care of 196 children came from overseers of the poor or other public agencies.

The need for maternity care was the reason given for application in 147 cases—70 per cent of the total. In 20 cases the illness of the mother and in 2 her defective mentality were given as reasons for care being needed. In 42 cases other reasons were assigned, chiefly the mother's inability to provide for herself and her child.

Of the 211 children under care born out of wedlock 30 died during the year and 78 were discharged from care. All but 2 of those who died were under 1 year of age at death, 22 being less than 6 months old. Of the 78 discharged from care, 43 were less than 6 months old; 14, from 6 to 11 months of age; 11, 1 year old; and 10, 2 years of age and over. The length of time under care for the children who died or were discharged was as follows:

Total who died or were discharged.....	108
Less than 6 months.....	87
6 to 11 months.....	14
1 year.....	5
2 years.....	1
3 years.....	1

There were 103 children remaining under care at the close of the year. Of these, 28 were less than 6 months of age; 24, 6 to 11 months; 28, 1 year; 16, 2 years; and 7, 3 years and over. The length of time these children had been cared for up to the end of the year studied was as follows:

Total remaining under care.....	103
Less than 6 months.....	36
6 to 11 months.....	27
1 year.....	27
2 years.....	13

At the end of the year or immediately previous to death or discharge from care, 181 of the 211 children—86 per cent—were with their mothers and 30 were away from their mothers. Of the 93 children less than 6 months old at the end of the period, 88 were with their mothers and 5 away; of the 44 children 6 to 11 months of age, 35 were with and 9 were away from their mothers; of the 74 children 1 year of age and over, 58 were living with and 16 had been separated from their mothers.

The homes or places of residence of the children who were with their mothers at the end of the period were as follows:

Total with their mothers-----		181	
Mother's own home-----	4	Public infirmary-----	88
Home of maternal grandparents--	27	Hospital-----	1
Home of other relatives or friends	17	Other institution-----	1
Boarding-----	4	Not reported-----	1
Mother's place of employment----	38		

Slightly more than one-fourth of the children with their mothers were living in the mothers' own homes, mothers' parental homes, or in the homes of other relatives or friends. A little more than one-fifth were living in their mothers' places of employment. Almost half were still in the public infirmary at the end of the period.

Of the 58 children 1 year of age and over who were with their mothers at the end of the period, 12 were living in the mothers' own homes or parental homes, with other relatives, or with friends; 3 were boarding with their mothers; 23 were living in the mothers' places of employment; and 20 were still at the public infirmary.

Of the 30 children who were living away from their mothers at the end of the period, 7 were living with their maternal grandparents or with other relatives; 1 of these children had been adopted by relatives. Eleven were boarding, 1 had been adopted by others than relatives, 5 were still at the infirmary, 1 was in a hospital, 3 were in other institutions, and the home or place of residence of 2 was not reported.

The care of 108 children terminated during the year, 30 having died and 78 having been discharged from care. The persons to whom discharged and the reasons for closing the cases of the 78 discharged were as follows:

Total discharged from care-----	78
Discharged to mother-----	42
Mother able to care for child-----	8
Mother and father married each other-----	4
Mother married, but not to father-----	1
Mother and child deported-----	27
Other disposition made-----	1
Mother and child disappeared, and impossible to locate-----	1
Discharged to maternal relatives-----	6
Relatives able to care for child-----	4
Child adopted by relatives-----	1
Other disposition made-----	1
Assumed by private agencies-----	10
Assumed by public agencies-----	20
Mother and child to be deported-----	3
Discharged for other reasons-----	17

A total of 30 children—14 per cent of all the children of illegitimate birth under care during the year—were deported. Nine of those de-

ported were returned to Canada, 2 to the West Indies, and 19 to European countries. Five of the mothers who were returned to Canada had been pregnant on arrival in this country. The 2 children returned to the West Indies were brother and sister; one had been born in the West Indies, and the other had been born shortly after the mother's arrival in this country.

Besides the 30 children who died during the year, 23 were reported in poor physical condition; the health of 158 children was good, so far as known. Since all these children had been under the care of the State infirmary, it is probable that any defect or disease would have been reported. The percentage who died or were in poor physical condition was 25. Of the 30 children who died, 7 had syphilis, 1 had gonorrheal infection, 2 were tubercular, 1 was blind, and 19 were in otherwise poor condition. Of the 23 children in poor condition who were living at the end of the period, 7 had syphilis, 1 had gonorrheal infection resulting in blindness, 1 was suspected of having syphilis, 1 was rachitic, and 13 were in otherwise poor condition. Seven and one-half per cent of all the children born out of wedlock under care were syphilitic or had gonorrheal infection, 6.6 per cent of all being syphilitic.

Status of the Mother.

The mothers who come to the State infirmary with children born out of wedlock or to secure maternity care are, in a sense, a residual group. Because of recent arrival in this country or absence of legal settlement in the State, they have been unable to secure care in the towns in which they were living when their need became urgent. Those living in communities well served by private agencies or institutions would probably have been provided for locally had not their physical or mental condition or their general reputation and character discouraged private agencies from assuming responsibility. Maternity homes do not, as a rule, admit women who are venereally diseased or who are illegitimately pregnant for a second time. In Massachusetts it is possible for private agencies to turn over their most difficult cases to the State—both mother and baby cases and cases where the child alone is to be provided for.

As an indication of the extent to which the mothers at the infirmary represent a special group of women who become mothers of children out of wedlock is the comparison, in Table 31, of the 193 mothers of children born out of wedlock who were under the care of the social-service committee of the State board of charity in 1914 and the 840 mothers of infants born out of wedlock in Boston during the same year.¹⁷

¹⁷ See pp. 105-126.

TABLE 31.—*Comparison of characteristics of mothers of children of illegitimate birth under care of the social-service committee of the State board of charity and of mothers of infants born out of wedlock in Boston.*

Item.	Per cent of 193 mothers of children of illegitimate birth under care of social-service committee.	Per cent of 840 mothers of infants born out of wedlock in Boston.
Race: Belonging to Negro race.....	6.2	6.2
Nativity:		
Foreign born.....	72.0	40.1
Known to have been in the United States less than 5 years ^a	39.9	11.5
Age at birth of child: ^b		
Under 21 years.....	30.6	41.0
21-24 years.....	37.3	31.1
25 years and over.....	32.1	22.3
Not reported.....		5.7
Civil condition:		
Single.....	85.0	c 92.9
Married, widowed, divorced, deserted.....	15.0	c 7.1
Physical condition:		
Poor (including physical defects, diseases, or general poor condition).....	48.7	c 24.1
Syphilis or gonorrhea.....	28.5	c 8.5
Mental condition:		
Diagnosed subnormal, abnormal, or feeble-minded.....	25.9	c 13.3
Diagnosed feeble-minded.....	17.1	c 8.8
Character:		
Alcoholic, immoral, ^d otherwise delinquent, or otherwise poor.....	63.7	c 42.2
Immoral ^d	56.0	c 31.5
Other children: Having more than one child of illegitimate birth.....	39.9	c 9.9
Occupation:		
Gainfully employed.....	c 95.7	c 85.8
Domestic servants.....	c 50.0	c 35.6
Semiskilled factory operatives.....	c 29.3	c 23.0
Mode of living at application: Parental home.....	c 13.5	c 36.2
Mother's family:		
One or both parents dead, not in the United States, divorced, or separated.....	84.5	31.1
One or both parents reported of poor character.....	20.2	12.7

^a At birth of oldest child included in the study. Includes 2 mothers whose children were foreign born.

^b In case of mothers under care of the social-service committee, age at birth of oldest child included in the study.

^c Per cent of total reported.

^d Including only sex irregularities other than those connected with the cases of illegitimate maternity studied.

From this comparison it would appear that the proportion of foreign born among the mothers cared for at the infirmary is much larger than among an unselected group of mothers of children born out of wedlock, and that among the former group a larger percentage have been in the United States less than five years. The proportion of women 25 years of age and over is greater, and the percentage under 21 is smaller among the mothers cared for at the infirmary; the proportion of married, widowed, divorced, or deserted women is larger than in the unselected group. The numbers of mothers in poor physical condition, below normal mentally, and of poor character are proportionately great, as is the number having more than one child out of wedlock.

More of the mothers under the care of the social service committee than of the unselected group of mothers were gainfully employed, and larger proportions had been employed as domestic servants and as semiskilled factory workers. Fewer were living in their parental homes. Indeed, most of the mothers at the infirmary or given after-

care had no parental homes in this country upon which they could rely for assistance.

Status of the Father and His Contribution to the Support of the Child.

Information as to the status of the father was fragmentary. Age was reported for the fathers of 67 of the 211 children born out of wedlock who were under care. The fathers of 6 were under 21 years of age; of 48, between the ages of 21 and 29; and of 13, 30 years of age and over. The fathers of 86 children were single; of 24, married; of 3, widowed; of 6, separated, deserted, or divorced. Civil condition was not reported in 92 cases.

Data as to occupation were obtained for the fathers of 114 children. Their occupations were as follows:

Total whose histories reported occupation of father.....		114
Proprietors	5	Servants..... 14
Clerks and kindred workers.....	5	Semiofficial public employees.. 7
Skilled workers.....	24	Professional persons..... 5
Semiskilled workers.....	31	Not gainfully employed..... 1
Laborers	22	

Court action was known to have been initiated for the support of 34 of the 211 children. Orders for periodic payments were made in 11 cases. Certificates were filed in 4 cases stating that adequate provision for the child's support had been made. The parents of 3 children married each other. In one instance the father was sentenced to the house of correction with an order that his wages earned there should be paid for the child's support. The court case was closed without any provision for the child's support in 9 cases, and 6 cases were pending at the end of the year or the close of care. In a total of 19 of the 34 court cases, support for the child was arranged as a result of court action before the end of the year or the close of care.

In addition to the 19 children for whom provision was made through court action, there were 29 to whose support the father had at some time contributed. In 6 of these cases the father and mother married each other; in 4 they had been living as married or illegally married. The fathers of 4 children contributed regularly to their support; the fathers of 7 made irregular contributions. In 5 cases settlement was made out of court, whereby the father paid a lump sum for the benefit of mother and child. In 3 instances the father paid part of or all the expenses of the mother's pregnancy and confinement, but made no other payments for the child's benefit.

There were 62 cases in which no support from the father was obtained and court action had not been initiated at the end of the year or the close of care. In 86 instances no report was secured as to contributions to support or court action. The 48 children to whose support the fathers were known to have contributed comprised 23 per cent of the total under care.

CHAPTER 3. THE ADOPTION OF CHILDREN BORN OUT OF WEDLOCK.

Adoption is the legal process by which a child is received into the home of the adopting persons as their own child and acquires practically the same status in respect to the adopting parents as that of their natural children. By this means children whose parents are dead or are unable to provide for them are given the advantages of normal home life and natural family and social relationships. Under the right circumstances and conditions this method is probably the ideal way of providing for orphaned children or for children whose parents will never be able to care for them. It is a method which has been widely followed, both by individuals confronted with the problem of provision for homeless children and by organized social agencies and institutions. It has, however, been subject to much abuse. The desire of the unmarried mother to be relieved of the burden of providing for her child—with all the economic and social difficulties involved—and the longing of childless men and women for children whom they may take as their own has been commercialized by unscrupulous persons. Agencies and institutions have placed children for adoption without adequate consideration of their histories, family circumstances, or physical and mental condition, or of the character of the homes into which they were to be adopted. The need for careful and adequate investigation before adoption is decreed by the court is becoming more and more evident.

As has been pointed out in previous chapters of this report, agencies and institutions in Massachusetts have been extremely careful in the matter of adoption. The belief is general that natural family ties should not be completely severed if there is any possibility that in the future the child's own parents may be able to establish a suitable home, and also that adoption should not take place unless the child gives promise of normal development and the adopting parents are in every way able to provide adequately for him. A trial period is usually required before the legal adoption. However, the problem of adoption through private individuals is present. The practice of "adoption through advertisement"—that is, of advertising children for adoption through the newspapers—has attracted considerable attention, and a committee of public and private agencies in Boston, on which the State board of charity is represented, investigates as many such cases as possible and prevents many unsuitable adoptions.

As a part of this study of illegitimacy as a child-welfare problem, the adoption records of the probate courts of four counties, so far as they concerned children born out of wedlock, were consulted. These were Suffolk County—the greater part of which the city of Boston comprises—and the three contiguous counties of Essex, Middlesex, and Norfolk. The population of these four counties constitutes 60 per cent of the population of the State.¹

ADOPTION LAWS IN MASSACHUSETTS.

Under the adoption laws of Massachusetts,² the petition for adoption must be made to the probate court of the county in which the petitioner resides or, if the petitioner is not a resident of the State, of the county in which the child resides. The person petitioning for leave to adopt must be of full age and older than the person he adopts. Adoption by a husband or wife, or by a brother, sister, nephew, or niece, of the whole or of half blood, is forbidden. If the petitioner has a husband or wife living who is competent to join in the petition, the husband or wife must join therein, and upon adoption the person adopted is to all legal intents and purposes the child in law of both.

The written consent of the child himself is necessary if he is above the age of 14 years. If a married woman is to be adopted, the consent of her husband also is required. In all cases other than those expressly excepted written consent must be obtained from the lawful parents or surviving parent; from the parent having lawful custody, if the parents are divorced or living separately; from the guardian of the child, if any; from the mother only of a child born out of wedlock; or from the person substituted for any of the above named by the provisions of the law. The law provides that illegitimacy shall in no case be expressly averred upon the record. The court has held, however, that the entry "Child of M. J., single woman," is not a violation of this provision.³

If the child is of full age, no other consent than that of the child, or of the child and her husband, if any, is necessary. The law specifies certain circumstances under which the consent of a parent or other person named, other than the child, is not required. These include: Hopeless insanity; sentence to a correctional institution with more than three years remaining; willful desertion or neglect for two years last preceding the date of the petition; suffering the child to be supported for more than two years continuously, prior to

¹ See p. 271.

² R. L. 1902 ch. 154 secs. 1, 2 as amended by acts 1904 ch. 302, 3 as amended by acts 1907 ch. 405 and 4 as amended by acts 1915 ch. 53 secs. 5-11.

³ *Purinton v. Jamrock* (1907) 195 Mass. 197. Cited in *Manual of Laws Relating to the State Board of Charity of Massachusetts*. Boston, 1915. P. 272.

the petition, by an incorporated charitable institution, or as a pauper by a city or town or by the State; sentence to imprisonment for drunkenness upon a third conviction within one year and neglect to provide proper care and maintenance; conviction on specified sex charges and neglect to provide proper care and maintenance. Giving up the child in writing, for the purpose of adoption, to an incorporated charitable institution operates as consent to any adoption subsequently approved by the institution. If the child is supported as a pauper by a city or town, notice must be given to the State board of charity and the overseers of the poor, and, if supported by the city of Boston, notice must also be given to the trustees for children of that city. If supported by the State, notice must be given the State board of charity.

If the written consent required is not submitted to the court with the petition, the court orders notice of the petition by personal service, or if the persons are not found within the State, by publication. If the child is of unknown parentage and is a foundling, publication is not required, but notice must be given the State board of charity.⁴ If after notice the person whose consent is required does not appear and object to the petition, the court may act without his consent, subject to his right of appeal, or may appoint a guardian at law with power to give or withhold consent.

Before entering the decree of adoption the court must be satisfied of the identity and relations of the persons and that the petitioner is of sufficient ability to bring up the child and provide suitable support and education for it, and that the child should be adopted. Under this clause adequate social investigation could be made and wide discretion used by the court.

The effect of the decree of adoption is: (*a*) To create between the child and the petitioner and his kindred all rights, duties, and other legal consequences of the natural relation of child and parent, except as regards succession to property; (*b*) to terminate such rights, duties, and legal consequences between the child and his natural parents or kindred or any previous adopting parent, except as regards marriage, incest, or cohabitation; (*c*) change of name may be decreed by the court; (*d*) the person adopted takes the same share of the property which the adopting parent can dispose of by will as he would have taken if born to the parent in lawful wedlock, and stands in regard to the legal descendants, but to no other kindred of the adopting parent in the same position as if born to him; but a person does not by adoption lose his right to inherit from his natural parents or kindred.

⁴ This provision was not in effect during the year of the study but was added to the law by an amendment in 1915.

Appeal from the decree of adoption may be allowed a parent by the supreme judicial court under circumstances specified in the law.

In regard to the adoption of infants under 2 years of age, the law provides additional safeguards. Whoever receives an infant under 2 years of age for adoption or for giving him a home or for procuring a home or adoption for him must, before receiving the child, ascertain his name, age, and birthplace and the name and residence of his parent or parents, and must keep a record of these facts and of the date of reception. Upon reception of the infant he must give notice in writing to the State board of charity and must give the required information upon the request of the board. Within two days after the child's discharge, notice in writing of the discharge and the disposition made must be given. The board may investigate the case and, at any time previous to a decree of adoption, take the infant into its custody if in the judgment of the board the public interest and the protection of the infant so require.⁵

Still further protection is given children born out of wedlock. The law provides:

Whoever receives an infant under the age of three years for board or for the purpose of procuring adoption shall use due diligence to ascertain whether it is illegitimate, and if he knows or has reason to believe it is, he shall forthwith notify the State board of charity of such reception. The members, officers, or agents of said board may enter and inspect any building where they have reason to believe such illegitimate infant is boarded and remove it, if they believe that, by reason of neglect, abuse, or other cause, its removal is necessary to preserve its life. Such infant shall be in the custody of said board, which shall make provision therefor according to law.⁷

PROPORTION OF ADOPTION CASES INVOLVING CHILDREN BORN OUT OF WEDLOCK.

During the year 1914 there were 441 petitions for adoption before the probate courts of Essex, Middlesex, Suffolk, and Norfolk Counties. (See Table 32.) Almost half the cases—46 per cent—were known to have involved children born out of wedlock. In Middlesex County the percentage was 43, and in Suffolk 49. These percentages must be considered understatements in view of the fact that the law provides that illegitimacy is not to be "expressly averred upon the record."

That almost half the adoption cases involved children born out of wedlock indicates a much higher proportion of such children who are adopted than is the case among children born in wedlock. Only 4.4 per cent of the children born in Boston in the year covered by the

⁵ R. L. 1902, ch. 83, sec. 11. Manual of Laws Relating to the State Board of Charity of Massachusetts. Boston, 1915. Pp. 102-103.

⁷ R. L. 1902, ch. 83, sec. 17. Manual of Laws Relating to the State Board of Charity of Massachusetts. Boston, 1915. P. 104.

study were born out of wedlock.⁸ The number of adoption cases involving children of illegitimate birth (204) was about 16 per cent of the number of births registered as illegitimate in the four counties studied.⁹ It must be borne in mind that the number of illegitimate births, as well as the number of adoption cases, are understatements.

TABLE 32.—*Adoption cases before the courts of Essex, Middlesex, Suffolk, and Norfolk Counties, 1914.*

County.	Estimated population, 1914.	Adoption cases before the courts of four counties.			
		Total.	Status of child.		
			Born in wedlock, so far as known.	Known to have been born out of wedlock.	Foundlings and pseudo-foundlings.
Total.....	2,195,771	441	224	204	15
Essex.....	459,515	94	^a 51	39	4
Middlesex.....	724,074	153	83	66	4
Suffolk.....	814,713	153	76	75	2
Norfolk.....	197,469	41	^b 14	24	3

^a There were 52 children involved in these 51 cases.

^b There were 18 children involved in these 14 cases.

AGE OF CHILD AND RELATIONSHIP OF PERSON ADOPTING.

The ages of the children born out of wedlock for whose adoption petitions were filed were as follows:

Total children.....	204
Less than 1 year.....	37
1 year.....	34
2 years.....	36
3 years.....	29
4 years.....	12
5 years.....	11
6-9 years.....	23
10 years and over.....	22

Only 52 per cent of the children were under 3 years of age, the age under which reports of reception for the purpose of adoption of infants born out of wedlock must be made to the State board of charity.¹⁰ Twenty-six per cent were 3 to 5 years of age, inclusive, and 22 per cent were 6 years of age and over.

In 36 cases—18 per cent—the petition was made by relatives. The relationship of the person adopting was as follows:

Total children.....	204
Father.....	2
Mother and stepfather.....	19
Maternal grandparents.....	7
Other relatives.....	8
Not related.....	159
Not reported.....	9

⁸ See p. 85.

⁹ See p. 271. The total number of births registered as illegitimate in the counties of Essex, Middlesex, Suffolk, and Norfolk was 1,283.

¹⁰ See p. 336.

The provision of the law which requires the husband or wife of the petitioner to join in the petition makes it necessary for a mother to adopt her own child if the stepfather makes the petition. In 9 per cent of all the cases involving children born out of wedlock the mother and her husband were the petitioners. It is interesting to note that in the year following that in which this study was made a child born out of wedlock was adopted by his own father and mother.

In 30 of the 204 cases involving children born out of wedlock the child had been given temporary or prolonged care by the division of State minor wards during the year. Thirteen of these children and 18 others were included in the study of children under care of Boston agencies.¹¹

Sixteen of the children whose adoption was petitioned were born in Boston in 1914. Twenty-one infants born out of wedlock in Boston during that year were adopted in 1915 through the courts of the counties studied, 12 of them being less than 1 year of age at the time of adoption. Adoption was petitioned in the courts studied for a total of 28 infants born out of wedlock in Boston in 1914 and under 1 year of age at the time the petitions were filed. Hence, before they had reached 1 year of age, petitions were filed in the four courts studied for the adoption of 3 per cent of the 847 infants born in Boston during one year. One of the infants born in Boston in 1914 was adopted twice in 1915—first, at the age of 9 months through the Suffolk County court, and, second, at the age of a year and a half in the county of Norfolk. Why the first adopting parents gave the child up was not stated.

The family histories of the children adopted were given only for those children known to Boston or State agencies and for a few other cases in which the adoption record contained fairly complete information. The absence of investigation of cases not known to social agencies and the consequent lack of information in regard to the child and the persons desiring to adopt must result, in some instances at least, in decrees being given when the adoption is not to the best interests of all concerned.

The following cases illustrate defective heritage. The children were so young that it could not be determined whether or not their development would be likely to be normal.

A child of 2 years was adopted in 1914 through one of the courts studied. The record stated that the mother was insane and an inmate of a State hospital. For a long time previous to her commitment to this institution she had been an inmate of a town almshouse. The child had been supported by the town since birth. The petitioners were certified to be of good character, childless, and to have a comfortable home. (Case, Nor. 49-7.)

¹¹ See Sec. I, ch. 2. This chapter also included Boston children under care of State agencies.

An infant born in Boston in 1914 was adopted when 11 months old. She had been born at the public infirmary. Her mother was feeble-minded and was later admitted to a State institution for the care of mental defectives; she had served two sentences in a reformatory, had been an inmate of a house of prostitution, and had had a venereal infection. The child's maternal grandmother was reported as "queer," and the maternal grandfather as having been intemperate. One maternal aunt was feeble-minded and one immoral. A cousin was an inmate of an institution for the feeble-minded. The outlook for the child was not promising. (Case B 717.)

CHAPTER 4. THE RELATION BETWEEN DELINQUENCY AND ILLEGITIMACY.

CHILDREN COMMITTED AS DELINQUENTS TO STATE INSTITUTIONS.¹

Introduction.

The adverse environmental conditions which are the lot of so large a number of children born out of wedlock would seem to make difficult the development of normal character. From the preceding chapters of the study it appears that a considerable proportion of these children of unfortunate birth are subject to the types of influences that form the background for delinquency. Children of illegitimate birth are not born into normal homes, and many of them suffer throughout childhood from the lack of natural home life. Often circumstances attendant upon birth out of wedlock involve positive, adverse conditions which undermine moral stamina. A potent but less tangible influence touching children of illegitimate birth is the psychological effect which their peculiar relation to society has upon their attitude toward life.

Children born out of wedlock frequently start life with a heritage of mental subnormality, or of immorality and delinquency, or in their shiftings about are subjected to detrimental influences. Other parts of the study have shown the large amount of alcoholism, sexual irregularity, and other forms of delinquent behavior incident in the heritage and environment of these children.

Children without normal home guidance more often than other children become in need of the strong discipline of the State. Mothers who are obliged to assume double parental responsibility, often working away from home to earn bare livelihoods for themselves and their children, struggle against almost insurmountable difficulties in guiding and training them. A large number of children born out of wedlock are provided for in foster homes. This type of home lacks the strong ties of blood relationship which impel a family to exert every effort to care for and control a difficult child, rather than give him over to a disciplinary agency. Children not living with their parents are frequently subjected to shiftings from one home to another, with consequent disturbance of social relationships and difficulty of adaptation to new surroundings.

¹ This section of the chapter was prepared by Miss Evelina Belden.

Purpose and Sources of Study.

For the purpose of securing more intensive information regarding the interrelationship of birth out of wedlock and delinquency, a special study was made of the wards of certain State institutions. An attempt was made to estimate the proportion of these wards who were of illegitimate birth, to discover any differences between those born out of wedlock and others, and to analyze some of the conditions in their lives which formed the background of their delinquency. The inquiry was limited to records from the three State schools receiving juvenile delinquents and their parole departments, and to records of girls under 21 years of age in the care of the reformatory for women.

The three schools from which material was secured have the following jurisdiction, as described in a report of the State board of charity:²

Thé Lyman School for Boys at Westborough, the Industrial School for Boys at Shirley, and the Industrial School for Girls at Lancaster are the three industrial schools provided for by the State for juvenile delinquents. They are administered by a single board of trustees. * * * Boys under 15 years of age may be committed to the Lyman School, and under 18 years of age to the school at Shirley. Girls under 17 go to the institution at Lancaster. All persons committed remain under the control of the trustees during minority. For greater efficiency in administration, the Lyman School cares for boys under 15, while those over that age go to Shirley.

The trustees of the training schools also maintain two parole departments, one for boys and one for girls, under whose care children paroled from the three institutions remain during minority. The training schools and parole departments are under the general supervision of the State board of charity, and a history of each case is kept on file in the division of State minor wards. More complete records are kept in the schools and in the girls' parole department.

The Massachusetts Reformatory for Women receives girls and women 15 years of age and over for offenses of all types, under determinate or indeterminate sentences as specified by the judges of the courts. Women paroled from this institution are released to the agent for aiding discharged female prisoners, employed by the board of prison commissioners.

The wards included in the study were those in the four institutions or under the parole departments of the training schools during some part of 1914. The original information for the training-school children was secured from the records of the division of State minor wards. The more complete data for the boys, not being available in

²Thirty-sixth Annual Report of the Massachusetts State Board of Charity for the Year Ending November 30, 1914. Boston, 1915. Pt. I, p. 33.

Boston, were not secured. The records of the women on parole from the women's reformatory were not examined.

Proportion of Wards of Correctional Institutions Who Were Born Out of Wedlock.

The only figures secured in this study giving any reliable index of the proportion of wards of institutions for delinquents who had been born out of wedlock were those for girls committed to the institutions studied during the year 1914. A total of 184 girls under 21 years of age were committed, of whom 17, or 9.2 per cent, were of illegitimate birth. In the investigations for the girls received during this period special efforts were made to determine parentage, hence the proportion obtained represents a high degree of accuracy. Since the complete records for the boys' cases were not available in Boston, no estimate of the proportion who had been born out of wedlock was attempted. Such information as was secured would seem to indicate either that a smaller proportion of delinquent boys are of illegitimate birth or that the facts of parentage are more often lost sight of. The estimate given for girls should therefore not be considered as indicative of the proportionate number of all delinquents who are of illegitimate birth.

The percentage—9.2—of girls born out of wedlock among the delinquent girls committed during 1914 is very nearly that obtained from a comparison of all girls under care of the industrial school for girls and the girls' parole department in 1914, without regard to the time of commitment. Of these 744 girls 60, or 8.1 per cent, were of illegitimate birth. The fact that this is slightly lower than the first figure is probably due largely to the less complete social information for the earlier commitments.

The proportion of delinquent girls who had been born out of wedlock was large in comparison with the proportion of such children in the community. In 1914, 2.3 per cent of all live births in the State of Massachusetts were registered as illegitimate. In Boston during the same year the percentage of illegitimate births, corrected by information secured from social agencies, was 4.4. The mortality among infants born out of wedlock was shown to be three times that among infants of legitimate birth.³ Hence the 9.2 per cent of delinquent girls who were of illegitimate birth is considerably in excess of the proportion of children born out of wedlock in the general population.

The factors coincident with illegitimacy are much more closely allied with dependency and neglect than with delinquency. Less

³ See pp. 85, 90, 270.

than one-tenth of the girls committed to institutions for delinquents had been born out of wedlock. In contrast to this is the proportion—almost one-fourth—of children under care of the division of State minor wards during 1914 who were of illegitimate birth. The proportion of delinquents who are of illegitimate birth would thus seem to be materially smaller than the proportion of dependents.

Distribution.

A total of 102 children known to have been born out of wedlock were found to have been under the care of the four institutions and the two parole departments during some part of the year covered by the study. This number represents a minimum, because the number of boys is probably understated. Of the 102 children, 66 were girls, and 36 boys. As before explained this proportion is not a true ratio of boys to girls. There is no reason, however, to think that the boys were in any way a selected group. Three-fourths of the children—76 out of 102—had been committed to the institutions previous to 1914, and of these 1 died and 10 were discharged during the year. A third of the children were on parole during the entire year covered by the study, or during that part of the year previous to discharge; 20 others were in the institutions part of the year and on parole the remainder of the year. Of the 10 discharged from care 9 were of age and 1—a boy of 18 on parole—was arrested and committed to another correctional institution.

Although many of the children had been committed previous to 1914—some of them five or more years before—yet their problems need not be considered as in any wise different from those of children admitted during 1914; for there had been no such recent gain or loss in probation work in the State as would cause a difference in the types of cases sent to institutions, and there had been no change of policy in regard to the ages of children committed, their terms of commitment, or the causes of commitments. For this reason comparisons have been made throughout the study between all children committed during 1914 and children born out of wedlock under care during the same year.

Age at Commitment and Time under Care.

Children born out of wedlock appear to be committed to correctional institutions at a much earlier age than other children. (See Table 33.) While but 41 per cent of all children committed in 1914 were under 15 years of age at time of commitment, 59 per cent of the children of illegitimate birth under care were under this age. Twenty-five per cent of all children committed in 1914 were under

14 years of age, as compared with 40 per cent of those of illegitimate birth under care. The difference in age at commitment suggests that children with the handicap of illegitimate birth tend to lose their moral balance earlier, or that because of the lack of properly functioning homes they are earlier turned over to correctional institutions.

TABLE 33.—*Age at commitment of all delinquent children committed to certain State institutions in 1914, and of delinquent children under care who were born out of wedlock.*

Age at commitment.	Delinquent children under care of State institutions or parole departments.			
	Committed, 1914.		Children born out of wedlock, under care in 1914. ^a	
	Number.	Per cent distribution.	Number.	Per cent distribution.
Total.....	669	100.0	102	100.0
8-11 years.....	50	7.5	13	12.7
12-13 years.....	114	17.0	28	27.5
14 years.....	109	16.3	19	18.6
15-20 years.....	395	59.1	42	41.2
Not reported.....	1	.1		

^a Includes all under care during the whole or any part of the year.

Since wards of the training schools remain under care until they are 21 years of age,⁴ it follows that children born out of wedlock, being received at an earlier age, remain under care for a longer period.

The time under care, from commitment to the end of 1914 or the time of discharge, for the children born out of wedlock was as follows:

Total under care.....		102
Less than 1 year.....	26	2-4 years..... 35
1 year.....	19	5 years and over..... 22

Residence and Nativity.

Cities and large towns are known to contribute proportionately more commitments to correctional institutions than smaller centers or rural sections. This was found to hold true in the residence distribution of the children born out of wedlock. Almost half these children came from Boston or the metropolitan district outside Boston. Those coming from cities having populations of 25,000 or more comprised 72 per cent of the total, though in Massachusetts in 1910 only 64 per cent of all children between the ages of 6 and 21 years lived in cities of this size.⁵ (See Table 34.)

⁴ Unless care is earlier terminated for exceptional reasons, such as death or transfer to another institution.

⁵ Thirteenth Census of the United States, 1910: Vol. II, Population, pp. 866, 881.

TABLE 34.—*Residence, previous to commitment, of delinquent children born out of wedlock.*

Residence previous to commitment.	Delinquent children born out of wedlock, under care in 1914.	
	Number.	Per cent distribution.
Total.....	102	100.0
Boston.....	24	23.5
Other cities of 25,000 or more ^a	49	48.0
Cities of 5,000 but less than 25,000 ^a	14	13.8
Towns of less than 5,000 ^a	10	9.8
Not reported.....	5	4.9

^a In 1910.

The proportion of colored children, 21 out of 102, is strikingly large. Over three times as great a percentage of wards of illegitimate birth were colored as in the case of infants born out of wedlock in Boston in 1914—20 per cent of the wards of correctional institutions, but only 6 per cent of the infants born out of wedlock.⁶

A comparison of the nativity of children of legitimate and of illegitimate birth was possible only for those under care of the three State training schools and of their parole departments. (See Table 35.) The children of illegitimate birth were for the most part born and brought up in the State; only 7 were of foreign birth. The birthplace of 1 was unknown. Of the 87 native born, 67 were born in Massachusetts, 13 in other States of New England, and 7 in other parts of the United States. A slightly smaller proportion of the wards of illegitimate birth under care were foreign born than of all children committed—7 per cent of those born out of wedlock under care and 10 per cent of all committed in 1914.

TABLE 35.—*Nativity of all delinquent children committed to the three State training schools in 1914, and of delinquent children born out of wedlock, under care of the training schools or their parole departments.^a*

Nativity.	Delinquent children under care of the State training schools or their parole departments.			
	Committed, 1914. ^b		Children born out of wedlock, under care in 1914. ^c	
	Number.	Per cent distribution.	Number.	Per cent distribution.
Total.....	610	100.0	95	100.0
Native.....	545	89.3	87	91.6
Foreign.....	62	10.2	7	7.4
Not reported.....	3	.5	1	1.0

^a Girls at the Massachusetts Reformatory for Women excluded, since the report of that institution did not give nativity according to age.

^b From the Fourth Annual Report of the Trustees of the Massachusetts Training Schools for the Year Ending Nov. 30, 1914. Boston, 1915. Pp. 42, 67, 103.

^c Includes all under care during the year, without regard to the time of commitment.

Information about the nativity of the parents, especially of the father, was lacking in a large number of cases. Twenty-two children—slightly more than one-fifth of the total—had mothers known to have been foreign born, and in 9 of these 22 cases the fathers were known to have been of foreign birth also. Ten of the foreign-born mothers were Canadians.

Mentality and Physical Condition.

Owing to insufficient staffs in the institutions, mental examinations were not made for all children. Thus the number who were diagnosed feeble-minded must be considered a minimum. Twenty-two of the 102 children were reported very backward or below normal mentally; 6 of these were definitely diagnosed feeble-minded; 1 was diagnosed insane; 6 were diagnosed subnormal; 5 were considered probably subnormal or feeble-minded, though diagnoses had not as yet been made; and 4 were very backward.

The physical condition of the children at the time of commitment was not reported in all cases. However, 12 were known to have syphilis or gonorrhea or both; 2 were crippled; 2 tubercular; 2 epileptic; and 7 others were in poor condition.

Offenses.

It is of interest to note the specific acts which resulted in the commitments of these children and to compare them with the charges which brought other children into correctional institutions.

In Massachusetts, under the laws relating to juvenile delinquents, a child is usually heard for a specific offense, though the judgment is simply that he is a delinquent or wayward child. The complaint may be for a definite act such as assault, burglary, or larceny, or for being a wayward, stubborn, or delinquent child; and the offenses may range from a minor to a serious one. As in other States in the Union, the Massachusetts courts committing children vary considerably as to the amount and kind of investigations which the judges secure before they dispose of the cases and, consequently, there is a difference in the types of dispositions made throughout the State. There is no reason to suppose, however, that there is either a more or a less detailed investigation made in the cases of children born out of wedlock than of children of legitimate birth. The larger proportion of children of illegitimate birth who do not have suitable homes, or who are cared for by foster parents—less likely than a child's own parents to deal patiently with troublesome conduct—probably results in a larger proportion of commitments to institutions than in the case of children born in wedlock.

The reports of the training schools and the reformatory classify all cases under three headings: (1) Offenses against the person, (2) offenses against property, and (3) offenses against public order.

Offenses against the person include abandonment, assault, rape, and murder. Offenses against property include petty and grand larceny, receiving stolen goods, setting fires, robbery, burglary, and other offenses of like character; such charges often appear far more serious than the actual offenses. Elsewhere in this section, when describing characteristics, offenses against property have been referred to as "dishonesties."

Offenses against public order include all those acts which tend to destroy the social and moral fabric of a community. They include such offenses as soliciting on the streets, illicit sexual relations, vagrancy, idle and disorderly conduct, running away from home, persistent waywardness, stubbornness, or delinquency. Children transferred from the care of the State board of charity to the reformatories are usually classified as wayward, stubborn, or delinquent. Many of the boys' cases had to be classified generally under "stubborn," because no more definite facts were stated in the records. Some of these boys may have committed definite offenses.

In the study of offenses for which the children were committed, and of their characteristics, cases of boys and girls have been analyzed separately. (See Table 36.) A combined analysis would have overweighted the offenses most frequently attributable to girls, since there were more girls than boys. No boys, either of legitimate or of illegitimate birth, were committed for sex offenses and no girls for burglary.

There are several small but suggestive differences between the reasons for the commitments of the wards born out of wedlock and of all children committed during the year. First: Among the children born out of wedlock, none of either sex was committed because of offenses against the person, though a few of both sexes of all committed during the year were committed on this ground. Second: A larger percentage of girls born out of wedlock than of all girls were committed for offenses against property, and a smaller percentage for offenses against public order. For the boys born out of wedlock these differences in percentages were exactly reversed—a smaller percentage for offenses against property and a larger percentage for offenses against public order. Third: Both girls and boys born out of wedlock showed a larger percentage of the less serious offenses of stubbornness and other undefined delinquencies than did all committed during the year. Fourth: Nine per cent fewer girls born out of wedlock were committed for definitely stated sex charges and 6 per cent more for larceny.

TABLE 36.—*Nature of offenses for which delinquent girls and boys were committed to certain State institutions in 1914, and for which delinquent girls and boys born out of wedlock were committed.*

Nature of offense.	Delinquent children under care of State institutions or parole departments.			
	Comitted, 1914.		Children born out of wedlock, under care in 1914.	
	Number.	Per cent distribut.on.	Number	Per cent distribution.
Girls.				
Total.....	184	100.0	66	100.0
Against the person.....	2	1.1		
Against property.....	21	11.4	11	16.7
Larceny.....	20	10.9	11	16.7
Other.....	1	.5		
Against public order.....	161	87.5	55	83.3
Stubborn, delinquent, wayward.....	70	38.0	31	47.0
Sex offenses.....	64	34.8	17	25.7
Other.....	27	14.7	7	10.6
Boys.				
Total.....	485	100.0	36	100.0
Against the person.....	14	2.9		
Against property.....	231	47.6	16	44.4
Burglary.....	95	19.6	7	19.4
Larceny.....	131	27.0	9	25.0
Other.....	5	1.0		
Against public order.....	240	49.5	20	55.6
Stubborn, delinquent, wayward.....	186	38.4	17	47.2
Other ^a	54	11.1	3	8.4

^a Includes transfers from State board of charity.

These differences in offenses are largely explained by the differences in the ages of the children when they were committed. Younger children—and the children born out of wedlock have already been shown to be younger when committed—are not usually as serious offenders as older ones, and consequently are much more likely to be committed for waywardness, incorrigibility, and stubbornness than for such causes as assault, robbery, or arson. Also, the fact that there were more children of illegitimate birth in the younger age groups undoubtedly accounts for the smaller percentage of girls who were sex offenders.

The earlier ages alone might not account, however, for these differences. It is possible not only that children without natural home ties are earlier referred to the discipline of the courts but also that this action is taken for less serious reasons.

The following cases are cited as illustrations of the conditions resulting in commitments of children born out of wedlock for such offenses as stubbornness and larceny:

A girl of 15 was committed to an institution on the charge of stubbornness. As a child she had been neglected in every way. Her mother was immoral and intemperate and had a long court record. The family was known to a number of agencies, public and private. At the age of 10 the child was adjudged neglected and placed in an institution, and later in agency homes. She was described as "profane, vulgar, self-willed, and ill-tempered." At the time of her commitment she had been associating with bad companions and had been immoral. (Case C 55.)

A young girl committed as a stubborn child had been a runaway and a petty thief. She had been adopted by her mother and stepfather. The mother tried hard to care for her children, but the stepfather was abusive and was finally divorced by the mother on statutory grounds. Soon after the mother became insane, and the child was placed out by an agency. She did not do well in her foster home, and her commitment to an institution was deemed necessary. (Case C 63.)

A very young girl committed on a charge of larceny was the child of an immoral woman who was a chronic beggar. After her mother's death the girl went to live with her grandmother, also a beggar and a public charge, who taught the child to beg and steal. Although committed on a charge of larceny, the real reason for her sentence was her need of discipline. She became a self-reliant and capable girl, doing well in the positions in which she was placed. (Case C 17.)

Bad neighborhood and home conditions had always surrounded a young girl whose mother, with whom she lived, was an intemperate and immoral woman, the mother of three children of illegitimate birth by three different men. The home, a boarding house of low character, was a rendezvous for the toughs of the neighborhood. The child was slow in school. She stole money to buy clothes and shoes and was committed to an institution on a charge of larceny. (Case C 80.)

Characteristics.

An analysis of offenses does not give a complete knowledge of the actual delinquencies of the children, for the offenses represent merely the technical charges upon which the commitments were made. For this reason a summary of all known delinquencies, including those embodied in the offenses, was made from the social histories on the case records. Since there are no figures to make possible a comparison in this matter with children born in wedlock, a description of these delinquencies gives merely an idea of the experiences which these children had undergone and of how thoroughly their characters had been undermined. The characteristics described in Table 37 relate to time after commitment as well as before. Half the children were on parole by the end of the year, and half were in the institu-

tions. All but 16 of the 102 children were 14 years of age or over at the end of the period, 48 being 18 years of age or over.

TABLE 37.—*Nature of delinquencies of boys and girls born out of wedlock.*

Nature of delinquencies.	Delinquent children born out of wedlock, under care in 1914.	
	Boys.	Girls.
Total.....	36	66
Sexual irregularities.....	3	55
Sexual irregularities alone <i>a</i>	1	25
Sexual irregularities and dishonesties <i>b</i>	10	10
Sexual irregularities and vagrancy <i>c</i>	2	14
Sexual irregularities and alcoholism.....	4	4
Sexual irregularities, dishonesties, and vagrancy.....	2	2
All other than sexual irregularities.....	33	11
Dishonesties.....	10	5
Dishonesties and vagrancy.....	11	4
Stubbornness or undefined delinquency <i>d</i>	7	2
Vagrancy and stubbornness.....	5	.....

a Sexual irregularities include fornication, common night walking, soliciting or prostitution, keeping a disorderly house, cases of illegitimate pregnancy, and other cases of known immorality.

b Dishonesties include larceny, breaking and entering, burglary, setting fires or arson, and receiving stolen property. If both stubbornness and dishonesty appeared in the same case, the case was included under dishonesties.

c Vagrancy includes being out at night, running away, and being away from home without cause.

d "Stubbornness" or "stubborn" covers incorrigibility, waywardness, idle and disorderly disturbing the peace, and undefined delinquency.

An item of significance in the consideration of the interrelation between birth out of wedlock and delinquency appears in the table showing nature of delinquencies. Vagrancy is there shown to be one of the three outstanding traits—sexual irregularities for the girls and dishonesties for both girls and boys being the other two. Half the boys and almost one-third of the girls, or 37 per cent of all, had been vagrants at some time. Vagrancy is usually due to the lack of a normal home, a factor so often connected with birth out of wedlock. This is illustrated by the following case:

The lack of a home and of parental discipline was responsible for the delinquency of a boy committed to a reformatory institution at the age of 16 on a charge of vagrancy. His mother was dead, and nothing was known of his father. At the age of 8 he had been placed by his mother under the care of a child-placing agency. After several months in a foster home this society placed him with relatives because he was too hard to manage in a boarding home. His relatives found him so difficult that after a few years they refused to keep him, and he shifted for himself. He was arrested because not working. The agency which had first placed him refused to provide for him further because he needed stronger discipline than they could give. (Case C-62.)

Sexual irregularities are found in the histories of a large proportion of delinquent girls. The histories of five-sixths of the girls

born out of wedlock recorded such delinquencies. The proportion would probably have been larger had all the facts been known.

Of the 55 girls who had been sex offenders, 16 had been prostitutes—that is, they had been immoral for money—though 10 of the 16 were not committed on this charge. Nine of the girls had been illegitimately pregnant.

Dishonesty is generally the outstanding delinquency in the case of boys, as immorality is in the case of girls. Nearly three-fifths of the boys had been dishonest, most of them in a serious enough degree to have brought them under discipline other than that of their own homes. A large number of the girls, too—almost one-third—had been dishonest.

Psychological Factors.

If more facts were known of the inner lives of many of these delinquent boys and girls there might be greater evidence of mental conflict occasioned by the realization of the circumstances of their birth or the character of their parents.⁷ The histories of several children showed the results of this mental conflict.

A girl who apparently belonged to the white race found in her early 'teens that she was the child of an unmarried colored woman. The knowledge of her colored blood and her illegitimate birth, together with her inability to find her own people, was considered by those caring for her as a contributing cause of her delinquency, which resulted three or four years later in her commitment to an institution.

This child was committed on a charge of stubbornness. The dependency and delinquency record of the girl's family goes back to her maternal grandmother, who received aid from the overseers of the poor and was at one time an inmate of a correctional institution, having been convicted of keeping a disorderly house. The girl's mother became a ward of a child-caring agency, and a few years afterwards became illegitimately pregnant. She placed the baby at board, but after a few years abandoned her. No later trace of the mother was ever found.

The child was placed, by the same agency that had provided for the mother, in a good home where she remained for a number of years. Although a difficult child to manage and having a violent temper, she was fond of her foster parents and they of her. In school her progress was good. She began a commercial course in high school and was eager to become a stenographer. At this juncture, however, she was placed in a new home to work for her board and go to school. Here she was very unhappy and finally ran away, returning to the family with whom she had first lived. She was placed in another family, where she was homesick and lonesome. Three other homes were tried in an effort to place her satisfactorily, but without success. She was described as stubborn, saucy, untruthful, disobedient, and infatuated with boys. It finally became necessary to commit her to a reformatory institution.

⁷ See Healy, William: *Mental Conflicts and Misconduct*. Little, Brown, and Company, Boston, 1917. Cases showing conflicts concerning parentage, pp. 47, 73, 213-217.

The knowledge of her unfortunate parentage, combined with her removal from a home in which she was happy to one where she was unhappy and lonely, resulted in the moral breakdown of this naturally high-tempered, stubborn girl whose mother and grandmother had also failed to conform to social standards. (Case C 92.)

Analysis of Home and Hereditary Influences.

The very fact that a child is removed from his home and sent to an institution suggests that the home has not been entirely successful. Even though it is true that a judge commits the child because of the offense and not because of the lack of a proper home, yet the offense is usually intimately related to the home conditions. It is therefore of importance to ascertain the kinds of homes from which the children were committed, who had been responsible for the children, the degree to which this responsibility had been shared by agencies, and what were the characteristics of the parents. The histories of children with the handicap of birth out of wedlock show that illegitimate birth, bad home conditions, and delinquency produce and reproduce themselves.

Types of homes.

The homes in which these delinquent children were living before their commitments usually were not temporary but represented attempts at permanent adjustments. For that reason they are particularly worthy of study. From previous figures as to ages it was seen that none of the children was under 8 years of age at commitment, and that three-fourths of them were 14 years or over—64 per cent of the boys and 83 per cent of the girls. The children had all passed their early infancy, when shiftings are likely to occur because of the mother's difficulty in both caring for and supporting a young baby. Years had elapsed during which the mother might have married the father or another man and taken the child into her own home, or during which the child might have been adopted. A child of school age is much less likely to be passed about among various relatives and friends than a younger child. Most of these children, too, had reached an age when, if various other efforts had failed, their care would have been definitely assumed by an agency for a prolonged period. More than three-fourths of the children appeared to be in settled modes of living—either with the mother in her own home, in an adoptive home, in an agency home, or regularly provided for by relatives or friends.

Previous to commitment 29 of the 102 children of illegitimate birth under care were living with their mothers, 70 were separated

from them, and in 3 cases presence with or absence from the mother was not reported. Of the 29 children living with their mothers, 25 were in the mothers' own homes; in 4 of these cases the mother had been married to the child's father, in 12 to a man other than the father, and the remaining 9 mothers were maintaining homes separate from their husbands or were living with consorts or with men to whom they had been illegally married.

Of the children who were not living with their mothers, 13 were in homes into which they had been legally adopted; 8 were in foster homes into which they had been received as permanent members of the family; 23 were in agency homes; 15 were cared for by grandparents, other relatives, or friends; 2 were in institutions; 8 were supporting themselves; and in one case the type of home was not reported. A surprisingly large percentage of delinquent children came from adoptive or foster homes as compared with the number of children born out of wedlock under care of the division of State minor wards who came from such homes. Only 7 per cent of children 6 years of age and over under care of the division of State minor wards were in adoptive or foster homes at the time of application or commitment, while 21 per cent of the wards of correctional institutions came from homes of this type. This comparatively large amount of delinquency which comes from adoptive homes occurs in a State where the board of charity pursues the policy of giving very few of its charges for adoption, where it permits no adoption of a ward unless the home has been tried for a year, and where public opinion generally has been educated in advanced theories upon the subject. Yet in this State one out of every eight of the children born out of wedlock who were wards of correctional institutions came from homes into which they had been legally adopted. Local investigations have shown that not all adoptions are accompanied by the careful investigation and safeguarding of the children which obtains in the work of the State board of charity. This amount of delinquency coming from adoptive homes indicates the need of great care in the placement of children for adoption. The following cases of children born out of wedlock who had been brought up in adoptive or foster homes illustrate the difficulties sometimes present:

A child was taken when she was 2 years old from a hospital in a near-by State and brought up by foster parents, though never legally adopted. The home was an excellent one, but the child proved to be a great trial and disappointment. She was backward in school and a truant and she began to lie and steal at the age of 7. At the age of 13 she was sent to a private institution for difficult girls, where she remained for over a year but did not improve. She was then sent to relatives of her foster parents, but she proved to be uncontrollable and was finally committed to a State institution as a stubborn

child. She had been under the care of this institution for some time when the study was made. While on parole she had worked in factories but was discharged from several for misconduct. When 18 years old she gave birth to a child out of wedlock. The mother and baby were kept together for a time but finally had to be separated. The mother was unfit physically and mentally to care for the child, and the baby became ill because of the mother's neglect. (Case C 102.)

A boy and a girl born out of wedlock—twin children of a mother who was ill and unable to care for them—were taken by a child-caring agency when a month old, and a little later both were adopted by the same family. The home was a most unfortunate one. The foster mother neglected the children, and the foster father made improper advances to the girl. When the children were 12 years of age, the home was broken up through the misconduct and desertion of the foster father, and the boy was committed to the care of a public agency. A month later his sister was committed to a State institution on a sex charge, having been very immoral. The boy did fairly well, but the girl was nervous, high-strung, and very untruthful. She was immoral while on parole. An examination of mentality was made, and she was pronounced a defective delinquent. (Case C 41.)

A very young boy was committed to an institution on a charge of breaking and entering and larceny. He had been a member of a gang, and he admitted breaking into 15 places. He had been taken when an infant from a midwife by his foster parents, but he had never been legally adopted. The foster parents knew nothing of the mother's history, except that the child had been born out of wedlock. The home was undesirable, and the child had little care. The lack of discipline was undoubtedly largely responsible for his delinquency. While under the care of the institution he made poor progress in school, and his teachers believed him to be defective. (Case C 23.)

A girl born out of wedlock, whose parents were intemperate and immoral and whose home life was most degrading, was adopted when 5 years of age. The adoptive home was not a fortunate one. The family disliked the child and gave her no affection but subjected her to constant criticism. The child was neurotic and unstable and became stubborn, shy, and untruthful. She was finally committed to an institution on a charge of stubbornness. (Case C 60.)

Character of homes.

The descriptions given on the records of the homes where the children lived at commitment (see Table 38) pictured 46 where conditions detrimental to a child's morals existed. Information as to the character of the home was lacking in some cases.

Eleven children were living with immoral mothers, 6 not living with their mothers were in homes where immorality existed, 13 were living in homes of low standards, 11 children were without adequate supervision, and 5 were in homes in which other detrimental conditions existed. Twenty-six of the 29 children who were living with their mothers were living under unfavorable conditions. Five of the

adoptive or foster homes, and both the grandparents' homes, were unfavorable. All but one of the agency homes were good, so far as known.

TABLE 3S.—*Types and character of homes in which delinquent children born out of wedlock lived before commitment.*

Type of home in which child lived before commitment.	Delinquent children born out of wedlock, under care in 1914.					
	Character of home.					
	Total.	Good, so far as known.	Immorality in household.	Low moral standards.	Lack of supervision.	Otherwise poor.
Total.....	102	55	17	13	11	6
With mother in own home.....	25	2	9	8	5	1
With mother in home of other type.....	4	1	2	^a 1	.....	.....
Grandparents' home.....	2	.....	.....	1	1	.....
Home of relatives or friends.....	13	9	1	1	1	1
Adoptive or foster home.....	21	^b 16	.....	1	^c 3	1
Home secured by agency or institution (not relatives).....	23	22	.....	.....	.....	1
Self-supporting home.....	8	1	5	.....	.....	2
Institution.....	2	2	.....	.....	.....	.....
Not reported.....	4	2	.....	1	^d 1	.....

^a With mother in maternal grandparents' home.

^b Seven not legally adopted, though taken permanently by foster parents.

^c One not legally adopted.

^d Away from mother.

The bringing up of a child of illegitimate birth in the home of the mother and stepfather, along with the half brothers and half sisters, does not always result favorably for the child. Although other factors contributed to the delinquency of the child here described, the scornful attitude and disagreeable treatment of her half brothers and half sisters undoubtedly seriously influenced her conduct.

This girl was committed to a correctional institution at an early age because of sex offenses. She was described as a chronic truant, a runaway, alcoholic, and immoral from the age of 13. At the time of commitment she was leading a life of prostitution, though living in her mother's home.

Her mother felt keenly the disgrace of having a child of illegitimate birth. She was over 40 when the child was born and had a number of children born in wedlock. The home was poor, and the presence of lodgers of questionable character was an unfavorable influence. All the children of legitimate birth, however, were doing well and had exhibited no tendencies toward wrongdoing. Criminal treatment by her own father, who paid irregularly for her support, seems to have been the beginning of her misconduct. (Case C 69.)

A little colored boy born out of wedlock, whose mother had died when he was a baby and who had been brought up by his paternal grandparents, was committed as a stubborn child. His father had never admitted his paternity, though the grandparents were satisfied of it. The grandparents were away all day and the child was left in a cheerless home without companionship or control. (Case C 74.)

The effect of unfavorable home conditions and of unfortunate experiences in early youth is illustrated in the case of a girl committed to a correctional institution in her late 'teens for a sex offense. She had supported a man—sentenced to a penal institution at the same time she was committed—by her earnings as a prostitute. She was of normal mentality and had reached the sixth grade at the age of 12 years. A physical defect seriously marred her appearance. She was alcoholic and had been immoral from an early age.

The mother of the girl was described as "tragically feeble-minded." She had lived with the girl's father for several years when she discovered that their marriage was illegal because he had another wife living. She then left him and soon married a widower with several children. The home thus provided for the mother and her child proved to be most unfavorable. The stepfather was reported to have conducted himself improperly toward the child. At the age of 11 she was forced to improper relations by her stepbrother, who married her under pressure a month before their child was born. The child-mother was but little past her twelfth birthday at the baby's birth. The infant was adopted by the grandparents, and the girl and her husband established a home of their own. The child's efforts at housekeeping were naturally unsuccessful, and she returned to her mother's home.

Her history for the next few years is fragmentary. At the time of commitment she was living in a disorderly house. The lack of chance for normal development in her home, her unhappy early history, and her forced marriage resulted in the delinquent career of this girl who, in spite of the feeble-mindedness of her mother, seemed to have good natural endowments. (Case C 61.)

A young boy of illegitimate birth, committed to an institution for juvenile delinquents, was found to have been living on receipts from stolen goods and sleeping in doorways and cellars. His mother—herself born out of wedlock—and his older sister were trying to maintain a home, but the neighborhood was poor, both were employed during the day, and it was impossible to give the boy any attention. The mother, who had never married, had struggled hard to provide for her two children and had succeeded in keeping them with her for a number of years. The alleged father was dead. The lack of home supervision and discipline was disastrous for the boy. (Case C 9.)

Previous agency care.

Almost half the children—50 out of 102—were being supervised by some agency at the time of their commitment. This supervision was being given for 19 children by public child-caring agencies, for 7 by private child-caring agencies, and for 9 by child-protective agencies; 11 were on probation, 3 were under other prolonged care of the courts, and 1 was under supervision of another industrial school. Some of these children had been placed out by the State or by private societies during most of their childhood.

A very large proportion of the children, 70 out of 102, had been under the care of agencies, institutions, or courts at some time previous to commitment. Four of these children had previously been in correctional institutions, 12 had been on probation, and 6 had been given other care by the courts. A total of 56 children had been given

prolonged care by other agencies (9 of these also having been before the courts). It is evident that in the majority of cases other methods had been tried before the last measure was resorted to—the reformative institution.

A girl committed to a reformatory at the age of 17 as a stubborn child was one of a family of 13 children born out of wedlock, and had spent the greater part of her childhood in institutions. Her mother and father lived together for a number of years but were never married. The father was intemperate and had a long court record. He deserted the mother several years before the girl's commitment. The mother had been in a correctional institution for intemperance and had lived with a second man to whom she was not married. Little is known of the other children. Some of them died in infancy or early childhood. One is known to have been immoral and to have been an inmate of a reformatory.

At the age of 5 years the girl described was placed in an orphanage and spent the next seven years in this and another institution. She then lived for a time with her parents and was put to work in a factory. After this she kept house for a man with whom she had immoral relations. At the time the study was made she had been for several years under care of the correctional institution to which she was committed. While on parole she failed to do well. (Case C 39.)

A 15-year-old colored girl of illegitimate birth, committed on a charge of larceny, had been living with her two sisters and her aunt. Her mother was dead. The girl had been under the care of agencies for three years previous to commitment—one child-caring and two family-care agencies had been working on the case. The girl had been put on probation; but she became more delinquent, and it was necessary to send her to an institution. She had stolen from her aunt and from employers and neighbors. The year before this study she was hopelessly paralyzed by a disease of the spine. One of her sisters was later committed to an institution for the feeble-minded. (Case C 2.)

Parental characteristics.

The information concerning the mothers, fathers, and grandparents of the children, though meager, is suggestive. (See Table 39.) Almost two-thirds of the mothers had characteristics sufficiently detrimental to be reported. Fifty of the mothers were known to be sexually delinquent, of whom 8 were prostitutes and 34 had other children of illegitimate birth, 10 of these having four or more other children born out of wedlock. One mother had four other children by four different fathers; each of two mothers who had lived as married with the fathers of their children for long periods had 13 children of illegitimate birth. Twenty-three of the mothers with poor characteristics had the children included in the study living with them previous to commitment.

TABLE 39.—*Character of mothers of delinquent children born out of wedlock.*

Child present with or separated from mother immediately prior to commitment.	Delinquent children born out of wedlock, under care in 1914.					
	Total.	Character of mother.				
		Good, so far as known.	Sexual irregularities.	Alcoholic.	Otherwise poor.	Not reported.
Total.....	102	19	^a 50	6	9	18
With mother.....	29	6	17	3	3	.....
Separated from mother.....	70	13	32	2	^b 6	17
Not reported.....	3	.....	1	1	.....	1

^a Includes 15 who were also alcoholic, 1 of whom was otherwise delinquent as well.

^b Represents 5 mothers, as twin sisters were under care.

The 36 mothers who were known to have had more than one child out of wedlock⁸ had a total of 141 such children, of whom 74 were dependent, neglected, delinquent, or defective charges of society: Thirty-seven were delinquents included in this study; 8 others were delinquent; 25 were neglected or dependent, 3 of whom were feeble-minded; 4 others were defective.

Full information was not available regarding the mentality and physical condition of many of the mothers. It was known, however, that 13 were reported to be not normal, of whom 3 were diagnosed feeble-minded, 2 were insane, and 8 were probably subnormal or feeble-minded. One mother was epileptic and 8 others were in poor physical condition.

Information regarding fathers of children born out of wedlock is usually lacking, and it is surprising that records of these children, who were received after infancy, contained such facts for half the cases (52). About one-third of the children were known to have fathers who were immoral, alcoholic, or otherwise delinquent. Twenty-six of these men were known either to have been fathers of other children born out of wedlock or to have been otherwise immoral. Several had records of desertion or nonsupport.

Since nothing at all was known of 50 fathers no generalizations can be made concerning the amounts contributed by the fathers toward the support of their children. There were, however, 31 who contributed something, 18 because living as married with or illegally married to the mother, 8 because they married the mother subsequent to the child's birth, and 5 through money payments.

In addition to the evidence in regard to the characteristics of the parents, the maternal grandparents of 16 children were known to have been alcoholic, immoral, otherwise delinquent, or of poor character.

⁸ Two of these mothers had twin children out of wedlock but no other illegitimate pregnancies, and so were not included in the statement on p. 357.

To sum up the characteristics of the families of these delinquent children of illegitimate birth, the mothers, fathers, or maternal grandparents of 66 of the 102 were alcoholic or immoral, and of 7 others were of otherwise poor character or of abnormal mentality. In only 29 cases was nothing detrimental reported concerning parents or grandparents, and in many of these cases little or nothing was known of the family history. In 17 of the 66 cases in which alcoholism or immorality was reported, the record also stated that one or both parents or maternal grandparents were otherwise delinquent or mentally below normal.

To what extent dependency was present in the homes of these children was difficult to discover. It is known, however, that 21 of the children had mothers who themselves had formerly been wards of agencies; that 34 of the mothers had other children who were, or had been, public responsibilities either as dependent, neglected, delinquent, feeble-minded, or insane; and that the grandparents of 5 children were known to have been dependent upon charitable relief. Thirteen of the children had another member of the immediate relationship under the care of a Massachusetts agency during 1914; in 5 of these cases the children themselves had babies born out of wedlock who were under care during the year. Thus, a considerable number of the children came from families who had contributed largely to the amount of dependency, delinquency, or defect in the community.

A striking illustration of the various factors operating detrimentally in the life of a child born out of wedlock is presented in the following case:

Twin sisters, after 17 years of complete separation, were committed within six weeks of each other to the same correctional institution. The first sister had been duly classified and assigned to work at the institution when one day the receiving matron was called upon to accept a new prisoner. In distress at the apparent escape of one of the inmates, the matron exclaimed to the new prisoner: "How did you get out, and where did you come from?" The matron was not more surprised at the situation than was each of the girls to find her double in the institution.

Both girls were committed for the same offense, vagrancy; both had been sexually delinquent; both were classified as segregable types, though of good native ability; both were epileptic; both had gonorrhea. This was the first commitment for each of them. In both girls, whose early experience had been much the same, but who had later been subjected to somewhat different environmental conditions, the same traits had developed in a strikingly similar manner.

Their mother, the child of an intemperate and pauper family, had been an irresponsible almshouse inmate. She remained in the almshouse with the twin babies for two years after their birth; they were then placed in a private institution and the mother went to an institution in another State. Shortly afterwards the babies were adopted by different families and remained separated until they came together in the reformatory. Both adoptive homes were supposedly good.

After some years the foster parents of one of the girls were forced to place her in an institution because they were unable to care for her. She spent more than six years in this and another institution. Her educational advantages were poor, and she never went beyond the fourth grade in school. A month before commitment she ran away from the institution in which she was living, was immoral with several men in parks and lodging houses, and was finally arrested for vagrancy.

The other sister remained with her adoptive parents until shortly before commitment. Her foster mother was described as an excellent woman, but she failed to make the girl contented. Troublesome, untruthful, and wayward, the girl gave much difficulty in school and at home, though on leaving school at 14 she had attained the ninth grade. After this she worked in a laundry and did kitchen work in an institution, but she was unsatisfactory in both places. She finally ran away from home, and after some immoral experiences was arrested while asking for breakfast at a back door.

The characteristics of both girls seemed to be definitely related to their unfortunate heritage, combined, in one case, with adverse environmental conditions. (Cases C 94, 95.)

Summary.

From this study of wards of correctional institutions, and also from other parts of the inquiry, it is evident that large numbers of children of illegitimate birth are born to and surrounded by conditions which subject them to peculiar moral hazards. Many become delinquent and are placed under reformatory influences. These children come earlier to correctional institutions than do children of legitimate birth, and they remain longer. Previous to their commitments they have had a great amount of agency or court care.

Of the children born out of wedlock who were under the care of correctional institutions not only were more than one-fifth below par mentally and one-fourth below par physically at their commitment, but record after record told the story of one or more hereditary or environmental characteristics contributing to their delinquency. Almost half the homes in which the children were living at the time of their commitment were known to be bad. Almost two-thirds of the mothers were known to be alcoholic, immoral, dishonest, or of otherwise poor character, and a considerable proportion of these were mothers who had their children with them at the time of commitment. More than two-thirds of the children had had some previous agency or court care before commitment. Many of the families had records of dependency extending over two or three generations; in several cases other members of the family were under the care of a Massachusetts agency during the year. Children placed out in adoptive homes or with relatives seem not always to have escaped unfavorable environments.

The facts revealed in this study show the extraordinary difficulties which children of illegitimate birth often have to combat, while added to the hereditary and environmental disadvantages are the

mental sufferings and abnormal attitude toward life which the knowledge of birth out of wedlock often entails.

INFANTS CARED FOR WITH THEIR MOTHERS.

Number under Care.

Besides the 102 children born out of wedlock committed as delinquents to State institutions and under care during the year, there were 80 young children of illegitimate birth cared for with their mothers. These children were received with their mothers or born while the mothers were under care. The law provides that "if the mother of a child under the age of 18 months is imprisoned in a jail, house of correction, workhouse, or other place of confinement and is capable and desirous of taking care of it, the keeper shall, upon the order of the court or magistrate committing her, or of any overseer of the poor, receive the child and place it under the care and custody of its mother."⁹ Of the 80 children under care, 26 were committed with their mothers; 35 were born while their mothers were under care, the mothers having been pregnant when committed; and 19 were born to mothers who had been on parole and who were still under care.

Pregnant women are usually sent to the State infirmary for confinement, and remain as long as special medical services are needed, in most cases for a month or two, though in some instances for a longer time. After this stay, mothers under care of the institution for older girls and women are usually returned to the institution with their babies, though if the mother has been on parole she may be placed again in a private family under supervision. A nursery for babies is maintained by this institution and medical care is given. Mothers and babies under care of the training school for girls are provided for through the parole department. Occasionally children are separated from their mothers, though in most cases the child and mother are kept together.

A law passed in 1918 provides as follows:¹⁰

Whenever, in the opinion of the physician of any prison or other place of confinement in which is imprisoned a woman who is about to give birth to a child during the term of her imprisonment, the best interests of the woman or of her unborn child require that she be paroled or discharged, he may so certify to the board or officer empowered to grant paroles or discharges from the institution in which she is imprisoned, and such board or officer may, subject to such terms and conditions as appear necessary, grant the parole or discharge.

Seventeen of the 80 infants under care were included in the chapter on children under care of social agencies, since the residence

⁹ R. L. 1902 ch. 225 sec. 78.

¹⁰ Acts 1918 ch. 79.

of the mother was Boston. Four others were included in that section because they were cared for by Boston agencies during the year. Three children were under the care of the division of State minor wards, one of whom was also included in the Boston study. The birthplaces of the children were: State infirmary, 42; Boston, 9; metropolitan district outside Boston, 5; other parts of the State, 20; other States, 2; not reported, 2. Five children were colored and 75 white. There were 36 boys, 43 girls, and 1 not reported as to sex. Twelve children were under 3 months of age when received; 11 were 3 months but less than 1 year of age; 2 were 1 year old; the age of 1 was not reported; 54 were born while their mothers were under care. Of the 26 committed with their mothers, 21 had been living with them previous to commitment, 4 had been separated from them, and in 1 case it was not reported whether or not the child had been living with the mother.

Care Given the Children by the Institutions and the Parole Department Studied.

Of the 80 children cared for during the year, 54 had been under care from birth. All but 13 of these 54 children had been born at the State infirmary.¹¹ Most of the mothers and children were kept at the infirmary from one to two months after the child's birth. In 3 of the 41 cases in which the child was born at that institution during a commitment current in the year studied, the infirmary gave care for less than one month; in 24 cases for one or two months; and in 6 cases for three months or more. The time at the infirmary was not reported for 8 children.

Eight children—one-tenth of the total under care—died during the year; 8 others were discharged from care, none of whom was released without his mother. Six of the 8 children who died were under 6 months of age; 2 were more than one year and a half but less than 2 years old. Of the 8 discharged from care, 3 were under 6 months of age, 4 were from 6 to 11 months old, and 1 was 3 years of age.

Twenty-two of the 64 children remaining under care at the end of the year were 1 but less than 2 years of age, 8 children were 2 years of age and over, 33 were less than 1 year of age, and the age of 1 was not reported. The mothers of 8 of the 22 children 1 year of age at the end of the year were still under the care of the institutions, and the mothers of 14 were on parole. The mothers of all but 2 of the 8 children 2 years of age and over were on parole.

¹¹ A total of 42 children had been born at the infirmary, but 1 of them was 1 year of age at the time of the present commitment, having been born while the mother was under care on a previous commitment.

At the end of the year or the close of care 53 of the 80 children had been under care for less than one year, 21 for one year but less than two, and 6 for two years or more. The average number of months under care for all the children included was 11.

Under care of the institutions at the end of the year or previous to death or discharge were 42 of the 80 children, while 38 were under the supervision of the parole departments.¹² Of the former, 37 were with their mothers at one of the institutions, 4 were with their mothers at the State infirmary, and 1 was at the infirmary, though the mother had been returned to the institution to which she had been committed. Of the 38 under the care of parole departments, 28 were living with their mothers, 9 had been separated from them, and in 1 case it was not reported whether or not the child was with the mother. Eleven of the 28 with their mothers were living in their mothers' places of employment, 3 in their mothers' own home, 10 in the homes of grandparents or other relatives, 1 in a boarding home, 2 in a hospital or public infirmary, and the location of 1 was not reported. Of the 9 children separated from their mothers, 5 were boarding, 1 was living with relatives, and 3 were in a hospital or infirmary.

Almost one-fourth of the children—19 of the 80 under care—were known to be in poor physical condition. Three had syphilis, 2 were hydrocephalic, 1 had tuberculosis, 11 were in otherwise poor condition, and no reports as to the physical condition of 2 children were secured. The proportion in poor physical condition was somewhat low, in view of the fact that three-eighths of the mothers of these children were in poor physical condition and that more than one-fourth had syphilis or gonorrhea.

THE HERITAGE OF CHILDREN OF ILLEGITIMATE BIRTH WHOSE MOTHERS
WERE UNDER CARE OF CORRECTIONAL INSTITUTIONS.

In studying the heritage of children whose mothers were wards of correctional institutions it is of greater significance to consider the whole group of women under care who had been illegitimately pregnant than to limit the analysis to the mothers of the 80 children cared for during the year. In 1914 the total number of women under the care of the institutions and of the parole department studied was 1,267. Among these were 220—17 per cent—who at some time had been illegitimately pregnant. The girls under the care of one of the institutions and of the parole department were all under 21 years of age.

¹²Although records of all under care were secured from only one of the parole departments, information was obtained for the mothers on parole from the institution for older women if they had been under care of the institution at some time during the year studied. Of the 42 children under care of the institutions, all but 2 were under care of the institution for older women; these 2 were at the State infirmary, the mothers not having been paroled previous to the birth of the children.

The percentage illegitimately pregnant among the inmates of the institution for older girls and women was 31.

The offenses for which these girls and women were committed were as follows:

Total who had been illegitimately pregnant.....	220
Committed for offenses against the person.....	8
Abandoning infant.....	5
Attempt to murder.....	1
Murder.....	1
Robbery.....	1
Committed for offenses against property.....	27
Larceny.....	27
Committed for offenses against public order.....	183
Sex offenses:	
Abortion.....	1
Adultery.....	9
Common nightwalker.....	17
Fornication.....	10
Keeping disorderly house.....	2
Lewdness.....	60
Polygamy.....	1
Other offenses:	
Concealing death.....	1
Drunkenness.....	15
Idle and disorderly.....	16
Forgery.....	1
Neglect of child.....	2
Stubbornness or undefined delinquency.....	37
Vagrancy.....	8
Violating drug laws.....	3
Not reported.....	2

Four per cent of these women had been committed for offenses against the person, 12 per cent for offenses against property, 45 per cent on sex charges, and 38 per cent for other offenses against public order; in 1 per cent of the cases the offense was not reported. The distribution of offenses for which all women received during the year were committed was very similar to the above distribution for women under care during the year who had been illegitimately pregnant.¹³

Nine per cent of the mothers were colored. Native-born mothers comprised 75 per cent of the total, foreign-born mothers 22 per cent, and the nativity of 3 per cent was not reported. These percentages

¹³ Two per cent against the person, 11 per cent against property, 48 per cent on sex charges, and 39 per cent for other offenses against public order. See Fourteenth Annual Report of the Board of Prison Commissioners of Massachusetts for the Year 1914 (p. 53) and Fourth Annual Report of the Trustees of the Massachusetts Training Schools for the Year Ending Nov. 30, 1914 (p. 102).

correspond closely to those among all women admitted during the year.¹⁴

One of the institutions studied receives only girls under 17 years of age. During the year studied 59 girls who had been illegitimately pregnant were in this institution or under care of the parole department. Of the 161 mothers under care of the other institution, 42 were under 21 years of age when committed, 117 were over this age, and the ages of 2 were not reported. Hence, of the 220 mothers under care of the two institutions and the parole department, 101—46 per cent—were under 21 when committed. About the same percentage—48 per cent—of all women committed during 1914 were under 21 years of age.¹⁵ However, 98 of the 220 mothers had been under the care of correctional institutions on previous commitments. At the time of the first court commitment to a correctional institution 58 per cent of the mothers were less than 21 years old.

Almost two-thirds of the mothers—64 per cent—were single at the time of commitment, 11 per cent were married, 5 per cent were widowed, and 20 per cent were deserted or separated. Almost one-tenth of all the mothers had been illegally married or living as married.

At the end of the year studied, or, if discharged during the year, at the close of care, 83 of the 220 mothers had been under care less than 1 year; 67, 1 year; 39, 2 to 3 years; 29, 4 years and over; and the time under care was not reported in 2 cases.

The institutions whose records were studied were equipped to give physical and mental examinations; one of the institutions had done special work along the line of scientific research in regard to mentality. Seventy-three of the 220 mothers were found to have venereal infection, and 11 others were suspected of being in this condition though diagnoses had not been completed. Twenty-one had other physical disabilities, making a total of 105 who were in poor physical condition. In 111 cases the physical condition was reported good, and in 4 cases no report was obtained. The data as to physical condition relate to the year of the study. Many of the women had been under care long enough to improve as a consequence of the medical care provided. As was to be expected, the mothers under care of the institution for older women were in worse physical condition than the girls under care of the institution taking younger girls, or on parole therefrom. Of the former, more than half were in poor condition, and nearly two-fifths had syphilis or gonorrhea.

¹⁴ Native born, 72 per cent; foreign born, 27 per cent; not reported, 1 per cent. Derived from Fourteenth Annual Report of the Board of Prison Commissioners of Massachusetts for the Year 1914 (p. 54) and Fourth Annual Report of the Trustees of the Massachusetts Training Schools for the Year Ending Nov. 30, 1914 (p. 103).

¹⁵ See Fourteenth Annual Report of the Board of Prison Commissioners of Massachusetts for the Year 1914 (p. 53) and Fourth Annual Report of the Trustees of the Massachusetts Training Schools for the Year Ending Nov. 30, 1914 (p. 103).

Of the latter, slightly more than one-fourth were in poor condition, one-fifth having venereal infection.

Less than three-fifths of the 220 mothers under care—58 per cent—were reported of normal mentality. Feeble-minded mothers comprised 12 per cent of the total; and mothers who were subnormal mentally, or were reported probably subnormal or feeble-minded but not diagnosed, 29 per cent. In 1 per cent of the cases no report as to mentality was secured. At the institution caring for older women special studies have been made of mentality and grades of efficiency. The results of examinations of 500 inmates, taken in consecutive order, were published in 1915.¹⁶ The resident physician also graded the mothers included in this investigation according to the standards used in the study cited. A comparison of the mentality of the two groups—the first an unselected group and the second a group of women who had been illegitimately pregnant—is given in Table 40.

TABLE 40.—*Comparison of the mental condition of an unselected group of 500 reformatory inmates and of inmates of the same institution who had been illegitimately pregnant and who were under care in 1914.*

Mental condition.	Unselected group of reformatory inmates whose mental condition was diagnosed. ^a		Women under care of the same institution who had been illegitimately pregnant.	
	Number.	Per cent distribution.	Number.	Per cent distribution.
Total.....	500	100.0	161	100.0
Imbecile.....	6	1.2	1	0.6
Moron.....	74	14.8	^b 24	14.9
Subnormal.....	145	29.0	51	31.7
Dull.....	102	20.4	19	11.8
Fair.....	68	13.6	25	15.5
Good.....	105	21.0	39	24.2
Not reported.....			2	1.3

^a Fifteenth Annual Report of the Board of Prison Commissioners of Massachusetts for the Year 1915. Boston, 1916 (p. 52).

^b Includes 19 who were feeble-minded and 5 high-grade mental defectives not classified in this report as feeble-minded.

The distribution of the two groups according to mental condition appears to be very similar, except that a smaller percentage of the mothers were classified as "dull," and slightly higher percentages as "subnormal," and as "fair," and "good."

The reformatory women were also classified by the physician of the institution according to grades of efficiency. Forty-two per cent of the women who had been illegitimately pregnant were classified as "normal," 31 per cent as "subnormal," and 26 per cent as "seg-

¹⁶ Fifteenth Annual Report of the Board of Prison Commissioners of Massachusetts for the Year 1915. Boston, 1916 (p. 52).

regable" types. In 1 per cent of these cases no report on this item was obtained. The findings are practically identical with those for the unselected group of inmates of the same institution.¹⁷

Of the 220 women who had been illegitimately pregnant, 98—45 per cent—had had previous court records. The percentage was considerably higher for the mothers 21 years of age and over at commitment, 73 of the 117 in this age group—62 per cent—having had previous court records. Some of these mothers had long histories of arrests and commitments.

Sixty-five per cent of the mothers were under 21 years of age at the first illegitimate pregnancy. The age at first illegitimate pregnancy was as follows:

Total mothers	-----	220
Under 18 years	----- 65	25 years and over----- 32
18-20 years	----- 78	Not reported----- 8
21-24 years	----- 37	

In 151 of the 220 cases the mother had been illegitimately pregnant once; in 39 cases, twice; in 18 cases, 3 times; in 4 cases, 4 times; in 5 cases, 5 times; in 1 case, 6 times; in 2 cases, 7 times. The total number of illegitimate pregnancies these mothers had had was 344. In 21 instances the mother was pregnant at the close of the year studied. Of the 323 pregnancies terminated before the close of the study 269 resulted in live births and 54 in still births. The percentage of stillbirths was 17.

It was not possible to obtain full information about the children of these mothers. It was known that 187 of the 269 children born alive were living in 1914. Of these 187 children, 127—68 per cent—were known to be under the care of social agencies or institutions during the year studied. Eighty children—43 per cent of those living—were, with their mothers, under the care of the institutions for delinquents and the parole department studied. In 6 of these cases 2 children of the same mother were under care, hence the number of mothers who had children of illegitimate birth also under care was 77.

These 220 mothers represent the most delinquent types of mothers of children out of wedlock. The offenses for which they were committed and their mental condition and grades of efficiency correspond very closely to the findings for unselected groups of reformatory inmates.

¹⁷ Unpublished figures for 738 reformatory women. Of these 42 per cent were "normal," 31 per cent "subnormal," and 27 per cent "segregable."

CHAPTER 5. MENTAL DEFECT AND ILLEGITIMACY.

The interrelation between feeble-mindedness and illegitimacy is one of the most serious of problems, both because of its concern to society and because of its individual and racial significance. Manifestly it would be impossible to secure adequate data concerning the proportion of feeble-minded among all persons born out of wedlock. The determination of the prevalence of illegitimate parenthood among persons of defective mentality would be extremely difficult, though estimates and dogmatic assertions are by no means uncommon. Previous chapters of this report have included figures as to the number of mental defectives among the dependent and delinquent children included in the various parts of the inquiry. Because of the absence of mental diagnoses in the majority of cases, these figures have been understatements.

This chapter deals with the feeble-minded children born out of wedlock who were inmates of the two Massachusetts institutions for the feeble-minded or who were awaiting admission. It also includes a discussion of inmates of these institutions or persons on the waiting lists who were mothers of children born out of wedlock. No claim is made that the figures here given are representative of any group other than that forming the basis of the study—those mental defectives who had been so burdensome or so troublesome to society or whose home conditions had been so poor that institutional care was urgently required. Especially under the crowded conditions existing, this qualification applies both to those in the institutions and on the waiting lists.

CHILDREN BORN OUT OF WEDLOCK WHO WERE UNDER THE CARE OF STATE INSTITUTIONS FOR THE FEEBLE-MINDED OR AWAITING ADMISSION THERETO.

Proportion to total number under care or awaiting admission.

During the year studied a total of 2,553 persons¹ were cared for at the two State institutions for the feeble-minded. Of this number, 100—3.9 per cent—were known to have been of illegitimate birth. The percentage was higher for the newer institution at Wrentham

¹ Total for the Massachusetts School for the Feeble-Minded at Waltham given in the Sixty-seventh Annual Report of the Trustees of the Massachusetts School for the Feeble-Minded at Waltham for the Year Ending November 30, 1914. Boston, 1915. P. 15. Figures for the Wrentham State School compiled in the course of this investigation for the calendar year 1914.

than for the older one at Waltham—8.2 per cent for the former and 2.3 per cent for the latter.² Of the 100 inmates born out of wedlock cared for at the two institutions 73 were under 21 years of age.

The inadequacy of institutional provision for the mentally defective results in large waiting lists for admission to the institutions. In 1914 there were 467 applications for admission to the Wrentham State School for persons who could not be received during the year. Sixty-two of these applications—13.3 per cent—were for persons born out of wedlock, all but 4 of whom were under 21 years of age. The waiting list of the Massachusetts School for the Feeble-Minded at Waltham was almost as large as that of the Wrentham School,³ but only 12 of those whose admission was sought were known to have been born out of wedlock; applications for two of these were also on file at Wrentham. The difference in numbers is partly accounted for by the fact that almost half those on the Wrentham waiting list were State wards.

The total number of persons known to have been born out of wedlock whose applications were on file at one or both institutions during the year studied was 72, of whom 67 were under the age of 21 years.

The analysis of the social information concerning the inmates of the two schools and those awaiting admission was limited to children under 21 years of age. Although the facts here given are not representative for all feeble-minded children born out of wedlock, they are of interest as showing the nature of the problem the State must meet in providing care for the most helpless of the large group of children compelled by their mental condition and the circumstances of their birth to depend upon the public for support and protection. Information gathered by those interested in securing increased provision for the feeble-minded indicates clearly that many outside the institutions are in as great need of protection as are those whose admission has already been obtained.⁴

The child at time of admission or at application.

There were 73 children of illegitimate birth under 21 years of age, of whom 64 were white and 9 were colored, receiving care in the two institutions during the year. Of the white children 38 were boys and 26 girls. There were only 2 boys among the colored children. Sixty-

² Total population of the Massachusetts School for the Feeble-Minded in 1914, 1,845; known to have been born out of wedlock, 42. Total population of the Wrentham State School in 1914, 708; known to have been born out of wedlock, 58.

³ In 1916 there were about 400 applications for admission on file at the Massachusetts School for the Feeble-minded at Waltham, also known as Waverley, and 456 at the Wrentham institution. See *Feeble-Minded Adrift*, published by the League for Preventive Work, Boston, 1916.

⁴ See publications of League for Preventive Work, Boston.

seven children born out of wedlock, of whom 59 were white and 8 were colored, were awaiting admission to the institutions. The numerical relation of the sexes among these children was the reverse of that found among the institution inmates, there being 24 boys among the white children and 35 girls. Only 2 colored boys who had been born out of wedlock were on the waiting lists.

At the time of admission to an institution 14 of the children were under 8 years of age; the waiting lists contained the names of 26 children under 8. Exactly half the children in the institutions were under 12 years of age when admitted; 58 per cent of those on the waiting lists were less than 12 years old when application was made.

Table 41 gives the age distribution.

TABLE 41.—*Age on admission or at application of feeble-minded boys and girls born out of wedlock, who were under care or awaiting admission.*

Age on admission or at application.	Children born out of wedlock, under care in 1914.			Children born out of wedlock, awaiting admission in 1914.		
	Total.	Boys.	Girls.	Total.	Boys.	Girls.
Total.....	73	40	33	67	26	41
Under 8 years.....	14	8	6	26	15	11
8-9 years.....	14	11	3	6	5	1
10-11 years.....	9	4	5	7	3	4
12-13 years.....	7	4	3	13	3	10
14-15 years.....	12	3	9	6	.....	6
16-17 years.....	10	7	3	4	.....	4
18-20 years.....	7	3	4	5	.....	5

Of the 132 children in the institutions or awaiting admission whose nativity was reported, Boston was the place of birth of 42, or almost one-third, while 73, or more than half, were born in other parts of the State, 5 of them in State institutions. Of the remaining 17, 5 were born in other New England States, 2 in other parts of the United States, 4 in Canada, and 6 in other foreign countries.

Twenty of the children in the institutions and 18 of those on the waiting lists were residents of Boston, while 53 of the former and 49 of the latter were from other parts of the State. Thus, over one-fourth of all these feeble-minded children born out of wedlock came from the metropolis and less than three-fourths from the rest of the State. This is about the proportion that might have been expected, the population of Boston being approximately one-fifth of the entire population of the State.

Seventeen of the 73 children in the institution were included in the study of the problem in Boston,⁵ 12 in the study of children under care of the division of State minor wards,⁶ and 5 in both studies.

⁵ See Sec. I ch. 2.

⁶ See Sec. II ch. 2.

Three of the 67 awaiting admission were under the care of Boston agencies during the year, 34 under the care of the division of State minor wards, and 10 were included in both studies.

Of great significance is the fact that only 1 of the 73 children born out of wedlock who had been admitted to the institutions and 1 of the 67 awaiting admission were known to have been with their mothers immediately previous to admission or at the time application was made. Fifty-three of the children in the institutions and 59 of those awaiting admission had been separated from their mothers previous to admission or application. In the cases of 19 in institutions and 7 awaiting admission it was not reported whether or not the children had been with their mothers.

Three of the 73 children in the institutions had been living with relatives previous to admission, 1 had been cared for in a foster home, 30 had been living in boarding or free homes, and 13 had been in institutions—7 of them in public infirmaries. The home or place of residence of 26 was not reported. Of the 67 children awaiting admission, 47 were living in boarding or free homes at the time of application; one child was in the mother's own home, 1 in a foster home, 8 in a public infirmary, and 2 in other institutions. The home or place of residence of 8 was not reported.

The conditions making institutional care necessary are brought out by the fact that only 24 of the 73 who were in the institutions, and 10 of the 67 on the waiting lists were not reported to have been under the prolonged care of agencies previous to admission or application. Table 42 gives the types of agencies giving previous care.

TABLE 42.—*Prolonged agency care received prior to admission or application by feeble-minded children born out of wedlock, who were under care of State institutions or awaiting admission.*

Types of agencies giving prolonged care previous to admission or application.	Children born out of wedlock, under care or awaiting admission in 1914.		
	Total.	Under care.	Awaiting admission.
Total.....	140	73	67
Public child caring.....	^a 46	20	^a 26
Private child caring.....	7	3	4
Other.....	^b 8	^b 7	1
Public child caring and other.....	29	11	18
Private child caring and other.....	4	4	—
Public and private child caring.....	8	4	4
Public and private child caring and other.....	4	—	4
No previous prolonged care reported.....	34	24	10

^a In 1 of these cases more than one agency had given prolonged care.

^b In 3 of these cases more than one agency had given prolonged care.

Public child-caring agencies alone had had charge of 46 of these children, while 41 others had received care from public child-caring and from other agencies. Thus, 62 per cent had been charges of pub-

lic child-caring agencies before they were admitted to the schools for the feeble-minded, or were placed on the waiting lists. Nineteen children not receiving care from public child-caring agencies had been under the supervision of private child-caring or of other agencies.

Of the 106 children who had been wards of agencies, 49, or 46 per cent, had been given care by more than one agency. The urgent need of custodial care is indicated by the histories of two children awaiting admission who had at the time of application been under care of four agencies. Three of the children in the institutions and 5 awaiting admission had received care from 3 agencies.

At the time of application or admission the records reported physical defects, diseases, or poor physical conditions for 51, or 36 per cent, of the 140 feeble-minded children of illegitimate birth in institutions or awaiting admission. This is undoubtedly a minimum, since the records of 49 contained no statement in regard to physical condition. Thirty-three children were stated to be in general poor condition. In 7 cases there had been a finding of syphilis or gonorrhea, and in 1 case venereal infection was suspected; 1 of these children was also rachitic, and another had seriously defective vision. The following list shows the distribution of physical defects and diseases among these children:

Total children	140
Good physical condition, so far as known	40
Seriously defective vision	1
Defective hearing	2
Defective speech	1
Crippled or deformed	2
Tubercular	1
Rachitic	2
Epileptic	1
Syphilis or gonorrhea (1 also rachitic; 1 with defective vision)	7
Syphilis suspected	1
General poor condition	33
Physical condition not reported	49

Almost half the children born out of wedlock who were in the schools for the feeble-minded and on the waiting lists were of poor character. Thirty-nine of the 73 in the institutions and 30 of the 67 awaiting admission were reported as having been delinquent or of otherwise poor character. For the children in the institutions the proportions of boys and girls who were known to have been of poor character were practically the same—slightly more than half. For the children awaiting admission, on the other hand, only a third of the boys were reported as having been delinquent or extremely troublesome, as against half the girls. Four of the girls in the institutions and 2 of those awaiting admission were themselves mothers of children born out of wedlock.

Length of time under care or awaiting admission.

The length of time the children born out of wedlock had been cared for in the two schools for the feeble-minded is of greatest sig-

nificance for the older-age groups. (See Table 43.) At the end of the year of this study, 25 of the 73 children under care were between 18 and 21 years of age. Three of those in the oldest group had been in the institutions less than one year; 5, one year; 6, two and three years; 7, four and five years; 3, six to nine years; and 1, ten years. The length of time the institutions had provided care for the children of this age group probably indicates what will continue to be the situation of the majority of these children. Only a negligible proportion had families who would be interested in providing them with homes if it should become practicable for them to leave the institution after a period of training. That most of these children will undoubtedly remain permanent charges of the State is indicated by the fact that only 4 children were discharged from the care of the institutions during the year; 3 of these children were found to be insane and were transferred to hospitals for the insane, and in 1 case the reason for discharge was not reported.

TABLE 43.—*Duration of care received by feeble-minded children of specified ages, born out of wedlock, who were under care of State institutions.*

Age at end of period.	Children born out of wedlock, under care in 1914.					
	Total.	Length of time under care.				
		Less than 1 year.	1 year.	2-3 years.	4-5 years.	6-9 years. 10 years.
Total.....	73	13	12	25	15	7 1
Less than 8 years.....	3	1		2		
8-9 years.....	7	1	3	1	2	
10-13 years.....	19	3	2	11	2	1
14-17 years.....	19	5	2	5	4	3
18 years and over.....	25	3	5	6	7	3 1

Conditions surrounding the care of the feeble-minded in Massachusetts are brought out forcibly in Table 44, which shows the length of time the 67 feeble-minded children of illegitimate birth awaiting admission had had their names enrolled on the waiting lists of the two State institutions. The data are probably representative of all children on the waiting lists during the year of the study. And neither the feeble-minded children from normal homes nor those born without the possibility of home care are registered for institutional care to the extent that they would be if there were a hope of their early admittance. Selections from the waiting lists to fill vacancies are made not only according to length of time awaiting admission, but such factors as the urgency of the need are also taken into consideration.

TABLE 44.—*Length of time on waiting list, feeble-minded children born out of wedlock, who were awaiting admission to State institutions.*

Age at end of period.	Children born out of wedlock awaiting admission in 1914.					
	Total.	Length of time on waiting list.				
		Less than 1 yr.	1 yr.	2 yrs.	3 yrs.	4 yrs.
Total.....	67	17	17	19	11	3
Less than 8 years.....	8	3	1	1	3	.....
8 to 9 years.....	12	.....	6	4	2	.....
10 to 13 years.....	24	7	5	6	4	2
14 to 17 years.....	15	5	2	6	1	1
18 years and over.....	8	2	3	2	1	.....

Three of these children had been awaiting admission to a school for the feeble-minded for four years. Eleven children had been on the waiting lists for three years and 19 for two years. Three-fourths of all the children born out of wedlock had been on the waiting lists for one year or more.

The child's heritage.

The mothers of 4 of the 140 feeble-minded children of illegitimate birth were themselves known to have been born out of wedlock. For the majority nothing definite was known in regard to the circumstances of birth, and this figure undoubtedly falls short of the truth.

The mothers of 70 of the 86 children for whom this information was given were single at the time of the child's birth. The mothers of 2 were married women; of 2, widowed; and of 12, divorced, separated, or deserted. The mother of 1 child was illegally married, and the mothers of 13 children were living as married with the child's father. After the birth of the child the mothers of 2 children were known to have married the fathers, while the mothers of 19 married other men.

The records gave information as to the place of birth of the mothers of 73 of the 140 children. Almost equal numbers were native born and foreign born. The mothers of only 8 were born in Massachusetts.

The age of the mother when the child was born was reported in only 52 cases. The mothers of 8 children were less than 18 years old; of 10, 18 to 20 years; of 11, 21 to 24 years; of 19, 25 to 34 years; and of 4, 35 years and over.

Very little was known about the physical condition of the mothers at the time the children were admitted to institutions or placed on the waiting lists. As has been seen, only two of the children were with their mothers at this time. It was known that the mothers of

16 of the children were dead. Eleven of the 23 whose physical condition was known had physical ailments.

In slightly over half the cases the mothers were reported as having been delinquent or of unsatisfactory character; assuming that all those not so reported were of good character, the mothers of 51 per cent of the feeble-minded children had records of immorality, alcoholism, or were reported as of otherwise bad character. For a total of 57 children immorality on the part of the mother was reported, in 11 cases the mother being also alcoholic and in 2 otherwise delinquent. In 9 other cases the mother was alcoholic, and she was of otherwise bad character in 5. Thus 41 per cent of these feeble-minded children of illegitimate birth had mothers who were known to have led immoral lives, while the mothers of 14 per cent of the children were reported as alcoholic.

The impossibility of normal home care for many of these children and the hereditary mental defect that placed some of them in need of special protection, are brought out by the facts in regard to the mentality of the mothers. The mothers of 32 of the 140 feeble-minded children—more than one-fifth—were reported to be mentally below normal. Diagnosis would, of course, have been out of the question in the case of a large number of the mothers, and the proportion known to be mentally below normal must be considered a minimum. In 4 of the 32 cases the mother was insane; the mothers of 6 children had been diagnosed feeble-minded, while the mother of 1 child was diagnosed subnormal; the mothers of 21 children were probably subnormal or feeble-minded.

The histories revealed the fact that the mothers of 28 children had themselves been under the care of agencies or institutions. In 14 cases the mother had been committed to a correctional institution, and in 2 others they had been before courts and placed on probation. The mothers of 4 had been cared for as dependents, and the mothers of 8 had received other agency care.

The mothers of 24 children had had one or more illegitimate births before the feeble-minded child of the study was born, and the mothers of 33 had later illegitimate births. Of the 33 children, the mothers of 14 had both previous and subsequent illegitimate births. Hence, the mothers of 43 of the 140 children had other births out of wedlock. In 1 case the mother had 4 previous births; in 7 cases, three; in 4, two; and in 12, one. Of the cases in which the mother had subsequent births out of wedlock, there were 3 in which she was known to have had five or more; 11 more in which there were at least two, and 19 others in which there was at least one illegitimate birth. Something of the history and characteristics of the other children of these mothers who had had more than one child born out of wedlock was known in 27 cases. In 25 instances one or more of the other children

were dependent on the public or on private charitable assistance or had been adjudged neglected; in 2 cases there were delinquent children. The mothers of 9 children included in the study were known to have had other children who were feeble-minded.

The following cases illustrate the need which had existed for the protection of the feeble-minded children of illegitimate birth under care or awaiting admission, and the conditions which foster a recurrence of defective mentality and illegitimacy.

A 10-year-old boy of illegitimate birth had been an inmate of a school for the feeble-minded for two years. He had previously been a ward of the State board of charity and had given much trouble because of his dishonesty and untruthfulness. His mother was an inmate of a correctional institution at the time this study was made; she had been committed for a sex offense when the boy was 3 years old, and had been committed again on a similar charge about the time her son was sent to the school for feeble-minded. She was alcoholic and immoral, had syphilis, and was diagnosed subnormal mentally. Her mother also had been immoral, and the whole family were reported to have been drunkards. (Case FM-I 27.)

At the time of this study a 6-year-old child born out of wedlock was awaiting admission to a school for the feeble-minded. She was reported to have congenital syphilis. The girl was in the care of a public child-caring agency and was giving much trouble on account of her mischievous and destructive habits. Her mother had been an inmate at the other State school for the feeble-minded; but she had been removed, much against the superintendent's advice. Before the mother's admission to the institution, she had been a ward of the same child-caring agency which was providing for the child. (Case FM-WL 45.)

A 10-year-old boy—a ward of the State board of charity—had been for three years on the waiting list of one of the institutions. He was untruthful and dishonest and unable to make any progress in school. His mother was an inmate of a hospital for the insane, but she was reported feeble-minded rather than insane. She had married at the age of 17, but after a month she left her husband and went home to her mother. A little more than a year later this child was born, and her husband secured a divorce on grounds of adultery. She was reported to have had a stillborn child before her marriage, and some years afterwards another child was born out of wedlock. The boy's maternal grandmother was reported below normal mentally, as were also an aunt, an uncle, and two cousins. (Case FM-WL 61.)

On the application of a private child-caring agency, a girl 15 years of age with defective sight and hearing was admitted during the year of the study to one of the schools for the feeble-minded. The whereabouts of the mother was unknown, and the child had been living with her grandmother, who, though very good to her, was a woman of low mentality. At this girl's birth the mother was only 14, the alleged father being a man of 70. The mother subsequently had two other children of illegitimate birth by different fathers, and the girl's aunt also had a child born out of wedlock.

At the age of 6 years the girl had a severe attack of scarlet fever, after which the family noticed a change in her mentality. She had reached the fourth grade at the age of 14, but she had spent three years in the third grade. She could not be trusted to do errands; she was mischievous, disobedient, unruly, and quarrelsome. (Case FM-I 64.)

A 12-year-old boy, admitted to one of the institutions during the year of the study, after having been on the waiting list for three years, had been a ward of the State from the time he was 3 years old. His parents, who were never married, were keepers of a disorderly house at the time of the boy's commitment to the State board of charity. They were reported as bad in every way and later became dependent on the city for support. There were two other children of illegitimate birth, one of whom was inferior physically, while the other was peculiar and troublesome.

The boy had been placed by the State in a number of boarding homes. After five years in school, he was only in the second grade at the time of commitment to the school for the feeble-minded. He had given great trouble in the homes in which he had been placed, because of his fondness for handling fire, his stubbornness, and his habits of lying and stealing. (Case FM-I 11.)

Two years previous to the time of this study, at the instance of a private agency in Boston, a 19-year-old girl born out of wedlock was committed to one of the schools for the feeble-minded. She had been arrested for street-walking and was found to be afflicted with both syphilis and gonorrhea. Shortly before, she had given birth to a stillborn child. The court had committed her to the care of the private agency, which sent her to a public infirmary and later gave her a home. All efforts to help her proved futile, and she was finally sent to the institution for the feeble-minded. During the year of the study she was found to be insane and was transferred to a State hospital for the insane. The girl's mother was reported to have been a prostitute. (Case FM-I 32.)

Feeble-minded Mothers of Children Born Out of Wedlock.

The interrelation between feeble-mindedness and illegitimacy can perhaps be arrived at best through a study from the opposite point of approach to that undertaken in the previous pages, namely, a study of persons of defective mentality who have become parents out of wedlock. Other chapters of this report have shown the results of mental examinations of mothers of children of illegitimate birth, and, to a very much smaller extent, of fathers. In the records of institutions, whether for the delinquent or for the feeble-minded, facts in regard to moral character are emphasized for girls and women and are in much less evidence for boys and men. The fact of illegitimate maternity is usually known and recorded, while illegitimate paternity is not. Emphasis is accordingly placed on the segregation of feeble-minded women of childbearing age, while the relation of the father's mentality to this problem has received very little attention.

As a part of the present study an analysis was made of the records of girls and women in the two institutions for the feeble-minded who had had children out of wedlock. This study can, at best, merely point out tendencies and dangers against which the mentally deficient must be protected. Incidentally there emerge certain facts in regard to the recurrence of mental defect and other results of bad heredity and the conditions under which many unfortunate children are born into the world.

The records of 187 girls and women in the two schools for the feeble-minded and on the waiting lists for admission stated that they had had births out of wedlock. Of the 187, 103 were in the institutions and 84 were awaiting admission at the time of the study.

The total number of girls and women in the two institutions who had reached childbearing age was estimated to be 821.⁷ The 103 who had been illegitimately pregnant constituted one-eighth of this population. Had it been possible to base the comparison on the number who had attained childbearing age at the time of admission, the resulting proportion would have been higher.

The total number of girls and women 14 to 45 years of age awaiting admission to the institutions in 1914 was 383. The 84 who had been illegitimately pregnant constituted over one-fifth of this total.

Of the 103 women inmates who had been illegitimately pregnant, 57 were under 21 years of age at the time of admission, 23 of them being less than 18 years old; 34 were between the ages of 21 and 29, inclusive; and 12 were 30 years of age or over. At the time the records were studied, 78 had been in the institutions less than five years; 19, from five to nine years; and 6, ten years and over. One of these women had been cared for by the institution for 17 years, and another for 22 years.

Thirteen of the 84 girls and women awaiting admission were less than 18 years of age when application was made for their care, and 23 were between 18 and 20, making a total of 36 of the 84 who were under 21 years of age. There were 36 between the ages of 21 and 29 years, while 10 were 30 years of age and over at the time of application, and the ages of 2 were not reported.

The length of time these mothers out of wedlock had been awaiting admission to institutions emphasizes the inadequacy of the State's present provision for the feeble-minded who require custodial care. Twenty-nine had been awaiting admission for two years or longer, eight of them having been on the waiting lists for four years or more.

More than one-fourth of the 103 women in the institutions and almost half the 84 awaiting admission had had more than one illegitimate pregnancy. The numbers of illegitimate pregnancies these women had had were as follows:

	In insti- tutions.	Awaiting admission.
Total who had been illegitimately pregnant-----	103	84
Once-----	76	45
Twice-----	17	25

⁷ Number of women 14 years of age and over at Wrentham, in 1914, 286; number of women 15 years of age and over at the Massachusetts School for the Feeble-Minded at Waltham, in 1914, estimated to be 535. The latter figure was obtained by applying the percentage of the population on November 30, 1912, represented by women 15 years of age and over, to the total population for 1914, since age figures for that year were not available.

	In insti- tutions.	Awaiting admission.
Three times.....	6	10
Four times.....	3	2
Five times.....	1	2

The ages of the mothers at the time of the birth of the first child, or the only child, were known for 133 in the institutions or awaiting admission. They were as follows:

Total mothers reported-----		133	
Under 21 years-----	99	Under 21 years—continued.	
12 years-----	1	19 years-----	13
14 years-----	7	20 years-----	18
15 years-----	8	21 years and over-----	34
16 years-----	20	21-24 years-----	24
17 years-----	12	25-29 years-----	7
18 years-----	20	30 years and over--	3

Three-fourths of these mentally irresponsible girls and women whose ages were reported had become mothers before they were 21 years of age. In Massachusetts the "age of consent" is 16 years, and the law provides a penalty of imprisonment for life or for a term of years for illicit relations with girls under this age.⁸ One-eighth of the women whose ages were reported were under 16 when their children were born.

With few exceptions the records stated that the girls and women had been delinquent or difficult to control. As would be expected in these cases, immorality was most frequently reported. A considerable number were said to have been "dishonest," "uncontrollable," "vicious," "irresponsible," "wayward," "stubborn," "destructive," "indolent," with "no idea of right and wrong." Some were described as "man crazy," "having no moral sense," "morally degenerate," "continuously immoral," "depraved," "a danger to the community," "a bad influence to children," while others were "in need of constant protection," "an easy victim," "easily influenced," "childish." In a number of cases there was evidence that the helpless condition of these women had been taken advantage of, often at an early age.

With the exception of 10 of the institution cases and 5 of those awaiting admission, all the records reported the girl or her family as having been known to social agencies. In 58 of the 103 institution cases, and in 59 of the 84 cases awaiting admission, more than one agency had been concerned.

The sources of the applications for care indicate the various kinds of agencies and institutions which had been called upon to deal with these cases, and which had found the girls to be in urgent need of custodial care. It will be noted that in only 6 cases did the applica-

⁸ R. L. 1902, ch. 207, sec. 23.

tion come directly from a relative or other private individual. The sources of the applications were as follows:

	In institutions.	Awaiting admission.
Total who had been illegitimately pregnant-----	103	84
State or city infirmary-----	18	25
Maternity home or hospital-----	6	8
Public child-caring agency-----	7	3
Private child-caring or child-protective agency-----	26	29
Court or institution for delinquent girls-----	8	1
Other agency or institution-----	6	12
Relative or friend-----	1	5
Not reported-----	31	1

At the time application was made to the schools for the feeble-minded for care for the 84 awaiting admission, 15 of these mentally defective girls and women were living in their parental homes, 2 were in the homes of relatives, and 1 was in an adoptive home. Seven were placed out at service under the supervision of agencies and 7 were being provided for by agencies in boarding homes. Eight were in maternity homes or hospitals, 30 in public infirmaries or in almshouses, 4 in other institutions, 1 was a married woman living in her own home, 1 was boarding, and 1 was at housework without agency supervision, and for 7 the location was unknown.

It is significant of the urgent need that had existed for the protection and safeguarding of these women that 17 of the 103 institution inmates were known to have had venereal infection, and that 22 of the 84 for whom care had not been provided at the time the study was made were reported to have been venereally diseased at the time of application or to have previously suffered from syphilis or gonorrhea. The outlook for the children of these feeble-minded and diseased women was most serious.

Thirteen of the 103 feeble-minded mothers who had been admitted to the institution and 5 of the 84 awaiting admission were known to have been themselves born out of wedlock.

The following histories illustrate the relation between defective mentality and illegitimate maternity.

At the age of 23 a woman, herself of illegitimate birth and the mother of a child born out of wedlock, was committed to a State school for the feeble-minded. She had been 7 years in the institution at the time this study was made. Her mother was reported to have been feeble-minded and immoral, and an older sister was said to have been feeble-minded and mentally deranged. At the age of 7 the girl was subjected to mistreatment by her stepfather and was committed to the division of State minor wards. She lived in 20 or more homes during the 14 years she was under care of that agency. The reasons given by the boarding women for refusing to help her were various—she was unreliable, untruthful, ill-tempered, and irresponsible. Her baby was born at a maternity home and became a ward of the State. The mother was in care of a private

child-caring agency at the time of her commitment to the institution for the feeble-minded. (Case FM-I 321.)

Five years before the year covered by this study a 42-year-old woman was admitted to an institution for the feeble-minded. She had had a child born out of wedlock, whose father was a married man with a large family. The woman herself was of illegitimate birth and had been cared for by a children's home for 29 years. She had always been known as mentally deficient. Her mother was said to be a weak-minded woman, who had two other mentally defective children. Her father was the degenerate son of a good family. (Case FM-I 380.)

At the age of 18 a feeble-minded mother of a child born out of wedlock was admitted to a school for the feeble-minded. Soon after admission it was discovered that she was to have a second child of illegitimate birth, and she was sent to the State infirmary for maternity care. The first child had been adopted; the second child died soon after birth. The girl was a paralytic cripple and could not walk without crutches. She had a disagreeable disposition, was dishonest, and her mother had found her impossible to control. Her mother—the grandmother of the children—was reported probably mentally defective. (FM-I 415.)

Some years before the period covered by this study application was made to one of the institutions for the admission of a feeble-minded woman 20 years of age, who was in urgent need of protection. Her admission to the institution was not secured until eight years later; the delay was due partly to difficulty in persuading the girl's mother to sign the commitment papers, but principally to the overcrowded condition of the institution. The woman had had at least one child born out of wedlock before the first application was made and had a second child during the year of the application. Between that time and the date of admission she had two other children of illegitimate birth, the last baby having the same father as the child of another feeble-minded woman who was awaiting admission to the institution during the year studied. (FM-WL x4x.) The woman here described was a prostitute and had served a sentence for idle and disorderly conduct. She received treatment for gonorrhea and erysipelas at one public infirmary; she was cared for by another public infirmary at intervals during a period of four years, her last two babies having been born at this institution. Two of her children were under the care of a private child-caring agency, one was the ward of a public child-caring agency, and the youngest was still at the infirmary at the time covered by this study.

The woman was in poor physical condition, having defective hearing and having lost one eye. She was stubborn and quarrelsome and had a violent temper. She was herself of illegitimate birth and her mother was reported to have been mentally defective, intemperate, immoral, and thoroughly unreliable. (Case FM-I 474.)

The family history of a 26-year-old woman admitted to one of the institutions the year previous to this study showed intemperance, delinquency, immorality, and chronic dependency. The family had been a problem to social agencies from the time of the woman's birth. When she was 8 years old she was placed temporarily in the care of a private agency, and a year later she and her brothers and sisters were adjudged neglected and placed in the care of the same agency. The parents were arrested for keeping a disorderly house. The mother had also been arrested for drunkenness and the father

for larceny; both had served sentences in correctional institutions. When the girl was 12 years old, the mother died of venereal infection and alcoholism.

The girl remained in charge of the child-caring agency until she was 17 years old, having been tried in many homes while under its care. None would keep her long, reporting her as unreliable, lazy, and untruthful. At 17, a private institution for girls assumed her care, and by this agency she was later placed in a private family with which she remained less than a year. She returned to the institution and, being illegitimately pregnant, was sent to a public infirmary, where her child was born. Here the mother remained for two years, until admission to the school for the feeble-minded was secured for her. (Case FM-I 449.)

A 12-year-old imbecile girl had been admitted to a school for the feeble-minded on the application of the State board of charity. Her mother was reported as of low mentality, and the family was generally of low grade and unable to control the girl. Some of the children had been committed to the care of the State as neglected. When the girl was 17 years of age her father insisted that she be returned home. Under strong protest on the part of the authorities, she went home on a visit and did not return. Within a few months the mother wrote that the girl was impossible to control when the father was not at home—that she was quarrelsome and wayward and ought to be returned to the institution; but the school was overcrowded and could not receive her. She was then placed at housework by her father with a woman who encouraged her in misconduct. She became illegitimately pregnant and was finally recommitted to the school for the feeble-minded. The girl was found to have gonorrhea, and the baby had ophthalmia neonatorum. (Case FM-I 315.)

Born out of wedlock, the child of a feeble-minded mother and an intemperate father, both of whom were almshouse inmates, a mentally defective child was brought up by her grandparents, who were of low type mentally and morally. She was reported as indolent, destructive, and mischievous. She gave birth to a child out of wedlock, who became a ward of the State board of charity, and the girl herself was committed to a State institution for the feeble-minded, where she had been for 17 years. (Case FM-I 177.)

A 26-year-old woman had been awaiting admission to an institution for the feeble-minded for two years previous to the time covered by this study. She had been at a public infirmary during all this time. It was reported that her return to the community was out of the question. She had congenital syphilis and had lost two children of illegitimate birth. Her mother was in a State hospital for the insane. Her father had been intemperate. (Case FM-WL 3x7.)

During the year of this study application was made by the State board of charity for the care of a 26-year-old inmate of a public infirmary. She had had two children born out of wedlock and two children of legitimate birth. Her mother had been shiftless and weak and unable to control her children; she had been twice committed to a hospital for the insane. The girl's father had been intemperate.

The girl had her first baby when she was only 17 years old, the father of the child being 40 years older. The child was cared for by relatives and private agencies. Four years after the birth of this child the girl married and had two children of legitimate birth. The children were constantly neglected, the mother returning frequently to the father of her first child. One of the children of legitimate birth died of syphilis, and the care of the other was

finally assumed by the division of State minor wards. Two years before the period covered by this study the woman's husband died. In a little more than a year thereafter she gave birth to a child whose alleged father was her husband's cousin. The child was born at the infirmary, where the mother was kept awaiting admission to an institution for the mentally defective. She was reported to have both syphilis and gonorrhea. (Case FM-WL 9x0.)

THE MASSACHUSETTS PROGRAM FOR THE CARE OF THE FEEBLE-MINDED.

The Massachusetts Special Commission Relative to the Control, Custody, and Treatment of Defectives, Criminals, and Misdemeanants, in its report to the legislature in February, 1919, emphasized the relationship between feeble-mindedness and illegitimacy. The report states:⁹

To any one dealing with the endless procession of illegitimate children; of disease-breeding prostitutes, who are irresponsible; of inebriates with more than a score of commitments in their record and who, because of mental defect, can not be expected to escape the habit or cease their round of courts and jails; the unrestrained woman married to or cohabiting with the feeble-minded man, and begetting a large family of feeble-minded children to add to the troop of repeaters in the courts and public dependents in almshouses and infirmaries—to those working with these problems it is fully apparent that it does not protect the public to seek out the defective in the latter end of his career of lawbreaking and disease spreading and child breeding—after the fact. The palliative method—catching the defective after the harm is done—tends at its worst to breed the very menace that it seeks to remove. It is only by preventive methods that so grave a menace to the public welfare can be dealt with adequately.

The program presented by the commission included the compulsory mental examination in all courts of all persons found guilty who are repeaters or who are suspected of being mentally deficient and treatment according to their condition, the mental examination of inmates of penal and correctional institutions and of minors and expectant mothers in the State Infirmary, the mental examination of retarded children in the public schools, a centralized system of registration of all feeble-minded, the development of a process of supervising feeble-minded persons in the community, the extension of the Wrentham State School to its capacity, and the completion of the third institution for the feeble-minded.

Laws were passed providing for a census of retarded school children, the establishment of special school classes, and a registry of the feeble-minded to be kept by the commission on mental diseases.¹⁰ With these exceptions, the well-rounded program of the special commission failed of enactment into law.

⁹ Report of the Special Commission Relative to the Control, Custody, and Treatment of Defectives, Criminals and Misdemeanants. February, 1919. House No. 1403. Boston, 1919. P. 34.

¹⁰ Acts 1919 ch. 277.

CHAPTER 6. COMPARISON OF THE PROBLEM IN CERTAIN SECTIONS OF THE STATE.

ILLEGITIMACY IN TWO MANUFACTURING CITIES HAVING POPULATIONS OF LESS THAN 110,000.

Two cities in Massachusetts were included in the series of infant-mortality studies conducted by the United States Children's Bureau. In the course of the inquiries in these cities considerable information was obtained in regard to infants born out of wedlock, though the numbers of illegitimate births were too small to permit any conclusive findings. However, since the periods covered by the infant mortality studies were near the period covered by this study of illegitimacy, and since the figures are of interest as suggesting something of the conditions prevailing in manufacturing cities of medium size as contrasted with the situation in Boston, brief summaries of the findings of these two studies in regard to illegitimacy are included in this report.

Brockton, having a population of approximately 62,000 in 1913, is situated in Plymouth County, 21 miles south of Boston, and is one of the most important shoe-manufacturing cities in the United States. Shoe manufacturing is practically the only industry, and the employees are, in the main, skilled, well-paid workers. The general death rate for each year of the period 1910 to 1913 was lower in Brockton than in any other city in Massachusetts having a population of 50,000 or more. The infant-mortality inquiry covered the year November 1, 1912, to October 31, 1913. During that year the total number of registered births was 1,585, including 60 stillbirths and miscarriages; complete data were obtained, chiefly from the mothers, for 1,247 of these births, including 37 stillbirths. Among the live-born infants there were 117 deaths during the first year of life; the infant-mortality rate was 96.7.¹

New Bedford, in Bristol County, 57 miles southeast of Boston, had a population of approximately 107,000 in 1913. It is an important textile-manufacturing city, and also has other important industries. In 1910 more than two-fifths of the population were foreign born. The number of women gainfully employed was relatively large. In 1913 the general infant mortality rate for the city was 143, a very high rate in comparison with the infant mortality in other cities in

¹ U. S. Children's Bureau: *Infant Mortality: Results of a field study in Brockton, Mass., based on births in one year*, by Mary V. Dempsey. *Infant Mortality Series No. 8*. Bureau Publication No. 37. Washington, 1919.

Massachusetts having populations of 50,000 or more. The infant mortality study covered the calendar year 1913. During this period the total number of registered births was 3,633, including 140 stillbirths and miscarriages. For 2,662 of these births, including 75 stillbirths, complete information was obtained, principally from the mothers.² The number of deaths under 1 year of age among these infants was 337; the infant mortality rate was 130.3. An analysis of infant mortality in the different precincts showed five precincts with high rates, and these five were designated as the "unfavorable area." The infant mortality rate for this area was 156.6, while the rate for the rest of the city was 94.6.³

Number and Per Cent of Illegitimate Births.

In Brockton, during the selected year, 36 illegitimate live births and 3 illegitimate stillbirths were registered. The total illegitimate births comprised 2.5 per cent of all births registered in the period; the illegitimate live births comprised 2.4 per cent of all live births registered.

The number of registered illegitimate births in New Bedford during the year selected for study was 104, including 101 live births and 3 stillbirths. Of the total registered births, 2.9 per cent were illegitimate; the same percentage of registered live births were illegitimate.

The percentage of illegitimate live births found in Brockton in the period of the study was only slightly higher than the percentage of illegitimate live births in the State as a whole in 1914—2.4 for Brockton and 2.3 for the State as a whole. The percentage of 2.9 in New Bedford was considerably higher than the percentage for the State as a whole. In fact, in 1914 New Bedford had the highest percentage of illegitimate births of any city in the State having a population of 50,000 or more, with the exception of Boston, where the rate was 3.9.

Infant Mortality.

In Brockton, 7 of the 36 infants born out of wedlock during the selected year, exclusive of stillbirths, died before they had reached their first birthday. "It is probable," the report states, "that some of the 12 children who could not be traced till their first birthday died outside the city. At least 19 per cent of the live-born infants died during their first year, indicating, though the basis for the figures is small, a tendency toward a rate twice as high as for legitimate children."⁴

² All illegitimate births were excluded from the analysis.

³ U. S. Children's Bureau: *Infant Mortality: Results of a field study in New Bedford, Mass., based on births in one year*, by Jessamine S. Whitney. *Infant Mortality Series No. 10*, Bureau Publication No. 68. Washington, 1920.

⁴ U. S. Children's Bureau: *Infant Mortality: Results of a field study in Brockton, Mass., based on births in one year*, by Mary V. Dempsey. *Infant Mortality Series No. 8*, Bureau Publication No. 37. Washington, 1919. P. 68.

In New Bedford all or part of the information desired was secured for 63 of the 104 illegitimate births. The report states :⁵

Among the 63 births investigated, 2 stillbirths and 18 deaths occurred; in 2 cases it was not reported whether the child survived the first year or not. The infant mortality rate for this group was therefore at least 305. If the entire group of 101 live births is compared with the 35 known deaths in this group, as shown by death certificates, the infant mortality rate was even higher, 347. This rate was over two and a half times as high as the rate for infants of legitimate birth.

Mortality among infants of illegitimate birth would appear to be higher in New Bedford than in Boston, though the relative difference between mortality among infants born in wedlock and among those born out of wedlock does not seem to be as great in the former city as in the latter; the mortality among infants born in wedlock, as well as among infants of illegitimate birth, was much higher in New Bedford than in Boston. The mortality rate among infants born out of wedlock in Boston, based on births and deaths in the same calendar year, was 281, and the rate based on deaths during the first year of life of infants born during the year was 251.5;⁶ in New Bedford the rate was 305 among the group of infants for whom information was obtained, and 347 among all infants born out of wedlock. On the other hand, the Boston rate first quoted was three times the rate for infants born in wedlock, while the New Bedford rate for all infants born out of wedlock was 2.7 times as high as the rate found among the infants included in the New Bedford infant mortality inquiry, all of whom were of legitimate birth.

The New Bedford rate of 305 for infants of illegitimate birth for whom information was obtained was almost twice as high as the general infant mortality rate for the so-called "unfavorable area" in the city; it was more than three times as high as the rate for the "favorable area."

The Care of the Child.

The information secured in regard to the care of children born out of wedlock in Brockton was very meager. Complete schedules were obtained from the mothers of 8 infants, and in some instances partial data were secured from social agencies. Of the 35 children who lived at least two weeks, 10 were known to have lived with the mothers; 12 were known to have lived away from the mothers, of whom 4 were boarded in private families, 3 were at a "baby farm," 2 were adopted, 1 was cared for at an infant asylum,

⁵ U. S. Children's Bureau: *Infant Mortality: Results of a field study in New Bedford, Mass., based on births in one year*, by Jessamine S. Whitney. *Infant Mortality Series No. 10*, Bureau Publication No. 68. Washington, 1920.

⁶ This rate is known to be an understatement, because of the number of infants concerning whom no information was obtained.

1 was boarded by the division of State minor wards, and 1 was living with relatives; in 13 instances the child's home or place of residence was not reported.

In New Bedford partial or complete information was obtained in regard to 61 of the 101 live-born infants. Four of these 61 infants died before they had reached the age of two weeks. Of the remaining 57, 9 were living with both parents at the time the information was secured or previous to death,⁷ 28 were living with their mothers, 2 were supported by the fathers in the homes of the paternal grandparents, and 18 were placed in institutions, boarded out, cared for by relatives, or adopted. Hence, 37 of the 57 infants were living with their mothers, and 20 were separated from them.

Court proceedings for the support of the children were initiated in the cases of 16 of the 104 illegitimate births in New Bedford in 1913, 11 under the old law and 5 under the 1913 act. The proportion of court cases was much smaller than that found in the Boston study, which covered the year 1914. The difference may be due partly to the fact that the new law was not in effect until July, 1913. Of the 16 cases, 5 were not brought to trial because the defendant could not be found. In 9 cases some provision for the child was made.

Nationality, Age, and Occupation of Mother.

Of the 39 illegitimate births in Brockton, including stillbirths, 24 were to native mothers and 15 to foreign-born mothers. In New Bedford, of the 63 illegitimate births, including stillbirths, concerning which information was obtained, 25, or two-fifths, were to native-white mothers and 38, or three-fifths, to foreign-born mothers. The New Bedford report states: "The large proportion of native white among these mothers is noteworthy, since the percentage of native white among the mothers of legitimate births was only 28."⁸ This finding is in accord with the 1914 figures for Boston, which showed that 53.8 per cent of the illegitimate births were to white mothers born in the United States, as compared with 35.2 per cent of the legitimate births.⁹

The mothers of more than two-fifths of the 63 infants born out of wedlock in New Bedford for whom this information was secured were under 20 years of age. About the same proportion of mothers of infants born out of wedlock in Boston for whom this information was secured were under the age of 21 years.¹⁰

⁷ The information was secured during either the second year of the child's life or the first few months of the third year.

⁸ U. S. Children's Bureau: *Infant Mortality: Results of a field study in New Bedford, Mass., based on births in one year*, by Jessamine S. Whitney. *Infant Mortality Series No. 10*, Bureau Publication No. 68. Washington, 1920.

⁹ See p. 108.

¹⁰ See p. 110.

In New Bedford, as in Boston, a large proportion of the mothers were gainfully employed during the year before the child's birth, but the occupational distribution in the two cities was very different. Of the 63 New Bedford mothers for whom information was obtained, 35, or more than half, worked in cotton mills; only 8 were employed in domestic service. Of the mothers of infants born out of wedlock in Boston for whom this information was obtained, 47 per cent were engaged in domestic or personal service and 23 per cent in factories.

ILLEGITIMACY IN A RURAL SEACOAST SECTION.¹¹

Scope and Method of Study.

In order to obtain data in regard to a sparsely populated, largely rural section, which should be in contrast to the study of the problem in Boston, a brief survey was made in Barnstable County (Cape Cod) and in the island counties of Dukes (Marthas Vineyard) and Nantucket.

In 1910 the combined population of these three counties was 35,008, and in 1914 it was estimated to be 36,605.¹² The populations of Barnstable and Nantucket Counties decreased steadily between 1870 and 1910, and the population of Dukes County was less in 1910 than in 1900. However, the State census of 1915 showed slight increases over the 1910 population. Although 44 per cent of the population of Barnstable County was classified in 1910 as urban, living in towns of 2,500 or more inhabitants, the population of the largest town was only 4,676. In Dukes County the entire population was classified as rural, the largest town having in 1910 only 1,196 inhabitants. The county and town of Nantucket are coincident, the population in 1910 being 2,962. More than four-fifths of the inhabitants of these three counties were native-born whites. About one-seventh were foreign-born whites, of whom there were more Portuguese than of any other nationality. Three per cent were Negroes. The principal industries of the district are fishing and cranberry raising.

The study covered illegitimate births in these three counties during the 10-year period 1905 to 1914, inclusive. Birth records filed at the State House in Boston furnished the preliminary data. Information was secured through interviews with relatives, friends, and town officials in regard to the children registered as born out of wedlock and other children discovered in the course of the inquiry to have been born out of wedlock during the period to mothers

¹¹ The field work for this part of the report was done by Katherine M. Herring, M. D.

¹² See Table 1, p. 271. Estimate based on Thirteenth Census of the United States, 1910, and on Massachusetts State Census of 1915.

living in the district. Some of the children or their families were known to social agencies in Boston or to State institutions and agencies, and information was secured from the records of these agencies and institutions. The field work was done during the late summer and fall of 1915.

Number of Illegitimate Births and Per Cent of Total Births.

During the 10-year period the total number of live births registered in the three counties was 6,508, of which 113 were registered as illegitimate. The percentage of illegitimate births for this time period, 1.7, was slightly lower than the percentage, 2.0, for the year 1914. During that year the percentage for the three counties combined was higher than for any other county except Bristol—the county in which New Bedford is located—and Suffolk, most of which the city of Boston comprises. However, the average percentage for the 10 years for Barnstable, Dukes, and Nantucket Counties was as low as or lower than the 1914 percentages for seven other counties.¹³

In the course of the field study information was obtained for 99 of the 113 children registered as of illegitimate birth. Of the 14 others, 1 was found to have been born in wedlock, 1 was found to have been a stillbirth, and for 12 no information could be secured.

In addition to the 99 children included in the study whose births were registered as illegitimate in the district, 13 children were found to have been born out of wedlock in the district, though their births were not registered as illegitimate, 6 were found to have been born outside the area covered to mothers resident in the district, and 3 children reported on the birth records as stillborn were found to have been live-born children. Hence the total number of children of illegitimate birth included in the study was 121. These 121 children forming the basis of the study were born to 97 mothers. The part of this chapter relating to mothers of children born out of wedlock deals with these 97 mothers and with 6 more who gave birth only to stillborn children during the period.

Mortality of Children Born out of Wedlock.

Twelve of the 121 children born out of wedlock during the period were known to have died before the time of the inquiry. In 16 cases it was not known whether the child was living or dead. Of those who died, 8 died in the first year of life, 3 in the second or third year, and 1 child was 6 years of age. The children who were known to have died in infancy comprised only 7 per cent of the total. This percentage is very low in comparison with the proportion of infant deaths shown in other parts of the report. In Boston in 1914, 27 per cent of

¹³ See Table 1, p. 271.

the children born out of wedlock were known to have died during the first year of life.¹⁴ In New Bedford 35 per cent of the infants of illegitimate birth died under 1 year of age. It is probable that the proportion of infant deaths among the 16 children in regard to whom it was not known whether they were living or dead was larger than among the whole group. But even assuming, for comparative purposes, that all the 16 died in infancy, the percentage of infant deaths would still have been smaller than that found in Boston or New Bedford—20 per cent for the three counties as compared with 27 per cent and 35 per cent for Boston and New Bedford, respectively.

At the time of the inquiry 77 per cent of the children were surviving, 10 per cent were dead, and in regard to 13 per cent it was not known whether they were living or dead.

Place of Birth.

The place of birth was reported for 99 of the 121 children born during the period. The majority of the children—62 of the 99—were born in the mother's parental home. Twelve were born in the mother's own home, 12 in the mother's place of employment, 2 in the homes of relatives, 4 in private homes of other types, 3 in State institutions, and 4 in hospitals. The number of institution births—7 out of 99—was very small. In Boston 77 per cent of the illegitimate births occurred in hospitals, maternity homes, or the public infirmary.

Only 1 of the institution births occurred in the district studied. The 4 children born in hospitals, 2 of those born in State institutions, and 1 whose place of birth was not reported were known to have been born outside the district comprised of the three counties. Hence, a total of 7 children were known to have been born outside the district. On the other hand, 8 of the births in the district were to nonresident mothers, of whom 1 had come to the home of a relative in order to conceal the birth from her friends in the town where she lived, and 1 had taken a place at housework in the district for the same purpose.

The Care of the Child.

Time with mother.

The children remained with their mothers to a much greater extent than was indicated by the findings for children born out of wedlock in Boston.¹⁵ Of the 93 children known to be living at the end of the period, 66 had lived with their mothers the entire time; of the 81 children 1 year of age and over, 56 had spent their entire lives

¹⁴ See p. 134. This per cent is based on the number of infants known to have died, whether or not death certificates were found for them. The percentage is an understatement because of the number of infants for whom no information was secured.

¹⁵ See pp. 139-143.

with their mothers, and all but 5 of the others had lived with their mothers at least a year. The 66 children who had lived with their mothers the entire time comprised 61 per cent of the 109 children who were not known to have died and 71 per cent of the 93 children known to be living at the end of the period. The age of the child at the end of the period and the length of time kept with mother are given in Table 45.

TABLE 45.—*Age of child at end of period and length of time kept with mother.*

Age at end of period.	Children born out of wedlock during period and known to be living at end of period.					
	Total.	Length of time kept with mother.				
		Entire life.	Two years or more.	One year.	Less than one year.	Not reported.
Total.....	93	66	9	4	7	7
Less than 1 year.....	11	9			2	
1 year.....	9	5		1	1	2
2 years.....	8	6			a 2	
3 years.....	15	13		1		1
4 to 5 years.....	18	13	1	1	2	1
6 to 7 years.....	18	12	5	1		
8 to 9 years.....	13	7	3			3
Not reported.....	1	1				

a Including 1 whose mother died in childbirth.

Of the 12 children who died 7 had lived with their mothers up to the time of death, 2 had been separated from them at some time prior to death, and in 3 cases the length of time with the mother was not reported.

Last disposition of child, and by whom supported.

At the end of the period, 69 of the 93 children known to be surviving were living with their mothers, 21 were separated from them, and in 3 cases it was not known whether the child was living with or separated from the mother. The proportion of three-fourths living with their mothers is somewhat higher than the proportion—less than two-thirds—found for infants in New Bedford.

The homes or places of residence of the children at the time of the inquiry were as follows:

Total known to be living.....	93
With mother.....	69
Home of mother and father.....	6
Home of mother and stepfather.....	13
Mother's independent home.....	6
Mother's parental home.....	32
Home of relatives.....	1
Mother's place of employment.....	4
State Infirmary.....	1
Not reported.....	6

Separated from mother	21
Mother's parental home	11
Boarding home	2
Adoptive home	1
Under care of division of State minor wards.....	7
Not reported	3

More than one-third of the children whose location was reported were living with their mothers in the homes of their maternal grandparents. Almost half were living with their maternal grandparents, either with or away from their mothers. More than one-fifth of the children were living with their mothers and fathers or mothers and stepfathers. It is noteworthy that only one of the children was living in an adoptive home.

Relatives were supporting 74 of the 93 children—in 56 cases without outside assistance and in 18 with the help of public or private relief agencies. Overseers of the poor supported 4 children, and the State provided for 7 through the division of State minor wards and for 1 in the State infirmary. In 2 cases support came from other sources, and in 5 the type of support was not reported.

Court action.

Court action had been brought in connection with 25 of the 121 children born out of wedlock during the period. In 15 of these cases proceedings were brought to secure support from the father—13 under the old law and 2 under the new act. The parents of 6 children were arrested for lewd and lascivious cohabitation; 2 fathers were arrested for rape; 1 mother was brought to court for concealment of birth, and 1 for neglect of the child. Of the 15 children for whose support court action was brought, the fathers of 2 were ordered to support the children; 1 case was dismissed because the parents married and another because the mother died; 7 cases were settled out of court; in 2 cases the defendant was found not guilty; 1 case was dismissed because of lack of evidence; and in 1 case the outcome was not reported.

Agency care.

Of the 121 children born out of wedlock during the period, 48, or 40 per cent, were known to have received prolonged or temporary care from agencies, or to have lived in families receiving relief and other assistance from public or private agencies. Nineteen children received prolonged care from public or private agencies, 7 received hospital or other temporary care, and 22 children not directly under agency care lived in families receiving public or private aid. Only 11 children—9 per cent of the total—were known to have received prolonged care from public or private child-caring agencies. Nine of these children had been under the care of the division of State

minor wards. Six children had been under the direct, prolonged care of public relief agencies, and 2 children had been cared for at the State infirmary.

That one-third of the children received prolonged care from public or private child-caring, public relief, or other public agencies, or lived in families receiving public or private aid, is indicative of the poor economic status of the parents and other relatives. Although a large proportion of the children born out of wedlock were cared for in the homes of their mothers or their grandparents, aid was frequently necessary for the families who assumed the responsibility for them. However, the amount of agency care was proportionately much smaller than that found in the study of infants born out of wedlock in Boston. More than three-fifths of those infants were known to have received prolonged care from agencies during the first year of life, and more than a third of the total had been under the care of child-caring or child-protective agencies.¹⁰

Mothers of Children Born out of Wedlock.

During the 10-year period 1905-1914, 103 mothers residing temporarily or permanently in the counties of Barnstable, Dukes, or Nantucket gave birth to children out of wedlock. Six of these mothers had stillborn children only during the period; 97 were the mothers of the 121 children whose histories were discussed above. Of the 103 mothers 64 lived in Barnstable County, 9 in Dukes County, 22 in Nantucket County, and 8 had come to the district shortly before confinement for the purpose of concealing the birth from friends and relatives at home.

Information in regard to the total number of illegitimate births, including stillbirths, was obtained for 101 of the 103 mothers. These 101 mothers had had 148 illegitimate births. Of these, 140 were live births and 8 were stillbirths. There was one case of plural birth, so that the total number of live-born children was 141. Of the 101 mothers 76 had had one illegitimate birth; 13, two; 6, three; 3, four; 2, five; and 1, six.

Race and nativity.

Of the 103 mothers 81 were white, 11 belonged to the Negro race, and 11 had strains of both Indian and Negro blood. All but 5 of the white mothers were born in the United States; 3 of these 5 were born in Canada, 1 in England, and 1 in Finland. Of the Negro mothers, 5 were native born; 4 were foreign born of Portuguese parentage; 1 was of Portuguese parentage, but the place of birth was not reported; and the nativity and parentage of 1 was not reported.

¹⁰ See pp. 135-136.

All the Indian-Negro mothers were born in the United States. The proportion of native-white mothers—almost three-fourths—was lower than the proportion—more than four-fifths—of native white among the total population of the three counties. The proportion of Negro and Indian-Negro mothers was greatly in excess of the proportion of Negroes and Indians in the general population.

Age.

The age at the birth of the first child out of wedlock was reported for 93 of the 103 mothers. Eighteen mothers—19 per cent of those reported—were under the age of 18 years. This percentage is higher than that found among mothers of infants born out of wedlock in Boston, but the two figures are not entirely comparable, because some of the Boston mothers had had previous illegitimate births, so that the age at the birth of the 1914 baby was not always the age at birth of the first child out of wedlock.

Of the mothers in the three counties who were under the age of 18 at the birth of the first child out of wedlock, 1 was 14 years of age; 1, 15; 7, 16; and 9 were 17 years old. Between the ages of 18 and 20 years, inclusive, were 32 mothers, making a total of 50—more than half of all reported—who were under the age of 21. Twenty-eight mothers were 21 to 24 years of age, inclusive; 13 were 25 to 34 years; and 2 had passed the age of 35.

Civil condition.

At the time of the birth of the first child out of wedlock during the 10-year period, 87 of the 103 mothers were single; 1 was illegally married; 5 were married; 3 were widowed, divorced, or separated; 4 were deserted; and the civil condition of 3 was not reported. The proportion of single women was somewhat smaller than that found among mothers of infants born out of wedlock in Boston. The husband of 1 of the 5 married women was serving a long term in prison, and the husband of another was on a sea voyage.

At the time of the inquiry 2 of the 87 single mothers were dead; 27 had been married, 55 were still single, and the marital histories of 3 were not reported. Twelve of the 27 who had married were known to have married the fathers of their children; 9 of these were living with their husbands at the time of the inquiry, and 3 had been deserted. Of the 15 who had married men not known to be the fathers 12 were living with their husbands, 2 had been divorced, and 1 had been deserted. Three of the 5 women who were married at the birth of the first child during the period were later divorced from their husbands. One of these women subsequently married a man not the father of her child.

At the time of the inquiry 55 of the 101 mothers who were living were single; 1 was illegally married; 25 were married; 7 were widowed, divorced, or separated; 8 were deserted; and the civil condition of 5 was not reported. Thirteen mothers were known to have had legitimate births.

Occupation.

The occupation of the mother before the birth of the first child during the period was reported for 94 of the 103 mothers. Slightly less than three-fifths of these 94 mothers were gainfully employed. This proportion is considerably smaller than that found among mothers of infants born out of wedlock in Boston. Of the 55 who were gainfully employed, 29 were servants in private homes, 13 were employed in hotels or boarding houses, 4 did gainful work at home, 2 went out by the day as cleaners and laundresses, and 7 were employed in occupations of other types. This occupational distribution is natural in view of the absence of industrial opportunities aside from domestic and personal service in the district covered by the study.

Occupation at the time of the inquiry was reported for 74 of the 101 mothers living at that time. Of these mothers, 39 were not gainfully employed, 1 of them being an inmate of an institution for the feeble-minded. Of the 35 who were gainfully employed, 15 were in domestic service in private families, 8 were employed in hotels or boarding houses, 5 did gainful work at home, 2 went out by the day as cleaners and laundresses, and 5 were engaged in occupations of other types.

Mental condition.

Thirteen mothers—13 per cent of all—had been diagnosed feeble-minded. This percentage is considerably larger than the percentages found in other parts of the study. Of the mothers of infants born out of wedlock in Boston in one year, 5 per cent had been diagnosed feeble-minded; the mothers of 6 per cent of the children under the care of Boston agencies had been so diagnosed. The higher percentage in the rural seacoast section may be partly due to the more complete information secured by means of the field study, but the difference is sufficiently great to indicate a larger percentage of feeble-mindedness among the mothers described in this chapter of the report.

Besides the mothers who had been diagnosed feeble-minded, 24—23 per cent of all—were reported probably subnormal or feeble-minded. This percentage is very much higher than the percentages found in other sections of the inquiry and may also be accounted for in part by the completeness of the information secured.

Character and agency record.

Nearly three-fifths of the mothers—60 of the 103—had been the mothers of more than one child out of wedlock or had been immoral repeatedly. This proportion is larger than that found in other sections of the study. Five mothers were professional prostitutes; 27 others had been promiscuous in their sex relations, 4 of whom were feeble-minded women who had been victimized by many men.

More than one-third of the mothers—37 of the 103—had been before the courts or had been known to social agencies. Eighteen mothers had been before the courts; 6 of these mothers had been inmates of correctional institutions. One mother had been an inmate of an institution for the feeble-minded, and another of an institution for the insane. Overseers of the poor had aided 15 mothers, 3 of whom had been under the care of correctional institutions. Agencies of other types had cared for 5 mothers not included above and for 3 who had been before the courts or under the care of overseers of the poor.

Home conditions.

At the time of the inquiry 35 of the 101 mothers who were alive were living in their parental homes; 27 in homes of their own, including 1 living with a man to whom she was not married, 2 with relatives, 12 in their places of employment, 3 in institutions, and the mode of living of 22 was not reported.

The mother's parents were living together in 64 of the 101 cases. In 9 cases the mother's father was dead, and in 2 her mother; the father of 1 was in prison; the fathers of 4 and the mothers of 2 had deserted; the parents of 1 were separated. In 18 cases nothing was known of the mother's parents.

Both parents of five mothers were feeble-minded. The mother of one and the fathers of two had been insane.

Of the 83 cases in which information in regard to home conditions of the mothers was obtained, there were only 23 in which the parental home was good, so far as known, and in three of these cases the father was dead or had deserted his family or the parents were separated. Immoral conditions existed in 21 homes, in 2 of which there was also alcoholism. In six other homes alcoholism existed. Considerably more than one-third of the families—31 of the 83 concerning which information was obtained—were dependent upon public or private aid. In 13 of these cases there was also alcoholism or immorality in the home. Very congested living conditions, a mode of life which was most primitive, or otherwise poor conditions existed in 15 homes. Hence, in a total of 60 of the 83 cases in which information in regard to conditions in the mother's parental home was ob-

tained, immorality, alcoholism, dependency, or otherwise poor conditions existed.

Of the 35 mothers who were living in their parental homes at the time of the inquiry, there were 10 whose home conditions were good so far as known. In seven homes immoral conditions existed. Fourteen families—including four in whose homes immorality existed, were dependent upon public or private aid. In eight other homes, alcoholism or otherwise poor conditions were found.

Summary.

In the rural section studied the problem appeared to be largely chargeable to family degeneracy or to the weak mentality or bad moral character of the mother. Almost three-fourths of the mothers, the character of whose parental home was reported, had lived under poor home influences. More than half, for whom age was reported, when their first child was born illegitimately, were under the legal age of majority. The proportion of mothers who had been diagnosed feeble-minded was more than twice that reported in other parts of the study. More than one-third were definitely known to be feeble-minded, or were reported as probably defective in mentality. The conditions in the parental homes and the mentality of the mothers undoubtedly bore a causative relationship to the proportion—nearly three-fifths—of all the mothers who were reported as having had more than one child out of wedlock or as being repeatedly immoral, and who probably in part accounted for the more than one-third who had been before the courts or were known to social agencies.

In striking contrast to the situation discovered in the metropolis, three-fourths of the surviving children were with their mothers at the time the study was made. Almost half the children whose location was reported were living in the homes of their maternal grandparents. This indicates a different attitude on the part of the parents of these mothers from that oftenest encountered in the city districts. From the standpoint of the physical welfare of the infants this seemed to be a desirable situation; the infant mortality rate was very much lower than in the large city. On the other hand, low standards of family life prevailed in a large proportion of the families of these mothers in the rural section, and the conditions under which the children were being reared were harmful to their development. Only 9 per cent of the children born out of wedlock in the 10-year period, concerning whom information was obtained, were known to have received prolonged care from child-caring agencies. However, a considerable number of the families with whom the children lived received charitable aid.

The problem was found to be largely local. There was neither the influx of unfortunates that is usual in the large centers nor the considerable number of departures of prospective mothers wishing to conceal their condition or to dispose of their infants. The very conditions that helped to create much of the problem were responsible for the smaller proportion of the children thrust upon the public for care, and, by leaving mother and child together, probably kept lower the infant mortality rate. What the situation involved in its broader child-welfare aspects is indicated by the interrelation of bad home influences, poverty or shiftlessness, mental defect, and personal irresponsibility found in so many of the histories of the forbears and guardians of these children.

.

INDEX.

Except where otherwise stated, *births, birth rates, deaths, mortality rates, children, infants, mothers, and fathers* concern children born out of wedlock. *Final* indicates the end of period or close of care; *initial, previous*, at or before the beginning of period or of care; *S. M. W.* stands for division of State minor wards.

- Abode (*see* Birth, place of; Home conditions).
- Abode at specified ages, infants born in 1914, 144.
- Abode (final), of children, 172, 174, 292, 329, 391.
Of rural seacoast mothers, 396.
- Abode (previous), of children, 158, 159, 161, 162, 282, 327, 352, 354, 371.
Of mothers, 119, 217, 304, 331, 380, 396.
- Actions for support (*see* Support actions).
- Adequate provision certified, 250, 261.
- Adopted children, 38, 274, 336.
And delinquency, 57.
- Adopting person, relationship of, 337.
- Adoption, definition, 333.
In Boston, 174.
In court cases, 242.
In four counties, 38, 336.
Laws, 334.
- Age and conduct, minor wards, 299.
- Age and sex, children under S. M. W., 279.
- Age at adoption, 337.
- Age at birth of child, 109, 115, 205, 221, 302, 331, 387, 394.
- Age at birth of first child or at first pregnancy, 367, 379, 394.
- Age at commitment to institutions for delinquents, 343.
- Age at death, infants born in 1914, 91.
- Age of child, and subsequent births to mother, 222.
At initiation of support action, 237.
- Age of father, 38, 127, 205.
- Age of mother, and her other illegitimate pregnancies, 221, 365, 367, 387.
- Agencies and institutions, Boston, 75, 149.
State, 27, 30, 266.
- Agencies, extent of problem in, 51.
- Agency care, essentials of, 68.
Previous prolonged (*see* Prolonged care, previous).
Prolonged (*see* Prolonged care).
Temporary (*see* Temporary care).
- Agency records of mothers, 120, 224, 303, 377, 396.
- Agency supervision at application, 282.
- Ages, final, of children, 133, 170, 172, 175, 290, 321, 373, 391.
- Ages, initial, of children, 51, 136, 155, 157, 163, 280, 327, 343, 370.
- Ages of parents, 38, 205.
- Aid (*see* Prolonged care; Prolonged care, previous; Temporary care).
- Analysis, method of, and sources of information, 32.
- Anti-social tendencies, 65.
- Applications for care:
Comparison, children born in wedlock, 313, 314.
Feeble-minded mothers, 379.
Sources of and reasons for, 53, 164, 287, 328.
- Background of illegitimacy, summary, 38.
- Birth, conditions surrounding, 43, 102.
- Birth, place of:
Adopted children, 338.
And infant deaths, 97, 101, 134, 138.
Boston infants, 1914, 102.
Rural seacoast children, 390.
- Birth registration, 80, 87.
- Births, distribution in State, 270.
Foreign or native, 154, 192.
- Births, live:
Boston, in 1910-1914, 36, 83.
In 1914, 36, 85.
Brockton and New Bedford, 385.
Massachusetts, 1914, 270.
Rural seacoast section, 1905-1914, 389.
- Births per 1,000 single etc. women, Boston, 1910-1914, 84.
- Births to and pregnancies of mother, total, 50, 115, 118, 221, 277, 303, 327, 331, 357, 367, 375, 378, 393.
- Boston agencies, cases under care, 36, 135.
Expenditures, estimated, 153.
List of, 75, 149.
Prolonged and temporary care by, 151.
- Boston children under State infirmary care, 327.
- Boston courts, administration of "illegitimate-children act" (*see* "Illegitimate children act").
- Boston problem, extent, 83, 154.
Introduction, 74.

Boston study, method and scope, 80.
Brockton problem, 384.

Age and nativity of mothers, 387.
Births and infant mortality, 385.
Care of child, 386.
Occupation of mothers, 388.

Care, duration (*see* Duration of care).
Insuring mother's, 67.

Care of the child:

By Boston agencies, 170.
In Brockton and New Bedford, 386.
In rural seacoast section, 390.
Of infants born in 1914, 132.
(*See also* Prolonged care; Temporary care.)

Cash payments, 242, 244, 251, 261.

Central municipal court, 255.

Character, of grandparents, 40, 199.

Of mothers, 118, 199, 358.

Of parents, 40, 45, 199.

Characteristics of children—

Cared for with delinquent mothers, 361.

In institutions for delinquents, 349.

Under Boston agencies, 180.

Under State infirmary care, 326.

Under S. M. W., 296.

Characteristics, of mothers, 40, 114, 118, 120, 196, 301, 358, 364, 374, 396.

Of parents and grandparents, 39, 120, 193, 196, 199, 304, 359.

(*See also* Conduct.)

Certificates of adequate provision, 250, 261.

Child care (*see* Care of the child).

Child-caring and child-protective agencies, 135, 155, 156, 163, 174, 175, 184, 195.

Child dependency, 50, 65.

Child-welfare standards, 68.

Children cared for with delinquent mothers (*see* Infants cared for with delinquent mothers).

Children cared for with mothers by State infirmary, 38, 325.

Abode, final, 329.

Abode, previous, 327.

Age, initial, 327.

Applications, sources of and reasons for, 328.

Boston children included, 327.

Died or discharged, 328.

Duration of care, 328.

Family groups, represented, 327.

Fathers (status, occupations, contributions to support), 332.

Mothers, 325, 330, 331.

Nativity, race, residence, and sex, 326.

Presence with or separation from mothers, 327.

Children committed as delinquents to State Institutions, 340 et seq.

Abode, types and character of, 352, 354.

Age at commitment, 343.

Agency care, previous, 356.

Characteristics, 349.

Committed in 1914, 344.

Children committed as delinquents to State institutions—Continued.

Comparison with all children committed in 1914, 342, 344, 345, 348.

Delinquencies, charged, 346.

Total, 350.

Duration of care, 344.

Hereditary influences, 352.

Institutions to which committed, 341.

Introduction to study, 340.

Mentality, 58, 346.

Nativity, 345.

Parental characteristics, 357.

Physical condition, 346.

Proportion of total, 342.

Psychological factors, 351.

Purpose of study, 341.

Residence and nativity, 344.

Separation from mother, 358.

Sex distribution, 348, 350.

Sources of information, 341.

Summaries, 37, 56, 360.

Under care in, 1914, 344.

Children in State institutions for the feeble-minded or awaiting admission, 37, 59, 368.

Abode at application, 371.

Age (final) and duration of care, 373.

And time awaiting admission, 374.

Age (initial), and sex, 370.

Agencies giving previous care, 371.

Awaiting admission, 369.

Boston children included, 370.

Conduct, 372.

Duration of care, 372.

Heritage, 374.

Mother's other children, 375.

Mother's status and characteristics, 374.

Physical condition, 372.

Prolonged care, previous, 371.

Proportion of total, 368.

Status at admission or application, 369.

Summaries, 37, 59.

Time awaiting admission, 374.

Under care, 369.

Children included in various parts of the study, 36.

Adopted children, 38, 274, 336.

Brockton children, 385. (*See also* Brockton problem.)

Children cared for with mothers by State infirmary, 38, 325.

Children committed as delinquents to State institutions, 37, 59, 340.

Children in actions for support, 38, 233, 392. (*See also* "Illegitimate children act.")

Children in State institutions for the feeble-minded, or awaiting admission, 37, 368.

Children of rural seacoast section, 38, 389. (*See also* Rural seacoast section problem.)

Children under care of Boston agencies, 36, 147.

Children included in various parts of the study—Continued.

Children under care of the division of State minor wards, 37, 273.

Infants born in Boston, 41, 80.

Infants cared for with delinquent mothers, 37, 361.

Infants under 2 years reported to S. M. W., 37, 319.

New Bedford children, 385. (*See also* New Bedford problem.)

(*See also under each of above items.*)

Children under care of Boston agencies, 36, 147 *et seq.*

Abode (final), and prolonged care, 172.

Abode (previous), 158.

And initial age, 159.

And presence with mother, 161.

Age (final), and duration of care, 170.

And final abode, 172.

Age (initial), and sex, 155.

And previous care, 157, 163.

Agencies studied, 149, 152.

Agency care given, 170.

Applications for care, sources of and reasons for, 164, 165.

Birth, foreign or native, 154, 192.

Care by more than one agency, 151, 163.

Character of ancestry, 196.

Characteristics, 180.

Conception, place of, foreign or native, 192.

Conduct, by age and sex, 184.

Court actions for support, 215.

Disposition of cases discharged, 178.

Distribution of cases, 150.

Duration of care, 170, 171.

Expenditures, estimated, for, 153.

Extent of problem, 150.

Fathers (*see* Fathers of children under Boston agencies.)

Grandparents (maternal), character, 199.

Mentality, 196.

Heritage, 187, 189, 192, 193.

Mentality, 182.

Mothers (*see* Mothers of children under Boston agencies.)

Nativity, 154.

Number of cases, 150.

Occupations, by sex, 177.

Parental care, possibilities of, 204.

Parents, relations between, 208.

Relationship of, 200.

(*See also* Heritage, hereunder.)

Physical condition, 180.

Presence with mother, 156.

Problem, statement of, 147.

Prolonged care in 1914, 151, 157, 163, 170.

Prolonged care, previous, 158, 162.

Proportion chargeable to Boston, 154.

Proportion of total cases, 151.

Racial distribution, 153.

Residence at application, 154.

Scope of study, 148.

Children under care of Boston agencies—Continued.

Separation from mother, 156.

And occupation of mother, 212.

Sex distribution, 155.

Sources of information, 148.

Status at application for care, 155.

Temporary care, discharged from, 178, 179.

Number receiving, 151.

(*See also* Child-caring and child-protective agencies.)

Children under care of the division of State minor wards, 37, 273 *et seq.*

Abode, final, by age, 292.

Abode, previous, by age, 282.

Age and mental condition, 296.

Age and sex, 279.

Age, final, 290.

Age, initial, children coming under care in 1914, 280.

Agency supervision at application, 282.

Applications or commitments, sources of and reasons for, 287.

Care received, types of, 276, 290.

Cases initiated in 1914, 280.

Characteristics, 295.

Comparison, by legitimacy, of 2,323 wards. (*See* Comparison by legitimacy of 2,323 wards.)

Conduct, 298.

By sex and final age, 299.

County distribution, comparison with population under 18 years, 278.

Died or discharged from care, 294.

Duration of care, by final age, 291.

Family groups represented by, 277.

Mentality and age, 296.

Method of securing data, 275.

Mother's status, 201. (*See also* Mothers of children under S. M. W.)

Nativity, 279.

Occupations, by sex, 293.

Physical condition, 295.

Presence with or separation from mother, 280.

Prolonged care, receiving, 276.

Prolonged care, previous, 281, 283.

Proportion of total, 276.

Race, 279.

Residence, county of, 278.

Sex and age at application, 280.

Temporary care, receiving, 276.

Types of children, 275.

(*See also* Children cared for with mothers at State infirmary; Infants under 2 years reported to S. M. W.)

Children under supervision of State board of charity, 37, 273.

Child's point of view, 60, 64, 351.

Cities and illegitimacy percentages, 272.

Civil status, of fathers, 128, 208, 332.

Of mothers, 111, 116, 207, 302, 331, 365, 374, 394.

Of parents, summary, 45.

Commitments, sources of and reasons for, 53, 287, 314, 379.

- Comparison, as to mentality, delinquent mothers and 500 unselected inmates, 366.
- Comparison, as to race and country of birth, mothers of Boston infants, 107.
- Comparison by legitimacy, delinquent children committed in 1914, 342, 344, 345, 348.
- Infants born in Boston, 83, 85, 89-96, 99.
- Comparison by legitimacy of 2,323 minor wards:
- Age, initial, 312.
 - Applications or commitments, sources of and reasons for, 313, 314.
 - Conduct, by age, 317, 318.
 - County of residence, 311.
 - Duration of care, 316.
 - Feeble-mindedness, 318.
 - Home conditions, 314.
 - Nativity, race, and sex, 310.
 - Personal characteristics, 317.
- Complaints in support actions, 229.
- Conception, place of (foreign, native), 192.
- Conclusions, general, 19, 62.
- Conditions surrounding birth, 102.
- Conduct, of children, 55, 184, 298, 317, 318, 346, 372.
- Of mothers, 357, 375, 379.
- (See also Character; Characteristics.)
- Confinement expenses paid, 244, 245, 251.
- Confinement, place of, 102, 361.
- Constructive measures needed, 71.
- Correctional institutions (see State institutions for delinquents).
- Cost of care in Boston, 153.
- County distribution, of births, 271.
- Of children, 278.
- Court actions for support (see Support actions).
- Courts, Boston (see "Illegitimate-children" act, etc.).
- Courts of jurisdiction, 229.
- Deaths among children, born in Boston, 88, 90, 97, 133.
- In Brockton and New Bedford, 385.
 - In institutions for delinquents, 343.
 - In rural seacoast section, 389.
 - Of delinquent mothers, 362.
 - Under Boston agencies, 179.
 - Under State infirmary care, 328.
 - Under S. M. W., 294.
- Defective children, State care of, 25, 31.
- Defective mentality (see Heritage; Mentality).
- Defects, physical (see Physical condition).
- Delinquencies charged, delinquent children, 346.
- Delinquent mothers, 364.
- Delinquency and illegitimacy, 55, 66, 341.
- Delinquent children, development of care, 25, 30.
- (See also Children committed as delinquents to State institutions.)
- Delinquent mothers in State institutions, 361. (See also Mothers, delinquent, in State institutions.)
- Delinquents, juvenile, State training schools for, 269, 341.
- Department of mental diseases, 32.
- Department of public welfare, 27, 32.
- Dependency, child, amount of, 50, 65.
- Dependent children, development of care of, 25, 27, 29.
- Deprivation, of father's care and support, 63.
- Of mother's care (see Separation from mother).
- Disabilities, legal and social, 64.
- Diseases (see Physical condition).
- Disposition, final, of children, 178, 294, 329, 391.
- Dispositions by court, types of, 238, 240, 241, 243.
- Division of State adult poor, 268.
- Division of State minor wards, 273.
- Children under care, 37, 273.
 - Children under State infirmary, 38, 326.
 - Infants under 2 years reported, 37, 319.
 - Prolonged and temporary care by, 276.
- Duration of care, of children, 137, 170, 171, 290, 316, 322, 328, 344, 372.
- Of delinquent mothers, 365. (See also Maternity and infancy care.)
- Economic status (see Occupations).
- Of parents, 46.
- Employment (see Occupations.)
- Environment at birth, 38, 43, 64, 102.
- Family characteristics (see Heredity; Heritage).
- Family groups represented, 277, 327.
- Father's character, summary, 41.
- Father's contributions to support, 47, 215, 332, 391.
- By court action, 131, 216.
 - By private arrangement, 132, 216.
- (See also under "Illegitimate-children act.")
- Father's support, deprivation of, 63.
- Insuring, 68.
- Father's youth, 38, 127, 205.
- Fathers of children under Boston agencies, age, 205.
- Character, 198.
 - Civil status, 207.
 - Contributions to support, 215.
 - Mentality, 193, 204.
 - Nativity and race, 189.
 - Occupation, 213.
- Fathers of infants born in Boston, 126.
- Age, 127.
 - Civil status, 128.
 - Contributions to support, 131.
 - Occupation, 129.
 - Race and nativity, 126, 127.
 - Social relationship with mother, 128.
- Feeble-minded children (see Children in State institutions, etc.).
- Feeble-minded mothers, Boston, 114.
- In institutions (see Mothers in State institutions, etc.).

Feeble-minded, the:

- Development of State care, 31.
- State institutions for, 269.
- State program for care, 383.
- Feeble-mindedness and illegitimacy, 377.
- Field and method of inquiry, 21.
- Fines paid toward support, 249.
- Foreign-born mothers, 192, 374.
- Poundlings under Boston agencies, 150.
- Geographical distribution of births, 270.
- Grandparents (maternal), characteristics, 39, 120, 193, 196, 199, 304, 359.
- (See also Heredity; Heritage.)
- Guardianship, State, 70.
- Handicaps to child, summary, 62.
- Hazard to life and health, 62.
- Health supervision for infants, 67.
- Heredity, importance of, 38, 63.
- Heritage, of adopted children, 338.
 - Of children under Boston agencies, 187, 189, 192, 193.
 - Of children under S. M. W., 304.
 - Of delinquent children, 352.
 - Of feeble-minded children, 374.
 - Of infants of delinquent mothers, 363.
 - Of mental defect, 57, 193, 201.
 - Summary, 38.
- Home (see Abode).
- Home conditions, comparison by legitimacy for 2,323 wards, 314.
- Homes, types, and character, 352, 354, 396.
- (See also Abode.)
- House of correction wages assigned, 249.
- Illegitimacy, prevalence, 36. (See also Children included, etc.)
- "Illegitimate-children act," administration in Boston courts:
 - Actions current in 1914, 233.
 - Actions initiated, 1914-1919, 255.
 - In central municipal court, 1913-1919, 256.
 - In nine courts, 1914 and 1919, 257.
 - Actions resulting favorably, 239.
 - Adequate provision certified, 250, 261.
 - Administration, in 1914-15, 232.
 - Since 1914-15, 254.
 - Adoptions, 242.
 - Ages of children, 236.
 - Amounts ordered and percentages paid, 246.
 - Amounts secured, 244, 245.
 - Analysis of law, 228.
 - Cases terminated, by age, 237.
 - Cash payments, 242, 251, 261.
 - Classification of cases, 237.
 - Comparison of actions initiated with—
 - Chicago court cases, 236.
 - Illegitimate births, 235.
 - Philadelphia court cases, 236.
 - Total criminal cases, 234.
 - Complaints, when may be entered, 229.
 - Confinement expenses paid, 251.
 - Court procedure, 234.
 - Dispositions by central municipal court, 1913-19, 258.

"Illegitimate-children act," administration in Boston courts—Continued.

- Dispositions by court in 1914, 230, 238, 239, 240, 241, 243.
- Distribution of cases, according to dispositions made, 241.
 - By year of initiation, 256.
 - In nine courts, 232, 234, 257.
- Duration of cases, 243.
- Fines paid, 249.
- General provisions, 228.
- House of correction wages assigned, 249.
- Inferior court dispositions, 241.
- Jurisdiction, courts of, 229.
- Marriages reported, 242.
- Method of procedure, present, 258.
- Method of study, 232.
- Offense, the, 229.
- Paternity, adjudication of, 230.
- Payments, final status, 245.
 - Lump sum, 242, 251, 261.
 - Percentages paid, 246.
 - Periodic, 242, 247.
 - Types and amounts, 244, 246.
- Probation department, 255, 258.
- Probation orders, 231.
- Process, 229.
- Provisions made for support, 239, 241.
- Questionnaire on administration, 254.
- Summary, for 1914-15, 38, 47, 252.
 - For end of 1919, 263.
- Superior court dispositions, 241.
- Support orders, 230.
- Support, period of, 232.
- Wages, assignment of, 249.

Illustrative histories:

- Adopted children, 338, 354.
- Character and heredity, 201, 286.
- Character development, 186, 201, 300.
- Favorable outcome of care, 300.
- Defective mentality in children, 201, 297, 305, 376.
- Delinquency, and home conditions, 349, 351, 355, 357.
 - And heredity, 359.
 - And previous agency care, 356.
 - In adopted and placed-out children, 301, 353, 359.
- Dependency, 305.
- Family characteristics, 201, 285, 289, 301, 305, 307, 338, 349, 376.
- Feeble-minded children, 308, 376, 380.
- Filial instinct, 61.
- Frequent shifting, 176, 285, 288, 323.
- Heredity of defective mentality, 201, 227, 297, 305, 308, 376, 380.
- Mother's difficulty in providing care, 226, 297.
- Possibilities of maternal care, 226.
- Prolonged care given, 285.
- Protection of the feeble-minded, need of, 376.
- Psychological effect on child, 351.
- Reasons for applications, 168, 176, 288.
- Reasons for commitments as delinquents, 285, 349, 350, 351.

Incest, cases of, 200.
 Infancy and maternity care (*see* Maternity and infancy care).
 Infancy care, summaries, 44, 65.
 Infant care by mother and agencies, 44, 65.
 Infant mortality, prevention of, 66.
 Summary, 41.
 (*See also* Deaths among children.)
 Infant mortality hazard, 62.
 Infant mortality rates (Boston, 1910-1914), 88.
 Infant mortality rates (Boston, 1914), 89.
 By place of death, and cause, 97.
 By status, and age, 91, 92.
 And cause, 94, 95.
 And sex, 90.
 Specific, 94, 100.
 Relative differences in, by age, 91.
 By cause of death, 96.
 Infant mortality rates (England and Wales), comparison by status, 93.
 Infant mortality rates (infants born in 1914), 97.
 By age at death, 99.
 By cause of death, 100.
 And place of birth, 101.
 Infant mortality rates, methods of computing, 82.
 Infant survivals, and presence with mother, 140.
 And type of care, 139.
 Infant welfare, findings on, 41.
 Infants born in Boston, 41, 80 et seq.
 Abode at specified ages, 143.
 Age, final, 133.
 Age, initial, 136.
 Agency care, 103, 135.
 By more than one agency, 136.
 By types of agencies, 135.
 Proportion of lifetime under, 137.
 Birth, place of, 102.
 Birth registration, accuracy, 87.
 Births (*see* Live births, Stillbirths, hereunder).
 Care of the child, 132.
 Conditions surrounding birth, 102.
 Confinement, place of, 102.
 Dead or surviving at specified ages, 140.
 Deaths (infants born in 1914), by age, 133.
 Per cent, by place of birth, 134.
 Father, the, 126. (*See also* Fathers of infants born in Boston.)
 Live births in 1910-1914, 83.
 Per 1,000 single, etc., women, 84.
 Live births, in 1914, 83, 85.
 Relative monthly frequency, 86.
 Method and scope of study, 80.
 Mothers, feeble-minded, provision for, 114.
 Mother, the, 135. (*See also* Mothers of infants born in Boston.)
 Parentage, 105.
 Physical condition, 135.
 Presence with or separation from mother, 140, 141, 144, 145.

Infants born in Boston—Continued.
 Stillbirths, 1910-1914, number and per cents, 85.
 In 1914, 85, 86.
 Surviving at specified ages, and kind of care, 139.
 Time with mother, 139.
 (*See also* Infant mortality rates, Boston.)
 Infants cared for with delinquent mothers, 37, 361 et seq.
 Boston children under care, 361.
 Care given, 362.
 Characteristics, 362.
 Heritage, 363.
 (*See also* Mothers, delinquent, in State institutions.)
 Infants under 2 years reported to S. M. W., 37, 319.
 Ages (final), 321.
 Comparison by legitimacy, 319.
 Duration of care, 322.
 Numbers reported, 319, 320.
 Types of supervision, 320.
 Inferior court dispositions, 241.
 Institutions and agencies, Boston, 75.
 State, 266.
 Jurisdiction, courts of, 229.
 Juvenile delinquency, summary, 55.
 Juvenile delinquents, State training schools for, 269, 341. (*See also* Delinquency; Delinquent children; Children committed as delinquents to State institutions.)
 Laws, adoption, 334.
 "Illegitimate-children" act, 228.
 Parole of expectant mothers, 361.
 Legal actions for support, 38, 228, 392.
 Legal and social disabilities, 64.
 Licensing and State supervision of institutions, etc., 67.
 Live births (*see* Births, live).
 Lump-sum payments, 242, 251, 261.
 Map, county, 23.
 "Metropolitan district," facing 24.
 Marriage of mother, subsequent, 46, 209, 242.
 Massachusetts, general characteristics, 22.
 Massachusetts law, the (*see* "Illegitimate-children" act).
 Massachusetts State Board of Charity, 266, 324.
 Social service committee, 324.
 Maternal care of infants, 44, 63, 67.
 Maternal grandparents (*see* Grandparents, maternal).
 Maternity and infancy care, 65, 67, 103.
 Maternity hospital and children's institution, infant deaths in, 42, 44, 97, 100.
 Medical supervision for infants, 67.
 Mental conflicts (*see* Psychological effect on child).
 Mental defect, and illegitimacy, 368.
 In mothers and children, summary, 57.
 (*See also* Mentality.)
 Mental diseases, department of, 32.
 Mentality, heritage of defective, 196.
 Of children, 58, 59, 182, 184, 296, 346.

Mentality—Continued.

- Of fathers, 40, 193, 204.
- Of grandparents, 39, 193, 196, 304, 359.
- Of mothers, 39, 45, 112, 193, 204, 302, 331, 366, 395.
- (See also Children in State institutions, etc.; Heritage; Mothers in State institutions, etc.)

Method and scope of study, 21, 32, 34.

- Administration of act, 232.
- Children of rural seacoast section, 388.
- Children under Boston agencies, 148.
- Children under S. M. W., 275.
- Delinquent children, 341.
- Feeble-minded children, 368.
- Infants born in Boston, 80.

"Metropolitan district," and map, 24.

Minor wards (see Children under care of the division of State minor wards).

Mode of living (see Abode).

Monthly frequency of live births, 86.

Mortality (see Infant mortality; Infant mortality rates).

Mother, the:

- Abode (see Abode, previous, of mothers).
- Age at child's birth (see Age at birth of child).
- Agency record of, 120, 224, 303, 377, 396.
- Births to and pregnancies of, total, 50, 115, 118, 221, 277, 303, 327, 331, 357, 367, 375, 378, 393.
- Incestuous relationships, 200.
- Mentality (see under Mentality).
- Occupations (see under Occupations).
- Other children under care, 188.
- Physical condition (see under Physical condition).
- Relations with father, 208.
- Separation from (see Separation from mother).
- Social relationships with father, 128.
- Subsequent marriage, 46, 209, 242.
- Youth of, 38, 45, 127, 192, 205, 302, 367, 379, 387, 394.

Mother's care (see Maternal care: Presence with or separation from mother).

Mother's mode of living, summary, 49.

Mothers cared for by State infirmary, 325, 330, 331.

Delinquent, 361.

Mothers, delinquent, in State institutions, 361.

Age, 365.

At first pregnancy, 367.

Characteristics, 364.

Civil status, 365.

Comparison as to mentality with 500 unselected inmates, 366.

Confined at State infirmary, 361.

Duration of care, 365.

Heritage of children of, 363.

- Infants cared for with, 361. (See also Infants cared for with delinquent mothers.)

Mothers, delinquent, in State institutions—Continued.

Mentality and efficiency, 366.

Number, 363.

Offenses for which committed, 364.

Parole law concerning, 361.

Physical condition, 365.

Pregnancies, total, 367.

Race, 364.

Mothers in State institutions for the feeble-minded or awaiting admission, 58, 377.

Abode, 380.

Age at birth of first child, 379.

Agency record, 377.

Applications or commitments, sources of, 379.

Awaiting admission, 378.

Conduct, 379.

Pregnancies, total, 378.

Under care, 378.

Mothers of children under Boston agencies, 188.

Abode, previous, 217.

Age at birth of child, 205, 221.

Agency record, 224.

Character, 196.

Civil status and age, 207.

Foreign born, 192.

Mentality, 193, 204.

Mode of living and age, 219.

Nativity, 191.

Occupation, previous, 210.

Other children, 220.

Paternity of, 223.

Other children under care, 188.

Parental home, 217.

Physical condition, 192, 204.

Relations with fathers, 208.

Residence in United States, 192.

Subsequent births to, 222.

Subsequent marriage of, 209.

Under 18, by nativity, 192.

Mothers of children under State infirmary care:

Comparison with mothers of Boston infants, 331.

Number, 325.

Status, 330.

Mothers of children under S. M. W.:

Age; civil, physical, and mental conditions, 302.

Character; agency record; other births; occupation, 303.

Comparison with mothers of Boston children, 305.

Mode of living; family history, 304.

Race and nativity, 301.

Residence in United States, 301.

Mothers of delinquent children, 357.

Mothers of feeble-minded children, 374.

Mothers of infants born in Boston, 105.

Abode, 119.

Age at child's birth, 109.

Agencies giving care to, 121.

Agency care given to mother and family, 120.

Character, 114, 118.

Mothers of infants born in Boston—Contd.

- Civil condition, 111, 116.
- Comparison with other Boston mothers, 107.
- Feeble-minded, 114.
- Maternity care given, 103.
- Mentality, 112, 113, 117.
- Occupations, previous, 121.
- Parental home, character of, 119.
- Physical condition, 111.
- Previous births to, 115, 116, 118.
- Race, nativity, and years in United States, 106.
- Residence, 109.
- Social relationship to father, 128.
- Sources, as to age, 110.

For occupations, 121.

Mothers of rural seacoast section, 393.

- Age at birth of first child, 394.
- Agency record, 396.
- Character and home conditions, 396.
- Child's time with mother, 390.
- Civil condition, 394.
- Mentality, 395.
- Occupation, 395.
- Nativity and race, 393.
- Total births to, 393.

Nativity, of children, 154, 191, 279, 326, 345.

- Of fathers, 127, 190.
- Of mothers, 106, 127, 191, 301, 331, 387, 393.

New Bedford problem, 384.

- Age and nativity of mothers, 387.
- Births and infant mortality, 385.
- Care of child, 386.
- Occupation of mothers, 388.

Occupations of children:

- Under Boston agencies, 177.
- Under S. M. W., 293.

Occupations of fathers, 47, 129, 213, 332.

Occupations of mothers, 46, 121, 122, 124, 210, 303, 331, 388, 395.

And separation from child, 212.

Other children out of wedlock (*see* Births to and pregnancies of mother, total).

Other children under care, 188.

Parental and nonparental care, 67, 68.

Parental care, possibilities of, 44, 187, 204, 213.

Parental health, character, and mentality, 44.

Parental home of mothers, 49, 119, 217.

Parents (*see* Heredity, Heritage, and all items under Mother and Father).

Parole department, care given infants by, 362.

Paternity, adjudication of, 230.

Of mothers' other children, 223.

Payments on support orders (*see* under "Illegitimate-children act").Periodic payments (*see* under "Illegitimate-children act").

Physical condition, of children, 135, 180, 295, 346, 372.

Physical condition—Continued.

Of mothers, 38, 45, 111, 192, 204, 302, 331, 365, 374.

Physical defects (*see* Physical condition).Place of residence (*see* Abode).Place of birth (*see* Birth, place of).

Placed-out infants, 37, 319.

Postnatal care (*see* Maternity and infancy care).

Pregnancies of and births to mother, total, 50, 115, 118, 221, 277, 303, 327, 331, 357, 367, 375, 378, 393.

Prenatal care, by class of agency, 104.

Presence with mother, and deaths and survivals among infants at specified ages, 141.

Presence with or separation from mother:

Children under Boston agencies, 156, 212.

Children under S. M. W., 280.

Delinquent children, 358.

Infants born in Boston, 139, 144, 145.

Infants under State infirmary care, 327.

(*See also* Separation from mother.)

Prevalence of birth out of wedlock, 36.

(*See also* Children included.)

Previous agency care, 52. (*See also* Prolonged care, previous.)

Previous births to mothers, 50, 115, 116, 118, 220, 203, 367.

Probation department, 255, 256, 258.

Probation orders, 231.

Problem, extent of:

Among adopted children, 336.

Among children under S. M. W., 325.

Among delinquent children, 342.

Among feeble-minded children, 368.

Among infants of delinquent mothers, 361.

Among infants reported to S. M. W., 319.

Distribution in communities, 272.

In Boston, 74, 83, 147, 150.

In Brockton and New Bedford, 384.

In rural seacoast section, 388.

In the State, 266.

Of child care, Boston, 147.

Statement of, and general conclusions, 19.

Prolonged and temporary care:

Children in rural seacoast section, 392.

Children under Boston agencies, 151.

Infants at specified ages, 139.

Prolonged care in 1914:

Boston children discharged from, 178.

By Boston agencies, 151, 157, 162, 170.

By child-caring and protective agencies, 135, 174.

By more than one agency, 136, 151, 163, 356, 371.

For adopted children, 338.

For children under S. M. W., 276.

For infants born in 1914, 135.

Reasons for discharge from, 180.

Prolonged care, previous:

And separation from mother, 157, 281.

- Prolonged care, previous—Continued.
 By more than one agency, 284.
 Of children, 44, 52, 162, 281, 283.
 Of mother and her family, 120, 121, 224.
 Types of, 284.
- Prolonged care, summary, 44.
- Prosecution of cases, process of, 229.
- Prostitution (*see* Character, Conduct, Occupations, of mothers).
- Protective measures needed, summary, 66.
 "Pseudo-foundlings," 150, 276.
- Psychological effect on child, 60, 64, 351.
- Public burden, the, 64.
- Public infirmary (Boston), maternity and infancy care by, 105.
 Prolonged care by, 135.
- Public-welfare department, 27, 32.
- Purpose of study, 19, 341.
- Questionnaire sent to Boston courts, 254.
- Race of children, 153, 279, 326.
 Of mothers, 106, 301, 331, 364, 393.
 Of parents, 126, 189.
- Reasons for applications or commitments, 53. (*See also* Applications; Commitments.)
- Registration of births, accuracy, 87.
- Relative differences in infant mortality rates, 91, 92, 93, 96.
- Relative monthly frequency of live births, 86.
- Residence, of children, 154, 278, 327, 344.
 Of mothers, 109, 191.
- Rights of child, safeguarding, 69.
- Rural seacoast section problem, 38, 388, *et seq.*
 Abode, final, of child, 391.
 Age, final, of child, and time with mother, 391.
 Agency care, 392.
 Birth, place of, 390.
 Births, 1905-1914, 389.
 Care of the child, 390.
 Children included, 38, 389.
 Deaths, 389.
 Disposition, final, of child, 391.
 Method and scope of study, 388.
 Mortality of children, 1905-1914, 389.
 Mothers (*see* Mothers of rural seacoast section).
 Separation from mother, 392.
 Summary, 397.
 Support actions, 392.
- Scope of investigation, 21.
 In Boston, 148.
 In State, 266.
 In rural seacoast section, 388.
- Separation from mother, 44, 54, 63, 156, 280, 358, 392.
 And child's abode, 160.
 And occupation of mother, 212.
 And previous prolonged care, 281.
 At end of period, 175.
 Infants dead or surviving, 140, 141.
- Settlement laws, 25, 154.
- Sex and conduct, 185, 299.
- Sex distribution of children—
 In institutions for delinquents, 348, 350.
 In institutions for the feeble-minded or awaiting admission, 370.
 In occupations, 177.
 Under Boston agencies, 155.
 Under State infirmary, 326.
 Under S. M. W., 280.
- Social agencies as sources of information, 32, 148.
- Social and legal disabilities, 64.
- Social characteristics (*see* Characteristics; Conduct).
- Social service committee of State board of charity, 324.
- Sources of applications or commitments, summary, 53.
- Sources of information, 32, 34, 110, 148, 341.
- Specific infant mortality rates, 94, 100.
- State adult poor, division of, 268.
- State agencies giving care to Boston children, 149.
- State board of charity, 266.
 Children under care of, 273.
 Social service committee, 324.
- State care, development, 25
 Present methods, 31.
- State guardianship, 70.
- State institutions for delinquents, 56, 269, 341.
- State institutions for the feeble-minded, 37, 269, 368.
- State minor wards, division of, 273.
- State supervision and licensing of institutions, 67.
- State training schools for delinquents, 269.
- Status, civil (*see* Civil status).
- Status, economic (*see* Occupations).
- Stillbirths, Boston, 85.
- Subsequent births to mother (*see* Births to and pregnancies of mother, total).
- Subsequent pregnancies, 50, 118, 222.
- Summaries:
 Administration of the law, in 1914-15, 252.
 In December, 1919, 263.
 Adopted children, 38.
 Agencies, problem of, in Boston and State, 51.
 Agency care, essentials of, 68.
 Agency care given, length and type of, 54.
 Agency care of Boston infants, 44.
 Agency care previous to 1914, 52.
 Ages, initial, of children, 51.
 Ages of parents, 38.
 Antisocial tendencies, 65.
 Application or commitment, source of and reason for, 53.
 Background of illegitimacy, 38.
 Birth conditions, 43.
 Births in Boston in 1914, 36.
 Care of dependent children, 27.

Summaries—Continued.

Character of parents and maternal grandparents, 40, 45.
 Children included, 36.
 Children under care, of Boston agencies, 36.
 Of S. M. W., 37, 273.
 Civil status of parents, 45.
 Constructive measures needed, 71.
 Delinquent children in State institutions, 37, 56, 66, 360.
 Dependency, child, 50, 65.
 Dependent children, conduct, 55.
 Economic status of parents, 46.
 Environmental difficulties, 64.
 Extent of problem in agency work, 51.
 Father's contributions to support, 47.
 Father's care and support, 63, 68.
 Feeble-minded children, 37, 59.
 Feeble-minded mothers, 58.
 Handicaps to child, 62.
 Heredity and illegitimacy, 38, 57, 63.
 "Illegitimate-children" act, 47.
 Administration, 1914-15, 252.
 Administration, Dec., 1919, 263.
 Infant mortality, 41.
 Prevention, 66.
 Infant mortality hazard, 62.
 Infant welfare, 41.
 Infants cared for with mothers by State infirmary, 38.
 Infants reported to S. M. W., 38.
 Juvenile delinquency, 55.
 Legal and social disabilities, 64.
 Maternal care of infants, 44, 67.
 Maternity and infancy care, 65.
 Mental defects in mothers and children, 57.
 Mentality, dependent and delinquent children, 58, 59.
 Parents and maternal grandparents, 39.
 Mother's care, deprivation of, 63.

Summaries—Continued.

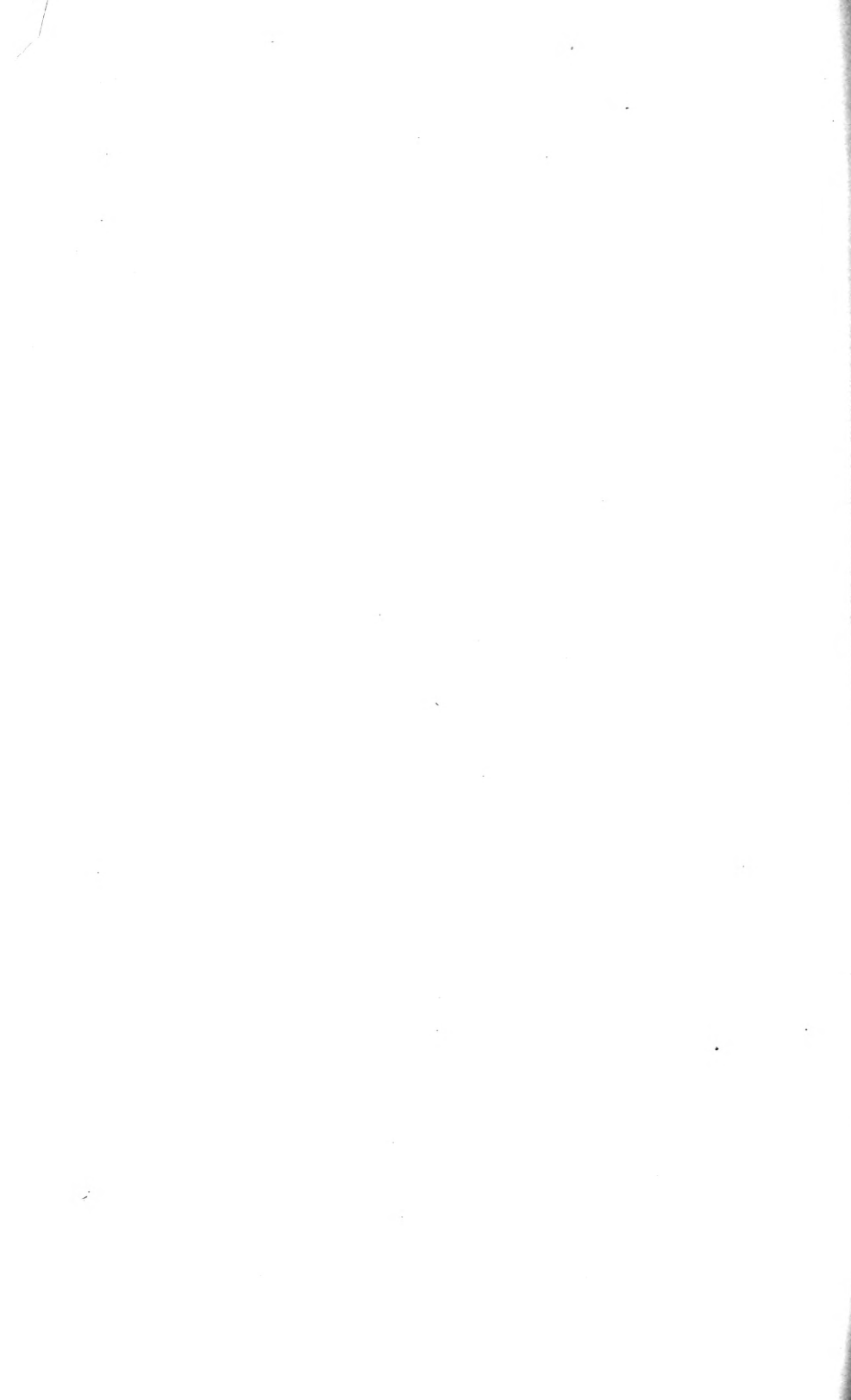
Mother's other children out of wedlock, 50.
 Mother's parental home and mode of living, 49.
 Mother's physical condition, 38, 45.
 Parental care, possibilities of, 44.
 Parental health, character, and mentality, 44.
 Placed-out infants, 37.
 Prevalence of birth out of wedlock, 36.
 Protective measures needed, 66.
 Psychological effect on child, 60, 64.
 Rural seacoast section, 397.
 Separation from mother, 63.
 Sources of information and method of analysis, 34.
 State care, development, 25, 31.
 Summary of findings, 36.
 Support actions in Boston courts, 38.
 Superior court dispositions, 241.
 Supervision by S. M. W., types of, 320.
 Supervision of institutions by State, 67.
 Support, deprivation of father's, 63.
 Father's contributions to (see Father's contributions to support).
 Possibilities of parental, 44. (*See also* Parental care, possibilities of.)
 Support actions, in Boston courts, 38, 215, 232. (*See also* "Illegitimate-children act.")
 In rural seacoast section, 392.
 Support orders, 230.
 Temporary care:
 Children under Boston agencies, 151, 178.
 Children under S. M. W., 276.
 Infants born in Boston, 139.
 Reasons for discharge from, 179.
 Training schools for juvenile delinquents, 269.
 Wages, assignment of, 249.



BOSTON PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 9999 05708 4194



BOSTON PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 9999 05708 4202



FEB 9 1925

